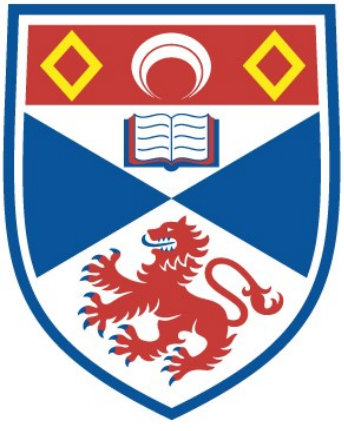
DYNASTICISM AND DIPLOMACY : THE POLITICAL CAREER OF MARIE DE GUISE IN SCOTLAND, 1548-1560

Pamela E. Ritchie

A Thesis Submitted for the Degree of PhD
at the
University of St Andrews



1999

Full metadata for this item is available in
St Andrews Research Repository
at:
http://research-repository.st-andrews.ac.uk/

Please use this identifier to cite or link to this item:
http://hdl.handle.net/10023/11072

This item is protected by original copyright

Dynasticism and Diplomacy:

The Political Career of Marie de Guise in Scotland, 1548-1560.

Pamela E. Ritchie

A thesis submitted for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy

University of St. Andrews

September 1999

Declarations

i) I, Pamela Ritchie, hereby certify that this thesis, which is approximately 100,000 words in length, has been written by me, that it is the record of work carried out by me and that it has not been submitted in any previous application for a higher degree.

date 16/9/99 signature of candidate [redacted]

ii) I was admitted as a research student in October 1994 and as a candidate for the degree of PhD in October 1995; the higher study for which this is a record was carried out in the University of St. Andrews between 1994 and 1999.

date 16/9/99 signature of candidate [redacted]

iii) I hereby certify that the candidate has fulfilled the conditions of the Resolution and Regulations appropriate for the degree of PhD in the University of St. Andrews and that the candidate is qualified to submit this thesis in application for that degree.

date 16-9-99 signature of supervisor [redacted]

iv) In submitting this thesis to the University of St. Andrews I understand that I am giving permission for it to be made available for use in accordance with the regulations of the University of Library for the time being in force, subject to any copyright vested in the work not being affected thereby. I also understand that the title and abstract will be published, and that a copy of the work may be made and supplied to any *bona fide* library or research worker.

date 16/9/99 signature of candidate [redacted]

ABSTRACT

This thesis examines the political career of Marie de Guise in Scotland during the period 1548-1560. Challenging the conventional interpretation of Guise as the defender of Catholicism whose régime climaxed with the Reformation Rebellion, this study shows that she was, on the contrary, a shrewd and effective politique, whose own dynastic interests and those of her daughter took precedence over her personal and religious convictions. Dynasticism, not Catholicism, was the prime motivational force behind her policy and it is from this perspective that her régime is considered.

The eight chapters of the thesis focus on two main themes. Firstly, that Marie de Guise's dynasticism, and political career as a whole, were inextricably associated with those of Mary, Queen of Scots, whose Scottish sovereignty, Catholic claim to the English throne and betrothal to the Dauphin of France carried with it notions of Franco-British Imperialism. And secondly, that Marie de Guise's policy in Scotland was dictated by European dynastic politics and, specifically, by the Franco-Scottish alliance of 1548-1560. Significantly more than a betrothal contract, the treaty of Haddington established a 'protectoral' relationship between the 'auld allies' whereby Henri II was able to assume control over Scottish military affairs, diplomacy and foreign policy as the 'protector' of Scotland. Guise's assumption of the regency in 1554 completed the process of establishing French power in Scotland, which was later consolidated, albeit briefly, by the marriage of Mary Stewart to François Valois in 1558. The overall success of Guise's dynastic and domestic policies, however, was limited. International considerations undermined her policies and weakened her administration. Yet the collapse of her régime came not with the outbreak of the Reformation Rebellion or her alleged defeat at the hands of the Congregation. Only with her death, did Marie de Guise's régime and French power in Scotland truly collapse.

CONTENTS

	Acknowledgements	i
	List of Abbreviations	ii
	Introduction	iv
1	Mary Stewart and the Treaty of Haddington: the Foundations of a Franco-British Empire	1
2	Henri II's Protectorate of Scotland and the Establishment of French Power (1550-1552)	36
3	The Final Building Block: Marie de Guise's Ascent to Power in Scotland	80
4	Mary Tudor and the Anglo-Imperial Threat: Anglo-Scottish Relations (1553-1556)	127
5	Marie de Guise's Administration and Policy in Scotland	166
6	The Borders, Highlands and Western Isles	198
7	War and Marriage	230
8	The Reformation Rebellion: the Collapse of Marie de Guise Régime in Scotland?	284
	Conclusion	335
	Appendix	362

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This thesis would not have been possible without the financial support of the School of History and International Relations and the Department of Scottish History, or the assistance given to me by the staff of the Scottish Record Office, National Library of Scotland, Archives de Ministère des Affaires Étrangères and Special Collections Department at the University Library, St. Andrews. Recognition must also be given to the many individuals who assisted me in numerous capacities throughout my postgraduate career. In particular, I would like to thank Dr. Norman Macdougall, Dr. Hamish Scott, Professor Keith Brown, Professor John Guy, Marjory Bruce and, especially, Dr. Helen MacDonald and Dr. Jane Dawson for their invaluable help and endless stream of encouragement and support. The same is also true of my colleagues in the University Library. The patience and flexibility of the 'triumvirate' in Special Collections (also known as Christine Gascoigne, Dr. Norman Reid and Cilla Jackson) added considerable ease to a long and, at times, arduous journey, while the friendship of my fellow postgraduates made it all the more pleasurable. In this, special mention must be made to Roland Tanner, Michael Penman, Linda Dunbar, Triona Logan, Ben Sanders, Augustine Kelly, Stuart Foster, Philip Conner, Natalie Mears, Alan Bryson and Margaret Beckett. But my deepest and most heartfelt thanks must go to my supervisor, Dr. Roger Mason. His patience, understanding, honesty and wry sense of humour made this whole experience worthwhile, not least to say bearable. As a scholar, he was an immeasurable source of inspiration and, without him, the thesis would be all the poorer.

But it is to my family that I owe the greatest debt of gratitude. First thanks must go to Elizabeth and Graeme Ritchie for their generosity, hospitality and tolerance. Words cannot express how truly appreciative I am for all they have done. I am similarly indebted to Ronald and Robert Mitchell and, especially, to my sisters, Fiona and Alison, for their much needed support and encouragement across the miles. Above all, though, I would like to thank my parents, Robert and Doreen. They have been a constant source of inspiration and a font of much needed love and moral and financial support - and it is to them, that I dedicate this thesis.

LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

Apart from those listed below, all abbreviations and contractions in the text have been taken from 'List of Abbreviated Titles of the Printed Sources of Scottish History to 1560', *Scottish Historical Review*, supplement (October 1963), pp.vi-xxix.

Adv.MSS	Advocates' Manuscripts
AÉ	Archives de Ministère des Affairs Étrangères, Paris.
APC	*Acts of the Privy Council of England*, ed. J.R. Dasent et al, New Series, 46 vols. (London, 1890-1964).
BL	British Library, London.
Ch.	Charter
Cor. Pol.	*Correspondence Politique*
CSP Foreign	*Calendar of State Papers, Foreign Series*, eds. W.B. Turnball and J. Stevenson *et al* (London, 1861-1950.
CSP Ireland	*Calendar of State Papers relating to Ireland of the reigns of Henry III, Edward VI, Mary, and Elizabeth, 1509-1573*, ed. H.C. Hamilton (London, 1860).
CSP Rome	*Calendar of State Papers, relating to English Affairs preserved principally at Rome in the Vatican Archives and Library*, ed. J.M. Rigg (London, 1916).
CSP Spain	*Calendar of Letters, Despatches and State Papers, relating to the negotiations between England Spain*, ed. J.M. Thomson *et al* (London, 1862-1954).

CSP Venice	*Calendar of State Papers and Manuscripts, relating to English affairs, existing in the Archives and Collections of Venice*, ed. R. Brown *et al* (London, 1867-97).
DNB	*Dictionary of National Biography*, ed. L. Stephen *et al* (London, 1885-1903).
E	Exchequer
HER	*English Historical Review*
fo(s).	folio(s)
GD	Gift and Deposit
LPL	Lambeth Palace Library, London.
L & P of Henry VIII	*Letters and Papers, Foreign and Domestic, of the reign of Henry VIII*, ed. J.S. Brewer *et al* (London, 1862-1932).
MS(S)	Manuscript(s)
NLS	National Library of Scotland, Edinburgh.
Papal Negotiations	*Papal Negotiations with Mary Queen of Scots during her reign in Scotland, 1561-1567*, ed. J.H. Pollen (Scottish History Society, Edinburgh, 1901).
PRO	Public Record Office, London.
SP	State Papers
SRO	Scottish Record Office, Edinburgh.
Statutes of the Realm	*The Statutes of the Realm*, ed. A. Luders *et al* (London, 1810-28).

INTRODUCTION

On 21 October 1559, the Reformation Rebellion ceased to be a Protestant revolt against Catholicism that was exclusively concerned, at least publicly, with the establishment of the reformed kirk in Scotland. The Lords of the Congregation's 'Act of Suspension' added a nationalist dimension to the rebellion that was now directed specifically against the Queen Regent, Marie de Guise, and the establishment of French power in Scotland.[1] In their act deposing Marie de Guise from the regency, the Congregation charged the Queen Regent with the 'interprysed destructioun of thair said commoun-weall, and overthrow of the libertie of thair native cuntree'.[2] She had revealed her true intentions by such acts as building and fortifying strongholds, appointing Frenchmen to key offices of state and, most obviously, by bringing in French troops in August and September 1559. What the Congregation failed to mention, of course, was that these French reinforcements had been sent to quell their armed rebellion against duly constituted temporal authority. Nevertheless, the fact that these troops had arrived in Scotland with their 'wyves and barnes' so soon after Mary, Queen of Scots' husband, François, had succeeded his father to become the King of France, was used by the Congregation to infer that Scotland's future as an independent kingdom would be short-lived in the union of the French and Scottish crowns. 'Enormities' such as these clearly showed that Marie de Guise's true political objective was the 'manifest conqueast of our

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 444-9 and *History*, I, pp. 251-5; R.A. Mason (ed.), *Knox: On Rebellion* (Cambridge, 1994), pp. 171-4.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, p.444 and *History*, I, p.251; Mason, *Knox: On Rebellion*, p.171.

native rowmes and countree ... to suppress the commoun-weall, and libertie of our native countree, [and] to mak us and our posteritie slaves to strangearis for ever'.[1]

Rhetoric such as this typified the propaganda disseminated by the Congregation during the Reformation Rebellion. Its emphasis on conquest and French domination was designed to play on the xenophobia of the Scots and establish the Congregation as a party of patriots, being the 'borne Counsallouris' of the realm and the 'sworne protectouris and defendaris' of the commonweal.[2] By identifying themselves with freedom, liberty and patriotism, the Congregation not only hoped to secure widespread political support for their rebellion, but also, and perhaps more importantly, the public and military support of Elizabeth I.

Although it is widely recognised by historians that the Congregation engaged in a war of words against Marie de Guise, very little has been done to explore the extent to which their propaganda bore any relation to the facts. The reason for this is symptomatic of a larger problem – neither Marie de Guise nor her political career in Scotland has been the subject of in-depth study or historical analysis. Only two works have been completely devoted to Marie de Guise. Rosalind Marshall's biography,[3] however, is an overly romanticised literary work, full of sweeping generalisations and oversimplifications, while Marianne McKerlie's[4] is similarly devoid of any sophisticated analysis, if not more so. Any attention Marie de Guise does receive in

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, p.445 and *History*, I, p.252; Mason, *Knox: On Rebellion*, p.172.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, p.448 and *History*, I, p.254; Mason, *Knox: On Rebellion*, p.174.

[3] R.K. Marshall, *Mary of Guise* (London, 1977).

[4] E.M.H. McKerlie, *Mary of Guise-Lorraine, Queen of Scotland* (London, 1931).

modern scholarship tends to be in relation to her family in France, 'les Guises',[1] her daughter, Mary, Queen of Scots,[2] and/or the Scottish Reformation.[3] As a result, her political career in Scotland from 1548 to 1560 has not only been the victim of selective examination, but also gross misunderstanding – primarily because it is conventionally used to establish the context of, and pretext for, the Reformation Rebellion of 1559-60.

The tendency of historians, such as Gordon Donaldson, to read history backwards and examine Marie de Guise's régime within a religious framework has been a convenient way to justify the Congregation's rebellion and to account for their ostensible victory. This is largely due to the fact that modern scholarship concerning the Reformation Rebellion is still heavily reliant on John Knox's version of events (and perception of Guise) contained within his *History of the Reformation in Scotland*, and other partisan sources such as the English State Papers. As a result, the negative imagery surrounding Marie de Guise and her regency has, on the whole, been reinforced and perpetuated over time. While Jenny Wormald and Michael Lynch have gone some way to free Guise of her historiographical stereotype as the defender of Catholicism

---

[1] S. Carroll, *Noble Power during the French Wars of Religion: The Guise Affinity and the Catholic Cause in Normandy* (Cambridge, 1998); J.- M. Constant, *Les Guises* (Paris, 1984); H. Noel Williams, *The Brood of False Lorraine: The House of Guise* (London, 1914); H. Forneron, *Les Ducs de Guise et Leur Epoque* (Paris, 1877); R. de Bouillé, *Histoire des Ducs de Guise* (Paris, 1849); G. de Pimodan, *La Mère des Guises: Antoinette de Bourbon 1494-1583* (Paris, 1925); F.J. Baumgartner, *Henry II: King of France, 1547-1559* (Durham and London, 1988); I. Cloulas, *Henri II* (Paris, 1985).

[2] J. Wormald, *Mary, Queen of Scots: A Study in Failure* (London, 1988); G. Donaldson, *All the Queen's Men: Power and Politics in Mary Stewart's Scotland* (London, 1983); A. Fraser, *Mary, Queen of Scots* (London, 1971 edn.); D. Hay Fleming, *Mary, Queen of Scots* (London, 1898 edn.); M. Lee, *James Stewart, Earl of Moray* (New York, 1953).

[3] Donaldson, *The Scottish Reformation* (Cambridge, 1960); I.B. Cowan, *The Scottish Reformation: Church and Society in sixteenth century Scotland* (London, 1982) M. Lynch, *Edinburgh and the Reformation* (Edinburgh, 1981); F. Bardgett, *Scotland Reformed: The Reformation in Angus and the Mearns* (Edinburgh, 1989); M.H.B. Sanderson, *Ayrshire and the Reformation: People and Change, 1490-1600* (Edinburgh, 1997).

whose political career climaxed with the Reformation Rebellion,[1] Donaldson's assessment still remains largely unchallenged.[2]

By reading history forwards from the perspective of Marie de Guise herself, however, an entirely new picture develops. A reassessment of the sources traditionally used for this period of Scottish history reveals that Guise's political career in Scotland post-1548 must be examined within the wider context of European dynastic politics and, specifically, within the context of the Franco-Scottish alliance of 1548-1560. Consequently, this thesis has expanded the source base to include French and English archival material, largely in the form of diplomatic and state papers held in the French Archives de Ministère des Affaires Étrangères, the English Public Record Office and various manuscript collections in the British Library.[3] The sheer volume of pertinent material in these depositories, however, has not only highlighted the truly extensive nature of this topic, which exceeds the confines of a single thesis, but also made it necessary to limit the number of sources consulted. Despite these constraints, these sources nevertheless reveal that the conventional religious interpretation of Marie de Guise's régime is overblown - dynasticism, not Catholicism, was the over-riding characteristic of her political career in Scotland. As such, Marie de Guise emerges as an extremely shrewd and effective politique whose own dynastic interests and those of her

---

[1] Wormald, *Mary, Queen of Scots*, pp. 76-101 and *Court, Kirk, and Community: Scotland 1470-1625* (Edinburgh, 1981), pp. 109-21; Lynch, *Edinburgh and the Reformation*, pp. 68-89.

[2] Donaldson, *All the Queen's Men*, pp. 25, 27-9, 33-4 and *Scotland: James V–James VII* (Edinburgh, 1994 edn.), pp. 63-106.

[3] Some of the material contained within the *Correspondence Politique* and *Mémoires et Documents* Angleterre series has been printed in Alexandre Teulet (ed.), *Relations Politiques de la France et de l'Espagne avec l'Écosse au XVI^e Siècle* (Paris, 1862) and *Papiers d'état, pièces et documents inédits ou peu connus relatifs à l'histoire de l'Ecosse au XVIème Siècle* (Paris, 1852).

daughter took precedence over her personal and religious convictions. It also becomes clear that, contrary to the attestations of the Congregation, Marie de Guise was not solely responsible for the establishment of French power in Scotland. Rather, this process began in 1548 with the signing of the treaty of Haddington and came as a direct result of Henri II's 'protectorate' of Scotland. More importantly, it was a process that was sanctioned and endorsed by the Scottish political élite itself.

This thesis, therefore, is the first full-scale study of Marie de Guise and her political career in Scotland. While it is in no way definitive or exhaustive, it nevertheless raises and examines some fundamental points that modern scholarship has failed to consider. The first and foremost point is the nature of the Franco-Scottish alliance during the minority of Mary, Queen of Scots. While the treaty of Haddington provided for the dynastic union of the French and Scottish crowns with the betrothal of Mary Stewart and François Valois, its significance lay in two other areas. As is discussed in Chapter I, the treaty of Haddington also laid the foundations for a Franco-British Empire. Mary Stewart's Catholic claim to the English throne, strengthened by Henry VIII's break from Rome and the repeated failure of Tudor monarchs to secure the line of succession by producing heirs to the throne, made it a very real possibility that she alone could unite the crowns of Scotland, England and Ireland under one Catholic crown. The imperial opportunities with which Mary Stewart's dynastic position provided Henri II through marriage to his son, therefore, were impressive and a prime motivating factor behind his Scottish policy as a whole.

The possible realisation of Valois notions of Franco-British Empire was not the only advantage the treaty of Haddington afforded Henri. On a more immediate and

practical level, it created a 'protectoral' relationship between the 'auld allies' whereby Henri became the 'protector' of Scotland and Scotland a 'protectorate' of France. Henri's protection of Scotland and her queen justified and facilitated the establishment of French power in Scotland *prior to the union of the crowns*. As a result, the French King was able to maintain a permanent military foothold in a kingdom that served as the backdoor to England and, as we shall see in Chapter II, assume control over Scottish diplomacy and foreign policy. But it was Marie de Guise's control of the Scottish government in April 1554 that was the final and, arguably, most important part of the process establishing French power in Scotland.

Chapter III charts Marie de Guise's ascent to power, which was in no way certain after Mary Stewart left Scotland to become an absentee monarch in 1548. Indeed, it was commonly presumed that Guise would accompany her daughter to France now that her future seemed so secure. Having been committed to seeing the Anglo-Scottish conflict resolved, Guise stayed on but there is some evidence to suggest that her return to France in 1550 was originally intended to be a permanent homecoming. The Scots who accompanied the Queen Dowager to France to celebrate Henri's triumphant entry into Rouen, however, seem to have been intent on seeing Guise return to Scotland for the 'executioun of justice and [the] ordouring of the cuntre' as opposed to some French gentleman acting as a viceroy.[1] Although the Scots may have had a say in who they wanted to govern during Mary, Queen of Scots' majority, it was Henri, in his capacity as 'protector', who ultimately decided when his future daughter-in-law reached

[1] *RPC*, I, p.90; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 225, p.61.

her perfect age and who would govern her kingdom during her majority rule. In December 1553, Henri officially informed the Duc de Châtelherault that his tenure as regent was over and that the Queen Dowager would be replacing him.[1] Like Marie de Guise's regency as a whole, the timing of Henri's decision was influenced by the international situation.

Chapters IV to VIII relate specifically to Marie de Guise's régime in Scotland, which, for the first time, is set within the wider context of Euro-British dynastic politics. The Anglo-Imperial dynastic alliance that was forged with Mary Tudor's marriage to Philip of Spain brought the Habsburg-Valois conflict to the Anglo-Scottish Border. As a result, Guise's administration was overwhelmingly concerned with matters of defence and national security. The Tudor-Habsburg threat also highlighted the need for domestic stability and, in particular, law and order. While this was particularly true of the Borders and Highlands, the general aims of Guise's policy sought to effect a strong, yet personal monarchy by advancing the interests of the crown at the expense of local jurisdictions throughout all of Scotland. Like her Stewart predecessors, Guise's policy came in direct response to the events that had destabilised Scottish society and which the Anglo-Imperial threat served only to exacerbate. International considerations, however, coupled with the relatively short duration of her regency prevented the successful execution of Marie de Guise's domestic policy as a whole.

For many members of the Scottish political community, the international situation also highlighted the need for their queen to be married. As we shall see in

---

[1] NLS, Adv.MSS, 33.1.9, f.1^{r-v}.

Chapter VII, the Scots were increasingly reluctant to finance the Queen Regent's defensive policies simply on account of Henri's foreign policy or, for that matter, on the strength of a protectoral alliance. England's declaration of war against France and entry into the Habsburg-Valois conflict in June 1557 was the catalyst that resulted in the marriage of Mary, Queen of Scots to the Dauphin of France in April 1558. The Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance marked the fulfilment of Marie de Guise's dynastic policies, while the Three Estates' consent to grant the crown matrimonial to the Dauphin brought Henri one step closer to realising his imperial ambitions. The death of Mary Tudor in November 1558 and the dubious legality of the accession of her Protestant half–sister, Elizabeth, saw the launch of a vigorous campaign on the part of the French King to advance the Catholic claim of Mary Stewart to the English throne, which by virtue of the crown matrimonial was also that of her husband, François.

Finally, this thesis challenges the predominant view that Marie de Guise needed to buy off and/or conciliate her Protestant subjects in order to achieve her dynastic objectives. This challenge is comprised of three main arguments. Firstly, that from 1548 to 1551, French patronage was distributed by Guise to Scots of all religious and political persuasions - not just those with pro-English and/or pro-reform sympathies. Secondly, that Protestants enjoyed key offices of state alongside their Catholic peers in Marie de Guise's administration – an administration which, contrary to the Congregation's assertions, was still dominated by the Scots. Of greater significance still is the final argument that shows how leading Protestants, such as the Earl of Argyll, Lord James Stewart and John, Erskine of Dun, were extensively involved in every aspect of Mary, Queen of Scots' marriage to the Dauphin. By adopting an inclusive and

accommodating position in matters of religion, Guise assured her Protestant subjects that they would not be excluded or persecuted on account of their faith as a result of the union of the French and Scottish Catholic crowns, nor that the reform movement was incompatible with her dynastic policies. It would be wrong, however, to presume that Protestantism was a major preoccupation for Guise during her administration. Religion played a decidedly secondary role to her dynastic interests and to the more pressing and immediate concerns of defence and national security. But, as a pragmatic politique, Guise was not above altering her religious policy if international considerations made such a change necessary for the protection and/or advancement of her dynastic interests – as was the case in 1558-9, when the dubious legality of Elizabeth Tudor's accession launched a vigorous campaign to advance Mary Stewart's *Catholic* claim to the English succession.

It is because of Marie de Guise's politique position in matters of religion and of the support Scotland's reformers gave to the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance that the Queen Regent viewed the professed motives of the Congregation's rebellion in 1559-60 with great suspicion. Chapter VIII outlines the course of events up to and including the outbreak of the Reformation Rebellion and, for the first time, charts the various reactions and responses of the French and Scottish governments to the civil unrest in Scotland. For her part, Marie de Guise consistently maintained that the Congregation's rebellion was not a revolt of conscience, but rather a rebellion against the established authority. Throughout 1559, Guise's suspicions were confirmed by the Congregation's actions – most notably, by the defection of Châtelherault to assume the nominal leadership of the Congregation with his son, James, 3rd earl of Arran, and their

subsequent 'Act of Suspension', deposing Marie de Guise from the regency. While the Queen Regent had the ideological, constitutional and legal edge over the Congregation throughout most of 1559, the formal intervention of England into the conflict in 1559/60 and, more decisively, the failure of France to respond to this intervention with adequate military reinforcements, irrevocably weakened the foundations of Marie de Guise's administration. Only with her death in June 1560, however, would its collapse be complete.

CHAPTER I

Mary Stewart and the Treaty of Haddington: the Foundations of a Franco-British Empire

Like her daughter, Marie de Guise-Lorraine's importance in sixteenth-century Europe lay not so much in what she did as in who she was. In her forty-five years, she was no less than a Regent, a Queen Consort, a Duchess and, most famously of all perhaps, a Queen Mother. Yet, none of these public personae accurately captures the essence of Marie de Guise or, for that matter, identifies the driving force behind all her actions. In a life of ever-changing roles and circumstances, the only constant in Marie's life was the fact that, above all else, she was a 'Guise'. Born on 20 November 1515 to Claude de Guise and Antoinette de Bourbon, Marie was the eldest member of the first generation of the House of Guise, a scion of the princely House of Lorraine and, arguably, the most powerful dynasty in sixteenth-century France.[1] This prestigious lineage not only served as the foundation for Marie de Guise's own dynastic importance, but also as the pretext for her family's over-riding dynastic ambition and for her career in Scotland as a dynastic politique.

Dynasticism was central to the prestige of 'les Guises' in France and throughout Europe as a whole. The Princes of Lorraine, an independent duchy on the Franco-Imperial border, boasted Charlemagne and the Carolingian Kings of France as ancestors. The arms of a host of royal houses also bore the alerions of Lorraine. Those

[1] For the ancestry of the House of Guise and their establishment in France, see Bouille, *Histoire des Ducs de Guise*, I, pp. 1-72; Forneron, *Les Ducs de Guise*, I, pp. 1-37; Constant, *Les Guises*, pp. 20-2; Pimodan, *La mère des Guises*, pp. 1-98; Carroll, *Noble Power during the French Wars of Religion*, pp. 14-25; Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, pp. 15-39.

of Hungary, Naples, Jerusalem, Aragon, Anjou, Gueldres, Flanders and Bar were all represented, while the Princes themselves preferred to be styled as the 'Kings of Sicily'. When, in 1506, Marie's grandfather, René II of Lorraine, stipulated that his second son, Claude, was to become a naturalised Frenchman and take possession of Lorraine's extensive landholdings in France, of which Guise, Aumale, Mayenne, Joinville, Elboeuf and Harcourt were just a few, the prestige of the newly created House of Guise was virtually instantaneous.[1] The fact that 'les Guises' also happened to excel on the battle field and proved themselves to be exceptional ecclesiastics and statesmen served only to enhance and consolidate their position at the French Court – despite their status as foreigners.[2] For Marie de Guise, this prestige secured her a marriage, firstly, to Louis d'Orléans, duc de Longueville, and, secondly, to James V of Scotland. The significance of these marriages lay not only in their obvious stature, but also in the fact that, having been originally destined for a cloistered life, Marie's religious convictions were to take a back seat to Guise dynastic ambition.

Up until the age of fourteen, Marie received an intense Christian education from her paternal and exceptionally devout grandmother, Philippa de Gueldres (James III's first cousin).[3] Following the death of René II in 1508, Philippa was drawn into a life of holy simplicity and entered the Convent of Pont-au-Mousson on 15 December 1519. For twenty-seven years she lived an austere life as a Poor Clare against the objections of

---

[1] Bouillé, *Des Ducs de Guise*, I, pp. 45-9.

[2] For more on the Guise ecclesiastics, see J. Baker, 'The House of Guise and the church, *c.* 1550-1558' (unpublished DPhil thesis, University of Oxford, 1995); H.O. Evennett, *The Cardinal of Lorraine and the Council of Trent: A Study in the Counter-Reformation* (Cambridge, 1930); J. Bergin, 'The decline and fall of the House of Guise as an ecclesiastical dynasty', *Historical Journal*, 5 (1982), pp. 782-803.

[3] See Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, pp. 19-32 for a discussion of Marie's childhood and education.

her family, and despite a papal dispensation excusing her from such austerities on account of her noble standing.[1] Under the tutelage of her grandmother, therefore, Marie became fully immersed into the ascetic life of a Poor Clare – attending all religious ceremonies and partaking in domestic chores such as gardening, cooking and cleaning. Although it is not known when Marie entered the Convent to begin her education, her experience at Pont-au-Mousson during her formative years must have had a profound influence on her personal faith. But, as we shall see in Chapters VII and VIII, it is impossible to determine the extent of these convictions based solely on her religious policy in Scotland – throughout her regency, Marie would display extraordinary tolerance towards the reform movement and implement a policy of accommodation towards her Protestant subjects.

Antoine I's decision to withdraw his niece from the Convent at Pont-au-Mousson in order to prepare her for a life at Court set an important precedent for Marie's future political career in Scotland - and for her brothers', François (the future Duc de Guise) and Charles (the future Cardinal de Lorraine), during the reigns of Henri II and François II. Through the actions of their father, Claude, 'les Guises' had become established as the 'protectors of Catholicism'. Claude's success in suppressing the Lutheran inspired peasant revolts of 1525 in Lorraine, earned him title 'défenseur du catholicism et de l'ordre social' by the Parlement of Paris and Pope Clement VII.[2] For

[1] Marshall, *Mary de Guise*, pp. 21-2; McKerlie, *Mary of Guise Lorraine*, p.22.

[2] In 1525, the socio-political effects of Lutheranism in Germany took the form of peasant revolts against the Holy Roman Emperor, Charles V. Lorraine was also invaded and Antoine I appealed to his brother for French military intervention. The Regency Council in France, however, forbade Claude to use a national army to defend an independent duchy. But, on the advice of his staunchly Catholic mother, Philippa de Gueldres, Claude ignored the Regency Council's order and led an expeditionary force into Lorraine. Successful in his mission, Claude 'fut félicité par le pape [Clement VII] et le Parlement de Paris. Il apparut alors auréolé du titre de défenseur du catholicism et de l'ordre social, ce qui plaisait au peuple parisien don't la sensibilité religieuse était vive'. From this point on, Claude de Guise was

both Marie de Guise and her brothers, however, this was a role they were ultimately willing to forego when it came to the defence and advancement of their dynastic interests.[1]

Marie's intelligence, charm, wit and stature made her a very popular figure at Court and, more importantly, with the French King. Because of this, François I took a direct hand in instigating and arranging Marie's first marriage to one of the most important members of the French nobility, Louis, duc de Longueville, the Grand Chamberlain of France.[2] Solemnised in the presence of the entire royal court at the Royal Palace of the Louvre on 4 August 1534, this union produced two sons, François, born at Amiens on 30 October 1535, and Louis, at Châteaudun on 4 August 1537.[3] While pregnant with her second son, however, Marie would suffer the first of many tragic deaths that would mar her personal happiness – that of her husband on 9 June 1537.[4] Marie's sorrow was compounded soon after by the death of his namesake, who did not survive his first year. But it was only a matter of months before François was

---

regarded by Catholics as a Christian hero and was dubbed the 'protector of the faith' – to the Protestants, he was known simply as the 'Grand Boucher'. Constant, *Les Guise*, p.21; Cloulas, *Henri II*, p.62; Bouillé, *Histoire des Ducs de Guise*, I, pp. 62-5, 79-84; Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, pp. 28-9.

[1] François and Charles de Guise are conventionally associated with ultra-orthodox Catholicism and religious persecution during the reign of François II. As Stuart Carroll has shown, however, the negative imagery surrounding their administration is largely due to unfavourable Protestant sources, when, in fact, there was little difference in policy between the reigns of Henri and his son. 'The Guise', he argues, 'were conventional in pursuing family interests rather than devoting themselves to a simple religious ideology. ... Far from altering the designs of the dead king, the Guise showed themselves to be highly conservative. Their policies did not herald the dawn of a new era. They implemented the policies of Henri and his most trusted and faithful friend Anne de Montmorency in maintaining a viable peace with Spain while at the same time pursuing French dynastic claims in Scotland. At home religious persecution was to be intensified, as Henri II had intended'. Carroll, *Noble Power during the French Wars of Religion*, p.91 and especially his chapter 'Faction, religious schism and dynastic strategy, 1558-1562', pp. 89-115.

[2] Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, pp. 35.

[3] *Ibid*, pp. 32-6; Pimodan, *La mère des Guises*, pp. 56-60.

[4] *Ibid*, p.65.

playing matchmaker again with Marie - a young, wealthy and extremely attractive marital prospect.[1] This time, the proposed match was with his recently widowed son-in-law, James V, who was in the market for a new French bride following the death of François' eldest daughter, Madeleine.[2] Needless to say, the Dowager Duchess of Longueville found such a prospect less than appealing – most notably because her son, François, would be obliged to stay in France as the new Duc de Longueville and Grand Chamberlain. Marriage to the King of Scots also implied separation from the rest of her family and abandoning a life of luxury in her beloved France. The only other prospect in the offing, however, was even less appealing - Marie had no intention of becoming Henry VIII's next 'victim'. But, after much persuasion from both François and James, who wrote a personal letter pleading for her hand and counsel, Marie eventually relented and agreed to marry the Stewart monarch.[3]

Negotiated by David Beaton (the future Cardinal and Archbishop of St. Andrews), François and Marie's father, Claude, the royal marriage was contracted in January 1538 and signed at Lyon before the French Court.[4] The terms of the contract were favourable to both James and Marie. The King of Scots would receive a dowry of 150,000 *livres*, 70,000 *livres* of which was generously gifted by François himself.[5] For

---

[1] See Pimondan, *La mère des Guises*, p.60; *James V Letters*, pp. 340-1; and Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, p.36 for the terms of Marie's marriage contract to the Duc de Longueville and the provisions of her jointure, which inlcuded the Castle of Châteaudun.

[2] James and Madeleine's marriage lasted only seven months. Falling ill while still in France, Madeleine died on 7 July 1538, just six weeks after arriving in Scotland. *James V Letters*, pp. 333-4, 340-1; *TA*, VII, p.181; J. Cameron, *James V: The Personal Rule 1528-1542*, edited by N. Macdougall (Edinburgh, 1998), p.133.

[3] Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, pp. 51-3; S. Zweig, *The Queen of Scots*, translated by C. & E. Paul (London, 1935), pp. 1-2.

[4] Teulet, *Relations*, I, pp. 115-8.

[5] Cameron, *James V*, p.261 *n.*47.

her part, Marie's portion was equally lucrative. She was gifted Falkland Palace, Stirling, Dingwall and Threave Castles, the earldoms of Strathearn, Ross, Orkney and Fife, and the lordships of Galloway, Ardmannach and the Isles. In the event of James' death with issue, Marie was entitled to a third of her dowry – one half if there was no surviving heir. She was also granted financial immunity for all James' debts and, in return for waiving any claim to those of her husband, she was allowed to keep all her possessions. More importantly, these terms also applied if Marie wished to return to France. She was entitled to take the allocated portion of her dowry, her possessions, and retain the revenues from her jointures in Scotland.[1] Clearly, this treaty was designed to satisfy two main objectives - to augment James' revenue and to protect the interests of Marie and her family in Scotland.

These terms having been agreed, James V and Marie de Guise were married on 9 May 1538 at the Castle of Châteaudun with Robert, lord Maxwell acting as proxy for the absent Scottish monarch.[2] Scotland's new Queen arrived at St. Andrews in June 1538 and was formally crowned at Holyrood on 22 February 1539/40.[3] The marriage produced three children in quick succession: James, born at St. Andrews on 22 May 1540, Robert, at Stirling on 24 April 1541, and Mary, at Linlithgow on 8 December 1542. One week after their second son was born, however, tragedy dealt the King and Queen a double blow – the deaths of Prince James and Prince Robert within hours of each other. When James himself died at Falkland on 14 December 1542, therefore, his

[1] Teulet, *Relations*, I, pp. 115-8.

[2] BN, f. fr. 5467, f.66; Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, p.53.

[3] Cameron, *James V*, pp. 263-4; *Diurnal of Occurents*, p.23. See Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, pp. 55-64, 79-80 for a more detailed account of Marie's arrival, reception and coronation in Scotland.

only surviving heir was his infant daughter, Mary, who became the Queen of Scotland at the tender age of six days old.[1]

Mary Stewart was what one historian aptly described as a 'dynastic entity'.[2] Her accession to the Scottish throne rendered her a figure of extraordinary dynastic importance in sixteenth-century Europe. But this importance lay not entirely in her Scottish sovereignty and Guisean lineage. Of even greater significance, perhaps, was Mary Stewart's Catholic claim to the English throne. The dynastic problems caused by Henry VIII's break from Rome, coupled with the repeated failure of successive Tudor monarchs to secure the line of succession by producing heirs to the throne, made it a very real possibility that Mary Stewart alone could unite the kingdoms of Scotland, England and Ireland under one Catholic crown. Mary Stewart's dynastic importance was further enhanced by her gender as notions of 'British imperialism' could be realised through marriage to the Scottish Queen. She was from the outset a highly prized marriage partner and it is no surprise that the question of marriage dominated her reign. At no time was this more true than during the first eight years of her minority when the Kings of England and France literally fought for her hand and control of her kingdom.

As an extension of her own dynasticism, Marie de Guise was naturally keen to protect and advance the dynastic interests of her daughter. These interests not only served as the pretext for Guise's formal entry into factional high politics during Mary's minority in the 1540s, but also for her official political career in Scotland as Queen

---

[1] Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, pp. 86-7. Mary's coronation was on 9 September 1543.

[2] M.H. Merriman, 'Mary, Queen of France', in M. Lynch (ed.), *Mary Stewart: Queen of Three Kingdoms* (Oxford, 1988), p.31.

Regent from 1554 to 1560.[1] The traditional struggle for power and factionalism that accompanied any minority government did not escape Mary's, but these problems were exacerbated by additional conflicts over foreign, dynastic and ecclesiastical policy.

The factions that emerged fell loosely into two categories – those that supported an Anglo-Scottish dynastic alliance and sought the reform of the church along more radical lines than from within, and those that favoured an alliance with France and sought to maintain the authority of the established Church in Scotland. While this thesis is primarily concerned with the élite politics of post-1548 Scotland, this overly-simplified summation of the divisions within the political community during the first five years of Mary Stewart's minority is nevertheless enough to place Marie de Guise firmly in the camp opposed to the pro-reform and pro-English faction led by the Earls of Angus and Lennox.[2] Along with Cardinal Beaton, Guise played a leading role in the campaign to promote the interests of France in Scotland and, in doing so, proved to be a shrewd and effective dynastic politician – especially when compared to the Earl of Arran, whose policies as Governor were as inconsistent as his allegiances. Indeed, Guise had made such an impact that, as early as June 1544, a convention at Stirling

---

[1] James Hamilton, 2nd earl of Arran and Governor of the realm, initially led this faction and was responsible for contracting the treaties of Greenwich. After his 'godly fit' had passed, he altered his position and was reconciled, albeit tenuously, with Marie de Guise and Cardinal Beaton. Archibald Douglas, 6th earl of Angus and Matthew Stewart, 4th earl of Lennox were more steadfast in their commitment and carried on as the leaders of the pro-English/pro-reform faction. The national and international politics surrounding the minority and marriage of Mary Stewart during the 1540s is a complex and involved subject that Marcus Merriman has already studied in great detail. It is not the purpose of this thesis to repeat his work, only to highlight certain events in order to establish the context of the treaty of Haddington and the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance as a whole. In addition to Merriman's, 'The Struggle for the Marriage of Mary Queen of Scots: England and French Intervention in Scotland, 1543-1550' (unpublished PhD thesis, University of London, 1974), see also Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, pp. 108-76; Wormald, *Mary, Queen of Scots*, pp. 43-75; Donaldson, *James V-James VII*, pp. 63-84 and *All the Queen's Men*, pp. 15-26; Sanderson, *Ayrshire and the Reformation*, pp. 48-63; Cowan, *The Scottish Reformation*, pp. 89-104; *Scottish Correspondence*, pp. 1-252.

[2] Merriman, 'Struggle for the Marriage', pp. 27-87.

called on her to supersede Arran as regent. Although Arran and the Queen Dowager were reconciled soon after, Guise nevertheless retained a position of authority as head of a sixteen strong council set up to 'advise' the Governor.[1] This episode was an early, yet clear indication as to whom the Scottish political élite ultimately deemed most able when it came to governing the realm.[2]

In the end, Marie de Guise was successful in her primary objective to protect her daughter's dynastic interests in Scotland. The treaties contracting the marriage of Mary, Queen of Scots, to Prince Edward of England had been revoked and, largely on account of England's harsh Scottish policy, a treaty was then contracted between the 'auld allies' at Haddington on 7 July 1548. This treaty not only provided for the future union of the French and Scottish crowns, but also tied Scotland irrevocably to the interests of France by establishing what was, essentially, a protectoral alliance. As we shall see, Marie de Guise played a key role in securing this treaty, and advancing the dynastic interests of 'les Guises' as a whole. But before we look in detail at the treaty of Haddington itself, it is necessary to examine the broader significance of Mary Stewart's dynastic inheritance.

***

In 1503, the marriage of James IV to Margaret Tudor, eldest daughter of Henry VII, established the Stewarts as heirs apparent to the English throne upon the failure of the main Tudor line. During the reign of Mary, Queen of Scots, the Stewart claim to the English succession was particularly strong for two reasons. Firstly, the infecundity of

---

[1] Lynch, *Scotland: A New History* (Edinburgh, 1992 edn), p.208.

[2] Donaldson, *James V-James VII*, p.70.

the Tudors gave credence to the contemporary perception of England as a kingdom ruled by an infertile and weak dynasty. This belief was exemplified by the collective failure of Edward VI, Mary I and Elizabeth I to fulfil their fundamental duty as sovereigns by producing heirs to the throne and securing the line of succession. Significant as it was in its own right, the problem of infertility also served to exacerbate a larger problem that undermined the strength of England's royal house - the controversies surrounding the *order* of succession as a result of Henry VIII's break from Rome, assertion of royal supremacy and divorce from Catherine of Aragon. As we shall see, the dynastic and political ramifications of Henry's ecclesiastical schism not only generated dissent and opposition to the crown within England, but also cast doubt internationally on the legality of Elizabeth Tudor's accession in November 1558.

Henry VIII's primary motivation for divorce was to secure the Tudor line of succession with a legitimate *male* heir. After the birth of Princess Mary in 1516, Henry's confident prediction that 'the sons will follow' became increasingly unlikely with every miscarriage and stillbirth Catherine of Aragon suffered in later years.[1] In 1527, after almost twenty years of marriage and only a daughter to show for it, Henry took steps to obtain a dispensation from Pope Clement VII to annul his marriage on the grounds that it was 'against God's law and His precept'.[2] It was argued that according to two texts in Leviticus, Henry's marriage to Catherine (the widow of his brother

---

[1] *CSP Venice*, II, p.691.

[2] According to Edward Hall, this speech constituted Henry's formal announcement that the validity of his marriage was to be the subject of a papal investigation - the reason for which was only 'to settle my conscience and for no other cause'. Delivered at Bridlewood on 8 November 1528, the English King also took the opportunity to remind his audience of the dynastic controversies surrounding the War of the Roses and warn of a similar danger 'if our true heir be not known at the time of our death'. Hall, *Chronicle*, ed. H. Ellis (London, 1809), pp. 754-6.

Arthur) was sinful and, therefore, invalid.[1] By consequence, Pope Julius II's dispensation enabling Henry to wed his brother's widow in 1509 was similarly null and void.[2] The success of Henry's supplication to Rome, however, was influenced and ultimately hindered by events on the Continent. As long as Rome was in Imperial control and subject to the will of Catherine of Aragon's nephew, Charles V, Clement was extremely reluctant to dissolve a marriage that would blatantly antagonise his oppressor. As a result, the Anglo-Papal deliberations dragged on for years.

Impatient at these setbacks, Henry decided to break the deadlock through anti-Papal legislation. Between the years 1532 and 1536, a plethora of statutes were enacted that severed England's ecclesiastical and financial ties to Rome and established Henry as the 'Supreme Head' of an autonomous Church in England.[3] The 'Act in Restraints of Appeals' (1533), in particular, facilitated the dissolution of Henry's marriage to Catherine completely independent from the Court of Rome.[4] The preamble to this statute contained Henry's famous declaration that, 'Englond is an Impire, ... governed by oon Supreme heede and King ... with plenarie hoole and intiere power premynence auctoritie prerogatyve and jurisdiccion ... without restraynt or provocacion to any foreyn

---

[1] Leviticus 18:16, 'Thou shalt not uncover the nakedness of thy brother's wife; it *is* thy brother's nakedness', and 20:21, 'And if a man shall take his brother's wife, it *is* an unclean thing: he hath uncovered his brother's nakedness; they shall be childless'. In direct contradiction to Leviticus, however, were the words of Deuteronomy 25:5: 'If brethren dwell together, and one of them die, and have no child, the wife of the dead shall not marry without unto a stranger: her husband's brother shall go in unto her, and take her to him to wife, and perform the duty of an husband's brother unto her'.

[2] See J.J. Scarisbrick, *Henry VIII* (Berkley, 1968), pp. 163-240 for a detailed discussion on canon law and Henry's struggle for divorce, as well as A.G. Dickens, *The English Reformation* (New York, 1968), pp. 104-8; J. Guy, *Tudor England* (Oxford, 1988), pp. 116-53; and M. Levine, *Tudor Dynastic Problems, 1460-1571* (London, 1973), pp. 54-61, 148-50.

[3] 1534: 26 Henry VIII, c.1, *Statutes of the Realm*, III, p.492.

[4] 1533: 24 Henry VIII, c.12, *ibid*, III, pp. 427-9.

Princes or Potentates of the World'.[1] This assertion of royal supremacy enabled Archbishop Thomas Cranmer to dissolve Henry's marriage on 23 May 1533. Five days later, Henry's marriage to Anne Boleyn, whom he had wed secretly in January 1532/3, was legitimised and in the following September, Henry's second daughter was born. Far from settling the succession unequivocally, however, the birth of Princess Elizabeth served only to complicate an already complex dynastic situation.

In order to clarify matters Henry turned to Parliament and, in 1534, obtained what would be the first of three 'Acts of Succession'. Intended 'to forsee and provyde for the perfite suertie of both you [Henry] and of your moste lawfull succession and heires', these statutes actually had the opposite effect and fostered internal dissension.[2] By omission, the first 'Acte for the estalishement of the Kynges succession' excluded Princess Mary from the succession in favour of Princess Elizabeth and any other offspring Henry might have with Anne Boleyn.[3] Although Mary Tudor's legitimacy had not been affected, her exclusion from the succession was yet another source of discontent for Henry's pro-Aragonese subjects. His second 'Act of Succession' would do little to placate this growing opposition to the crown.

The execution of Anne Boleyn and Henry's marriage to Jane Seymour in May 1536, necessitated that the order of succession be altered once again. Whilst Queen Jane was pregnant with the future Edward VI, Henry obtained from Parliament a second 'Acte for the establisshement of the succession of the Imperyall Crowne' of England.[4]

---

[1] 1533: 24 Henry VIII, c.12, *Statutes of the Realm*, III, p.427.

[2] 1534: 25 Henry VIII, c.22, *ibid*, III, p.471.

[3] 1534: 25 Henry VIII, c.22, *ibid*, III, pp. 471-4.

[4] 1536: 28 Henry VIII, c.7, *ibid*, III, pp. 655-62.

At the time of its enactment, however, this statute provided for a less than secure succession. In this unprecedented piece of legislation, both the Tudor Princesses were bastardised and excluded from the succession in favour of an *unborn* child.[1] Moreover, Henry was invested with 'full and plenar power and auctority to geve despose appoynte assigne declare and lymytt, by your letters patentes under your great seale or ells by your laste Will made in wrtynge and signed with you moste gracious hand ... the imperiall Crowne of this Realme', irrespective of whether he had legitimate heirs or not.[2] Needless to say, these provisions were controversial. Henry's bastardisation of Princess Mary and his unfettered statutory power to determine the succession were contributing factors to the widespread discontent that culminated in the rebellions of the Pilgrimage of Grace (1536-7).[3] The fact that each 'Act of Succession' was accompanied with increasingly stringent definitions of treason, further indicates the extent to which Henry's assertion of royal supremacy caused internal dissension and, consequently, undermined the strength and stability of the Tudor dynasty.[4] Fortunately for Henry, a son was borne by Queen Jane and, to all intents and purposes, the succession seemed secure with a legitimate male heir.

Prince Edward, however, proved to be a sickly child and Henry's subsequent marriages to Anne of Cleves (1539/40), Catherine Howard (1540) and Catherine Parr (1543) were all childless. As the succession stood, Henry would have no other heirs if

---

[1] 1536: 28 Henry VIII, c.7, *Statutes of the Realm*, III, v, vi, viii, ix, pp. 655-62.

[2] 1536: 28 Henry VIII, c.7, *ibid*, III, ix, x, xvii, pp. 659, 660, 662.

[3] See M. Bateson (ed.), 'Aske's Examination', *EHR*, v (1890), pp. 652-4, for the demands of Robert Aske, leader of the rebellion.

[4] See, for example, 1534: 25 Henry VIII, c.22, v-ix and 28 Henry VIII, c.7, *Statutes of the Realm*, III, xi-xvi, pp. 473-4, 659-72.

Edward should die prematurely. The seriousness of this situation was brought to the fore in 1544, when Henry was making preparations to launch and lead a military campaign against François I on the Continent. As a precautionary measure, he obtained a third act from Parliament restoring both his daughters to the succession.[1] But the restoration of Mary and Elizabeth was far from complete – they retained their illegitimate status in the eyes of the law and were further required to fulfil any conditions Henry chose to impose on their succession by letters patent or in his will.[2] In this stipulation lay the painful reminder that another heir could still be appointed by the same means. These precautionary measures, however, proved to be in vain. Henry's health was deteriorating rapidly and it soon became apparent that Edward would not predecease his father, but succeed him as a minor.

Even on his deathbed Henry tinkered with the succession and, in December 1546, made some last minute revisions to his will to provide for his son's minority.[3] Appointing the members of the Regency Council to govern the kingdom, Henry also added a clause excluding Mary and Elizabeth from the succession if they married without the consent of the aforesaid councillors. Finally, and of greater significance from a Scottish perspective, Henry deliberately snubbed the Stewarts. In what can only be seen as an expression of the English King's displeasure at the Scots' continued refusal to recognise the renounced treaties of Greenwich, a clause was inserted excluding the Stewarts from the succession in favour of the Suffolk line - the descendants of Henry's *younger* sister, Mary, and her daughters, Frances and Eleanor

[1] 1544: 35 Henry VIII, c.1, *Statutes of the Realm*, III, pp. 955-8.

[2] 1544: 35 Henry VIII, c.1, *ibid*, III, i, ii, iii, vi, pp. 955-6.

[3] *Foedera*, XV, pp. 112-4.

Brandon. Yet, despite these provisions, controversy surrounding the succession still managed to follow Henry to the grave. Immediately following his death on 23 January 1546/7, the authenticity of his will was brought into question. According to the second 'Act of Succession', Henry had been empowered to appoint his successor arbitrarily in either his letters patent or in his will which had been authenticated by the king's hand.[1] The fact that the will had not been signed by his 'gracious hand' but with a dry stamp, technically rendered it invalid. As a result, the amendments contained within his last will and testament were inapplicable and the succession was to follow as stipulated in the third 'Act of Succession'. Mary Stewart's claim to the English throne was secure.

Immediately following her accession in 1553, Mary Tudor repealed the articles in the second 'Act of Succession' that bastardised her and renounced Archbishop Cranmer's declaration that Henry's marriage to Catherine of Aragon was invalid, 'as if the same hadd never been geven or pronounced'.[2] No attempt was made to reverse Elizabeth's illegitimate status. In fact, Mary would have preferred to exclude Elizabeth from the succession altogether on account of her 'heretical opinions, illegitimacy and characteristics in which she resembled her mother', had it not been necessary to appease the body politic into accepting her decision to marry Philip of Spain.[3] Of all the candidates she considered to be her successor, Mary I acknowledged that the Queen of Scots not only had the 'real right by descent', but also the 'best right ... for it came

[1] 1536: 28 Henry VIII c.7, *Statutes of the Realm*, III, ix-x, pp. 659-60.

[2] 'An Acte declaring the Quenes Hyghnes to have bene borne in a most just and lawfull Matrimonie, and also repealing all Actes of Parliament and Sentences of Divorce hadd and made to the contrarie'. 1553: 1 Mary st.2 c.1, *ibid*, IV, pp. 200-1.

[3] *CSP Spain*, XI, p.393.

through Margaret, elder sister of King Henry'.[1] The simple desire to avoid trouble, however, prevented both Mary, Queen of Scots' and Mary I's preferred choice, Margaret Douglas, the Countess of Lennox,[2] from being named heir apparent - 'Parliament had accepted the Lady Elizabeth as proper to succeed'.[3] But, in the eyes of the Papacy and Catholic princes of Europe, the invalidity of Henry's marriage to Anne Boleyn in canon law rendered Elizabeth illegitimate and, thus, ineligible to succeed her Catholic half-sister. The next legitimate Catholic claimant in line was Mary Stewart. Upon Mary Tudor's death in November 1558, England consequently found herself subject to yet another succession crisis, but this time on an international level.

The effect of the Reformation on dynastic and political issues was uncharted territory and destined to become the source of controversy. Yet, irrespective of all the internal turmoil and uncertainty surrounding the succession as a result of Henry VIII's ecclesiastical schism, Mary Stewart's Catholic claim to the English throne remained intact and increased in strength with every Tudor sovereign who failed to produce an heir to the throne. As a female sovereign of such extraordinary dynastic importance, it comes as no surprise that she was highly sought after on the marriage market - for only in the person of Mary, Queen of Scots could notions of British imperialism be entertained and potentially realised. Given the correct set of circumstances, such as

---

[1] *CSP Spain*, XI, pp. 393, 395.

[2] Apart from being the Queen's principal favourite, Lady Margaret Douglas also had a claim to the English throne as a direct descendant of Henry VII. She was the daughter of Margaret Tudor, Henry VIII's elder sister and Queen Dowager of Scotland, and Archibald Douglas, 6th earl of Angus. In an interesting twist of fate, Lady Margaret's son, Henry Stewart, Lord Darnley, became Mary, Queen of Scots second husband in 1565. See *ibid*, XI, pp. 393-5, for Simon Renard's report to Charles V dated 28 November 1553, of the discussion he had with Mary Tudor concerning the succession and her thoughts on the various rival claimants to the throne.

[3] *Ibid*, XI, p.395.

those that presented themselves in November 1558, it was possible that she alone could unite the kingdoms of Scotland, England and Ireland under one Catholic crown.[1] Mary Stewart's marriage, therefore, had weighty dynastic and imperial implications. During the 1540s, two separate treaties contracted her marriage: the collective treaties of Greenwich in 1543 and the treaty of Haddington in 1548. Both laid the foundations for a British empire, Anglo-centric and Franco-centric respectively, and both were centred on the dynastic claims of Mary Stewart.

***

Notions of Anglo-British imperialism did not originate with Mary, Queen of Scots. England had a long tradition of claiming suzerainty over Scotland and the extension of English sovereignty to include Scotland had been a political objective of many an English king, most notably Edward I.[2] The birth of Mary Stewart merely provided the means through which this imperial vision could be peacefully realised - the union of the English and Scottish crowns through her marriage to Prince Edward Tudor, the future Edward VI. Even the scenario of a Scottish queen regnant marrying the heir to the English throne was not unprecedented. In 1290, the betrothal of Margaret 'Maid of Norway' to Edward Plantagenet (the future Edward II) was contracted and ratified in the treaty of Birgham. Significantly, neither the treaties of Birgham nor Greenwich succeeded in their objective of uniting the kingdoms of Scotland and England dynastically.

---

[1] In 1553, Henri II commented that, on account of the English Parliament's declaration that Catherine of Aragon's marriage to Henry VIII was 'bon & vallable', Elizabeth's Tudor's illegitimacy meant that 'ma fille la Royne d'Escosse approche en degree', and his vision of a Franco-British Empire came one step closer to becoming a reality. AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, f.182.

[2] For more on Edward I's Scottish policy, see F.J. Watson, *Under the Hammer: Edward I and Scotland, 1286-1306* (Edinburgh, 1998).

However enticing the idea of a united Britain was to the English, the tumultuous history of Anglo-Scottish relations rendered this prospect less so to the Scots. Their struggle to maintain and defend the independence of their kingdom from the seemingly incessant threat of English invasion and/or domination made them acutely sensitive about matters of sovereignty. There were some Scots, such as James Henrison, to whom the idea of Britain was appealing, and even providential.[1] The wave of reformist ideologies sweeping across sixteenth-century Europe had not failed to reach the shores of Scotland, and Henry VIII's break from Rome added a Protestant dimension to the already existing geographical, linguistic and cultural arguments in favour of Anglo-Scottish union which culminated in the treaties of Greenwich.[2] Yet only months after its ratification, the treaty contracting the marriage of Mary Stewart to Edward Tudor was renounced by the Scottish Parliament.[3] Given the Scots' reluctance to enter into a dynastic alliance with England, the question must then be asked why they were so eager to enter into a similar, if not more intimate alliance with France in July 1548? As we shall see, the answer lies in the English response to the Scots' refusal to recognise the treaties of Greenwich, which had the adverse affect of driving the Scots into the

---

[1] See, for example, James Henrison's *An Exhortation to the Scotts* in J.A.H. Murray (ed.), *The Complaynt of Scotlande* (Early English Text Society, 1872-3), pp. 208-36.

[2] J.E.A. Dawson, 'Anglo-Scottish protestant culture and integration in sixteenth-century Britain' in S.G. Ellis & S. Barber (eds.), *Conquest and Union: Fashioning a British State, 1485-1725* (London, 1995), pp. 87-114; B.P. Levack, *The formation of the British state: England, Scotland and the union of 1603-1707* (Oxford, 1987); Mason, 'The Scottish Reformation and the origins of Anglo-British imperialism', in Mason (ed.), *Scots and Britons: Scottish Political Thought and the Union of 1603* (Cambridge, 1994), pp. 161-86, and 'Kingship, nobility and Anglo-Scottish union: John Mair's *History of Greater Britain* (1521)', *Innes Review*, 41 (1990), pp. 182-222; Merriman, 'James Henrisoun and 'Great Britain': British Union and the Scottish Commonweal' in *Scotland and England, 1286-1815* (Edinburgh, 1987); and A.H. Williamson, 'Scotland, Antichrist and the invention of Great Britain' in J. Dwyer *et al* (eds.), *New Perspectives on the politics and culture of early modern Scotland* (Edinburgh, 1982), pp. 34-58.

[3] 11 December 1543, *APS*, II, pp. 431-2.

welcoming arms of France and, ultimately, provided for the dynastic union of the French and Scottish crowns.

The *volte-face* of the Scottish government regarding the treaties of Greenwich sparked a reactionary English policy in Scotland. Initially placatory in nature with the use of 'assured Scots', Henry VIII soon changed tactics and, in 1544-5, embarked on an aggressive campaign of 'rough wooing' Scotland into recognition of the treaties that contracted his son and heir's marriage to Mary Stewart.[1] After his death, Henry's Scottish policy was vehemently continued by Edward Seymour, duke of Somerset and Lord Protector of England during Edward VI's minority. Believing it to be his 'godly purpose' to 'enjoin the Queen [Marie de Guise] and Council to deliver the young Queen [Mary Stewart] ... to be suitably nourished and brought up with her husband, as a Queen of England', Somerset launched his military campaign against the Scots in August 1547.[2] The ideological justification for his invasion and subsequent occupation of Scotland was deeply rooted in terms of Anglo-British imperialism. In his *Epistle Exhortatorie* to the Scots (1548), for example, Somerset reasoned that, 'as you and wee be annexed an ioyned in one Islande, so no people so like in maner, forme, language, and all condicions ... should bee, like as twoo brethren of one Islande of greate Britayn',

---

[1] Merriman, 'The assured Scots: Scottish Collaborators with England during the 'Rough Wooing'', *SHR*, xlvii (1968), pp. 10-34. For more on England's Scottish policy during the 1540s see R.B. Wernham, *Before the Armada: The Growth of English Foreign Policy 1485-1588* (London, 1966), pp. 149-78; M.L. Bush, *The Government Policy of Protector Somerset* (London, 1975), pp. 7-39; S. Doran, *England and Europe, 1485-1603* (London, 1986), pp. 23-50; Scarisbrick, *Henry VIII*, pp. 355-83, 424-57; Donaldson, *James V-James VII*, pp. 27-9, 63-94; D.M. Head, 'Henry VIII's Scottish Policy: a Reassessment', *Innes Review*, lxi (1982), pp. 14-24; J.B. Paul, 'Edinburgh in 1544 and Hertford's Invasion', *SHR*, viii (1911), pp. 113-31; and especially, Merriman 'The Struggle For the Marriage', pp. 88-116, 145-74, 202-57; 'The assured Scots', pp. 10-34; 'The Forts of Eyemouth: Anvils of British Union?', *SHR*, lxvii (1988), pp. 142-55 and 'War and Propaganda during the "Rough Wooing"', *Scottish Tradition*, ix/x (1979-80), pp. 20-30.

[2] *CSP Scot.*, I, 50, p.22; P.G.B. McNeill & H.L. MacQueen, *Atlas of Scottish History to 1707* (Edinburgh, 1996), p.127.

and 'if it wer possible one kyngdome be made in rule ... and not to be divided in rulers'.[1] Recognising that 'twoo successions cannot concurre and fal into one, by no maner of other meanes, then by mariage, whereby one bloude, one lignage and parentage, is made of twoo, and an indefecible right geuen of bothe to one, without the destruccion and abolishing of either', Somerset stressed that his military objective in Scotland was not to conquer, but simply to 'join in marriage from high to low both the realms, to make of one isle one realm in love, amity, concord, peace, and charity'.[2] The great majority of the Scots, however, found Somerset's declarations of love and amity hard to swallow and perceived the purpose of the English occupation, conversely, as one of conquest.

Central to Somerset's policy was the construction of strategically placed *trace italienne* fortresses. The first phase of construction, beginning in September 1547 and lasting until January 1547/8, resulted in the creation of an English Pale in south-east Scotland.[3] The strongholds erected at Eyemouth, Roxburgh, Home, Inchcolm and Broughty, and later at Lauder, Haddington, Dunglass and Inchkeith, enabled the English to attack Scotland from within and led to the great devastation of the surrounding areas. As Marcus Merriman argues, it was Somerset's military foothold in Scotland and not necessarily the crushing defeat of the Scots at Pinkie Cleugh on 10 September 1547 that 'convinced the Scottish government of the day that England might successfully conquer the realm'.[4] For many, however, the battle of Pinkie, or 'Black Saturday' as it was later

---

[1] *The Complaynt of Scotlande*, pp. 239-43.

[2] *Ibid*, pp. 239, 241.

[3] Merriman, 'The Forts of Eyemouth', pp. 146-7; H.M. Colvin, *History of the King's Works* (London, 1975), IV, pp. 694-726; *Atlas of Scottish History to 1707*, p.128.

[4] Merriman, 'The Forts of Eyemouth', p.148. This sentiment was also expressed by M. de la Chapelle de Biron, treasurer of the French troops in Scotland, who reported on 23 March 1547/8 that, '... les gens de ce pays [Scotland] se ressenttent tant de la perte de la bataille et de la crainte qu'ilz ont des fortz que les ennemys tinnent, qu'ilz ne peuvent reprandre sans l'ayde du Roy, au moyen de ce qu'ilz ont peu

dubbed, was a decisive event that epitomised England's aggressive policy and revealed Somerset's true objective for Scotland. The comments of one contemporary observer, Alexander Gordon,[1] reveal that Pinkie did little to win favour for the English cause amongst the Scots:

> ... we be swa cruelly owrthrawin in this matter we will randyr to the Twrk rathyr nor to be onrewangit ... thocht the wysdome off Ingland be extremit greitt, thay gane nocht the rycht way to mak unuon off thyr twa realmis. Gyf thay thynk to hawe hartlynes, thay suld traist ws moir tendyrly.[2]

More importantly, Pinkie was a catalytic event in terms of the renewal of the Franco-Scottish alliance and, indirectly, the future political career of Marie de Guise in Scotland. In its immediate aftermath, both the Queen Dowager and the Scottish political élite made urgent requests to the French King for financial and military assistance. Guise wrote a personal letter to Henri II, while the Scots decided to make a formal appeal to the French King for men, money and munition at a convention at Edinburgh on 16 October 1547.[3] Although the news of Pinkie was the source of 'plus grand deplaisir' at the French Court, the Scots were well aware that sympathy alone would not induce Henri to intervene formally on their behalf in their conflict with England.[4] So, on 23 November 1547, the French ambassador resident in Scotland,

---

d'artillerie et munition, que, sans l'assureance que l'on leur donne du secours du Roy, ilz seroient en dangier de bientost prandre l'autre party', Teulet, *Relations*, I, p.160.

[1] Brother to George Gordon, 4th earl of Huntly, and postulate of Caithness.

[2] *Scottish Correspondence*, cli, pp. 213-4.

[3] *CSP Scot.*, I, 78, 88, pp. 37, 41. According to these reports, Sir Walter Ogilvy seems to have been selected as the ambassador to France, whom Lesley writes was 'to desyre in moist freindlie and hartlie maner from the king, as thair auncient and maist speciall considerat and allya, sum convenient support alswill of men as of money and munitione, and that the same suld be send in Scotland with all possibill diligence in the next spring tyme'. Lesley, *History*, p.200.

[4] *Balcarres Papers*, I, cxxx, p.172; *CSP Spain*, IX, pp. 523-5.

Henri Cleutin, seigneur d'Oisel et de Villeparisis, was sent on a diplomatic mission to France armed with a proposal from the Scots. In return for French military and financial assistance, the Scots were prepared to grant Henri possession of certain Scottish strongholds, such as Dunbar Castle, and more importantly, their Queen who, it was proposed, 'mycht be send in France, thair to be keped, quhill sho shuld be mareid at the Kingis pleasour ... with the Dophine of France'.[1] This offer signalled the complete failure of Somerset's Scottish policy that aimed to coerce the Scots into recognition of the treaties of Greenwich and provide for the union of the English and Scottish crowns. Rather, Somerset's 'rough wooing' had the opposite effect of reducing the Scots to such a state of desperation that they had no choice but to turn to their 'auld ally' for help. In doing so, they gave Henri the opportunity to pursue his own dynastic and imperial ambitions within the archipelago.

Whilst the decision to entrust Henri with the military security of Scotland and her queen may have come easily to the likes of Marie de Guise, whose dynasticism and daughter's personal safety were directly threatened by the occupying English forces, the Regent of Scotland needed persuading. As the Governor, second person of the realm and heir apparent to the Scottish throne on the failure of the Stewart line, Arran was extremely reluctant to support any alliance that would thwart his own dynastic ambitions and undermine his political position in Scotland. Initially, he had been intent on resolving the conflict with Somerset in order that Mary might then marry his own son and heir, James.[2] The proposal that she become an absentee monarch affianced to

---

[1] *CSP Scot.*, I, 81, 86, 92, pp. 38, 40, 42-3; *TA*, IX, pp. 127, 15, 4; Lesley, *History*, pp. 203-4. See also Ninian Cockburn's report in *CSP Scot.*, I, 73, pp. 34-5, for a similar discussion.

[2] *CSP Scot.*, I, 218, p.107; R.K. Hannay, 'The Earl of Arran and Queen Mary', *SHR*, xviii (1921), p.260.

the Dauphin of France directly contravened his plans. Moreover, there was also the possibility that such an arrangement would undermine his position as regent, an office which had served him well in 'providing' for his kinsman and strengthening the power of the house of Hamilton through the nepotistic distribution of patronage and the forging of dynastic alliances.[1] The power and influence wielded by Arran made his support crucial for the success of the proposed alliance. His over-riding dynastic and personal ambition, however, rendered him an unreliable political ally whose backing would not be forthcoming unless he felt it was advantageous to provide it. Indeed, it took considerably more than 'a French gentleman with fair words' to acquire his support.[2]

During November 1547 Marie de Guise and d'Oisel entered into negotiations with Arran. The terms of his support, presented to Henri along with the other proposals from the Scots by d'Oisel, were eventually accepted and contracted in a formal agreement on 27 January 1547/8.[3] With so much to lose personally, the price of Arran's support was predictably high. It was agreed that he would retain his governorship until Mary Stewart reached her age of majority, which for a female sovereign was traditionally considered to be on completion of her twelfth year,[4] and was granted financial immunity for all expenses incurred during that time.[5] This provision, however,

---

[1] Hannay, 'The Earl of Arran', pp. 258-76 and 'Some Papal Bulls among the Hamilton Papers', *SHR*, xxii (1924), pp. 25-41; E. Finnie, 'The House of Hamilton: Patronage, Politics and the Church in the Reformation Period', *Innes Review*, xxxvi (1985), pp. 3-28; M. Mahoney, 'The Scottish Hierarchy, 1513-1565' in D. MacRoberts (ed.), *Essays on the Scottish Reformation, 1513-1625* (Glasgow, 1962), pp. 51-3; Merriman, 'Struggle for the Marriage', pp. 27-39; Donaldson, *All the Queen's Men*, pp. 15-7.

[2] *CSP Scot.*, I, 67, pp. 30-1.

[3] Donaldson, *James V-James VII*, p.78.

[4] As we shall see in Chapter III, Henri brought this into question and asked the Parlement of Paris to determine whether Mary, Queen of Scots' reached her age of majority during or upon completion of her twelfth year. Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 261-6 and *Relations*, I, pp. 274-8.

[5] *Balcarres Papers*, II, xxxvii, pp. 52-3.

left open the question of Scotland's government during Mary Stewart's majority. As she was destined to be an absent monarch residing in her future husband's kingdom, this question assumed great significance, especially, as it would turn out, for Marie de Guise. Arran's support was also secured by the offer an annual pension of 12,000 *livres* and the promise of a French duchy.[1] This promise was fulfilled on 17 June 1549, when Arran officially became the Duc de Châtelherault and was invested in the Order of St. Michael.[2] Finally, in an agreement that was concluded on 28 April 1548, Arran was offered the Duc de Montpensier's eldest daughter as a bride for his son, James, presumably to compensate for the latter's apparent loss of Mary, Queen of Scots.[3] With offers and assurances such as these, Henri not only received Arran's backing for the proposed Franco-Scottish alliance, but also his son, James, who was sent to France as a hostage to ensure the Regent's continued and loyal support.[4] Arran's endorsement of the alliance and public declaration of support at a convention of the Scottish nobility at Stirling in February 1547/8 proved to be effective. On 7 July 1548, the treaty of Haddington was ratified by the Three Estates who, as Marie de Guise wrote, were content 'pour mettre toutes choses entre les mains du Roy'.[5]

---

[1] *CSP Scot.*, I, 73, p.34; E. Bonner, 'French Naturalization of the Scots in the Fifteenth and Sixteenth Centuries', *The Historical Journal*, xl/4 (1997), Appendix No.5, pp. 1109-11. See also 'Double de la charge, Instruction et memoire pour le Controlleur Astier concernant les affaires d'Escosse' contained in AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, f.663, for additional references to Arran's French pension.

[2] *APS*, II, pp. 508-10; Merriman, 'Struggle for the Marriage', p.266.

[3] This marriage never materialised as Mlle. de Montpensier was promised to another. *Balcarres Papers*, II, cli, clxiii, clxviii, pp. 197-8, 245-8, 256-8.

[4] *Ibid*, I, clix-xi, pp. 205-7; *TA*, IX, p.83; *CSP Scot.*, I, 238, pp. 116-7. See also J. Durkan, 'James, Third Earl of Arran: The Hidden Years', *SHR* lxv (1986), pp. 154-66, for a discussion on James' life in France.

[5] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.680 and *Relations*, I, p.179.

At its most basic level, the treaty of Haddington was contracted as an immediate response to 'the mortall weiris crudelties depredatiounis and intollerabill iniuris done be our auld enimeis of Ingland aganis our Souerane Lady [Mary, Queen of Scots] ... hir realme and lieges'.[1] Using the 'auld alliance' as a historical precedent to justify French intervention against England, Henri II pledged to 'reccouer all strenthis Castellis and Fortalices' out of English hands and restore Scotland 'to the auld libertie priuilegeand freedome'.[2] Although the treaty was an expression of Henri's regard for the 'ancient lig confederatioun and amitie standard betuix the Realme of France' and Scotland, his offer to assume responsibility for its military security was not a selfless gesture of goodwill in the name of the 'auld alliance'.[3] In return for French succour, the Scottish political élite had consented to the betrothal of Mary Stewart to François Valois, which was intended to provide for the 'mair perfyte vnion' of Scotland and France.[4] More importantly, this dynastic alliance was also the basis for Henri's vision of a Franco-British empire. The strength of this dynastic and, quite possibly, imperial alliance was further enhanced by the simple fact that, as a direct result of the treaty, Henri not only took the kingdom of Scotland into his personal protection, but also its young queen.

The declared intention of Somerset's invasion, that Mary Stewart 'be suitably nourished and brought up with her husband, as a Queen of England', placed the personal safety of the young queen in jeopardy.[5] The Scots responded by taking precautionary

---

[1] *APS*, II, p.481.

[2] Bonner, 'Scotland's 'Auld Alliance' with France, 1295-1560', *SHR*, lxxxiv/273 (1999), pp. 5-30; *APS*, II, p.481.

[3] *Ibid*, II, p.481.

[4] *Ibid*, II, p.481.

[5] *CSP Scot.*, I, 50, p.22.

measures to deprive Somerset of his prize. Mary was taken into the protective custody of her guardians, Lords Erskine and Livingstone, and was sheltered first at Stirling Castle, then at a secluded priory on the island of Inchmahome in the Lake of Menteith and, finally at Dumbarton Castle in February 1547/8.[1] The devastation caused by the occupying English troops, however, brutally demonstrated the extent to which Somerset was determined to fulfil his dynastic objective. It soon became apparent that Mary, Queen of Scots' safety could not be guaranteed in her own kingdom. To provide for her safety, therefore, it was decided that she would leave Scotland to reside in France where she would remain in the personal protection of the French King until her marriage to the Dauphin.[2] Within weeks of the treaty of Haddington's ratification, Mary embarked for France[3] on the galleys that had arrived at Leith on 16 June 1548, with the military reinforcements that Henri had, for so long, promised to Marie de Guise.[4] Despite Somerset's best efforts, Mary was to 'be suitably nourished and brought up with her husband', not as a Queen of England, but as a Queen of France.

***

The treaty of Haddington's significance is most commonly identified as its betrothal of Mary Stewart to François Valois and, on a more immediate and practical level, its

---

[1] Mary would remain at Dumbarton Castle, which was placed at the disposal of Marie de Guise, until her conveyance to France. Arran retained control of Edinburgh Castle, whilst Henri was entrusted with Dunbar. *CSP Scot.*, I, 147, p.71.

[2] *APS*, II, p.481.

[3] Lesley, *History*, p.200; *CSP Scot.*, I, 270, 274, 290, 306, 310, pp. 134, 136, 147, 154-5, 157; *APS*, II, p.543; *TA*, IX, pp. 107, 122, 177, 207, 209; *Balcarres Papers*, I, cliv, clv, pp. 200-2. See also W.M. Bryce 'Mary Stuart's Voyage to France in 1548', *EHR*, xxii (1907), pp. 43-50, for a detailed account of the voyage itself.

[4] See 'Letters from Henry II King of France to His Cousin Mary Queen Dowager of Scotland', *Maitland Misc.*, I, 4-7, pp. 214-8 and *Balcarres Papers*, I, cxlv, cxlvi, cxlix, clii, cliv, lxxii, lxiii, pp. 188-90, 195-6, 198-9, 242 for similar assurances of French aid and details of the planned intervention.

furnishing of men, money and munitions to the Scots. But the treaty of Haddington is also significant in that it established a protectoral relationship between the 'auld allies'. The Three Estates' acceptance of Henri's offer to defend Scotland against England 'and all vthers in libertie and fredome', now and 'at all necessar tymes to cum', and to 'keip maintain and defend this Realme liegis of the samin liberteis and Lawis thereof', effectively made Henri the 'Protector' of Scotland – and Scotland, a protectorate of France.[1] In this context, the terms 'protector' and 'protectorate' are used not so much in the sense implied by Somerset's title of Lord Protector of England, but more in the modern sense of a less powerful state or territory being protected and largely controlled by a more powerful one. While Henri did not formally assume the title of 'protector' in relation to Scotland, his extensive use of the language of 'protection' in his correspondence, for example, clearly conveyed his perceived role in the Franco-Scottish alliance. This exceedingly important, yet largely overlooked, aspect of the treaty justified and facilitated the immediate establishment of French power in Scotland well before the Franco-Scottish union of the crowns in 1558.[2] Given that the treaty of Haddington was significantly more than a betrothal contract for Mary Stewart, its failure to contain specific provisions stipulating how Scotland's ancient laws and liberties were to be safeguarded in this newly created protectoral alliance and absentee monarchy is all the more striking, especially when compared to the treaties of Birgham and Greenwich, and ultimately serves to demonstrate the problems exclusively associated with queenship.

---

[1] *APS*, II, p.481.

[2] The establishment of French power in Scotland, most notably between the years 1550 and 1552, is the subject of Chapter II.

The question of marriage for any female sovereign was inevitably a source of controversy and contention. The opinions expressed by some political and religious figures such as John Knox are, of course, well known. In 1558, with reference to female sovereignty in general and Mary Tudor in particular, he asserted that 'to promote a woman to beare rule, superioritie, dominion, or empire above any Realme, Nation, or Citie, is repugnant to Nature; comtumelie to God, a thing most contrarious to his reveled will and approved ordinance; and finallie, it is the subversion of good Order, of all equitiie and justice'.[1] Yet the right of queenship was an accepted and established tradition in Scotland.[2] What was controversial was the choice of husband and the possible repercussions thereof. To what extent would marriage affect the authority of a female sovereign given that her husband would be, as Constance Jordan argues, her social and political superior?[3] And in reference to Mary, Queen of Scots, how would the cultural and institutional independence of Scotland be affected by a matrimonial union of crowns with France? Would such a union, for example, be nominal in nature, would the two kingdoms be integrated, and if so, to what degree, or would Scotland be reduced to a satellite state under the dominion of her consort, and more than likely, king?[4] Unlike the treaties of Birgham and Greenwich, the treaty of Haddington made no

---

[1] J. Knox, *The First Blast of the Trumpet Against the Monstrous Regiment of Women*, in Knox, *Works*, IV, p.373 and Mason, *Knox: On Rebellion*, p.8.

[2] N.H. Reid 'Margaret, 'Maid of Norway' and Scottish Queenship', *Reading Medieval Studies*, iii (1982), pp. 75-96. For more on the rights of queenship see Dawson, 'The Two John Knoxes, England, Scotland and the 1558 Tracts', *Journal of Ecclesiastical History*, xlii/4 (1991), pp. 555-76; R.L. Greaves, 'The Gynaecocracy Controversy', in his *Theology and Revolution in the Scottish Reformation: Studies in the Thought of John Knox* (Grand Rapids, Michigan, 1980), pp. 157-68; C. Jordan, 'Woman's Rule in Sixteenth-Century British Political Thought', *Renaissance Quarterly*, xl (1987), pp. 421-51; P.L. Scaligni, 'The sceptre and the distaff: the question of female sovereignty, 1516-1607', *The Historian*, xli (1978), pp. 59-75; and A. Shephard, *Gender and Authority in Sixteenth-Century England*, (Keele, 1994).

[3] Jordan, 'Woman's Rule', p.426.

[4] See M. Greengrass (ed.), *Conquest and Coalescence: The Shaping of the State in Early Modern Europe* (London, 1991), pp. 1-24, for a general discussion of these questions, and J.H. Elliot's 'The Spanish

attempt to address these questions specifically, but rather contained one general clause guaranteeing Scottish laws and liberties – a clause whose generality left room for interpretation.

Both the treaties of Birgham and Greenwich are characterised by their numerous provisions designed, in theory, to safeguard the authority of a Scottish queen regnant and the independence of her kingdom in a matrimonial union of the crowns with England.[1] These provisions are noticeably absent from the treaty of Haddington. Admittedly, Henri pledged to observe and keep 'this Realme and liegis thairof in the samin fredome liberteis and Lawis as bene in all kingis of Scotlandis tymes bypast'.[2] But no other details were given as to how Scotland's independence was to be maintained after the union of the crowns, or in the interim as a protectorate state of France. The treaties of Birgham and Greenwich, by contrast, specify exactly how Scotland was to retain its political, legal, financial and ecclesiastical autonomy. Scotland, for example, was to retain its own name, laws and government; all matters of state were to be dealt with in a Scottish parliament; and no Scottish subject was to be answerable to an English court of law for crimes committed in Scotland. Moreover, in the event of her husband's death without issue, Scotland's queen regnant was to return to her native kingdom freely and without impediment. If the marriage did produce offspring, all heirs were to succeed to a united Scotland and England. In comparison to the treaties of Birgham and Greenwich, the treaty of Haddington is noticeably reticent in

---

Monarchy and the Kingdom of Portugal, 1580-1640', *ibid*, pp. 48-67; C. Desplot, 'Louis XIII and the Union of Bearn to France', *ibid*, pp. 68-83; and H.H. Rowen, *The King's State: Proprietary Dynasticism in Early Modern France* (New Brunswick, 1985), for more specific case studies.

[1] Stevenson, *Documents*, I, cviii, pp. 162-73; *Foedera*, XIV, pp. 786-96. See also *APS*, II, pp. 411-3, for the instructions issued to the Scottish negotiating commissioners for the treaties of Greenwich.

[2] *Ibid*, II, p.481.

these subject areas and neglects to address the problems that arise with the question of marriage in a gynaecocracy.[1]

The vulnerable situation in which Scotland found itself in 1547 may offer some explanation as to why this was so. Scotland's desperation was France's opportunity. The Scots were in no position to dictate the terms of the treaty as their need for financial and military aid against England was too great. Ironically, the only thing the Scots could offer was the hand of their queen in marriage. The physical threat that the occupying English troops posed to national security and the person of Mary Stewart also explains why the Scottish political élite consented to send their queen to France, where she was to be raised during her minority until the time of her marriage. Again, the treaty of Haddington's lack of detail regarding such an unusual and intimate arrangement is striking when compared to the treaty of Greenwich. The Scots were adamant in their negotiations with the English that Mary stay in Scotland and in the care of her mother and four Scottish lords until she reached what they considered to be her perfect age of 10 years.[2] Contrary to the wishes of Henry VIII, who wanted Mary 'deliuirit to him or In Ingland to be kepit quhill the completing of the said mariage,'[3] the Scottish political community were adamant in their belief that Scotland's ancient liberties and freedoms were best safeguarded by keeping the queen's person in Scotland until she reached her age of majority. This fact alone makes Mary, Queen of Scots' conveyance to France, on the strength of a betrothal contract alone, extraordinary and all

[1] As we shall see in Chapter VII, similar provisions were contained in Mary Stewart's 'public' marriage contract of 19 April 1558, but by this time, the Scottish Queen had been residing in France as an absentee monarch for close to ten years.

[2] *APS*, II, p.412.

[3] *Ibid*, II, p.412.

the more significant. France's possession of Scotland's queen regnant not only improved the chances of the marriage actually occurring, but also tied Scotland irrevocably to the interests of France. In addition to his protection of Scotland as a whole, this readily provided Henri with access to, and influence in, a strategically placed kingdom that served as the back-door to England, where French power could be established and Franco-centric policies implemented to his advantage. But before he could fully exploit his advantageous position in Scotland, Henri's immediate responsibility in 1548 was the expulsion of the English occupying troops.

***

French military intervention began in earnest on 16 June 1548 with the arrival of a French fleet at Leith carrying 6,000 French and foreign troops and munitions.[1] The military objective, as stated in the treaty of Haddington, was to recover all the strongholds in English possession and restore Scotland to 'the auld libertie priuilege and fredome'.[2] It is of interest to note as testimony to the dynastic importance of Mary Stewart that, although aid had arrived in mid-June, the French refused to engage in combat and besiege Haddington until the marriage treaty had been successfully contracted.[3] Central to the French military campaign was the strengthening of existing Scottish strongholds and the construction of new ones, in an attempt to counter the effects of Somerset's own fort-building policy.[4] As promised, Dunbar passed into

[1] Merriman's 'Struggle for the Marriage' is the best account of France's military intervention in Scotland. Once again, it is not the purpose of this chapter to repeat Merriman by delving into the logistics of the military campaign, but rather to outline briefly what happened and highlight a few points that are of particular significance to Franco-Scottish relations during the 1550s. See also Merriman, 'The Forts of Eyemouth', pp. 142-55; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 185-204 and *Relations*, I, pp. 159-236.

[2] *APS*, II, p.481.

[3] *CSP Scot.*, I, 281, 283, 284, pp. 139-40; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.189 and *Relations*, I, p.221.

[4] Merriman, 'Struggle for the Marriage', p.303.

French hands,[1] and work immediately began to fortify the castle under the direction of Migliorino Ubaldini, despite financial difficulties.[2] The French also set about fortifying and modernising existing strongholds at Leith, Millhaven, Inchgarvie and the castles at Blackness and Stirling, and constructing new ones at Inveresk, Inchkeith and Luffness.[3] This policy of fort modernisation and construction did not end with the cessation of hostilities with England, but continued throughout the 1550s and became a defining characteristic of the establishment of French power in Scotland.[4] By assuming responsibility for Scotland's military security, Henri was able to establish a military foothold in a strategically placed kingdom ostensibly for the purpose of defence. But this also provided him with an ideal opportunity to engage in offensive military campaigns against the English. As Henri was simultaneously trying to recapture Boulogne from the English, his military position in Scotland was effective in diverting English attention from the Continent and depleting resources that otherwise would have been used to fortify and victual the English held strongholds at Boulogne and Calais.

The main target in Scotland, however, was the principal English stronghold at Haddington. Through the strengthening and construction of their own strongholds in Scotland, France's military objective was to over-extend and financially exhaust the

---

[1] 5 February 1547/8, *CSP Scot.*, I, 147, p.71.

[2] Dunbar was handed over to the French captain and treasurer of the troops in Scotland, M. de Chapelle, on 18 June 1548. NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.3, f.144 and MSS, 2991, f.71; *TA.*, IX, p.445; *CSP Scot.*, I, 147, 228, 257, 265, pp. 71, 111, 125, 131; *CSP Spain*, IX, p.246. In his letter to Marie de Guise from Dunbar on 3 September 1548, Ubaldini reported that the fortification of the castle began on the first day of his arrival, but due to the difficulty in finding sufficient labour, he was unable to commence the fortification of the town itself.

[3] Merriman, 'Struggle for the Marriage', pp. 305, 312 and 'The Forts of Eyemouth', pp. 151-2; Colvin, *King's Works*, IV, p.609 *n.*4.

[4] As we shall see in Chapters II, IV, V, VII and VIII, between 1548 and 1559, improvements were made at Stirling, Blackness, Edinburgh and Dunbar, while new fortresses were erected at Leith, Inchkeith and Langholm. Merriman, 'The Forts of Eyemouth', pp. 51-2.

English in order to 'isolate the important garrisons and reduce them by either siege or starvation'.[1] Initially, this proved to be a more difficult task than anticipated. Somerset's strategically placed network of English fortresses enabled strongholds, like Haddington, to be revictualled without hindrance.[2] But in 1549, the delivery of provisions *was* hindered and England's position in Scotland irreparably weakened. Ironically, this had nothing to do with France's military intervention, but was rather due to a series of domestic crises in England. Troops and victuals destined for Scotland were retained in England in order to deal with the various uprisings that constituted the 'western rebellion' of 1549. It was because of England's weakened position on a national and international level that Henri felt that the time was ripe to refocus his attention on the Continent and intensify his efforts to recapture Boulogne. On 8 August 1549, France officially declared war on England. The combined effects of internal dissension and France's assault on two fronts proved too much for the English. Haddington was abandoned in September 1549 and, in October, Somerset was removed from the Protectorate. Somerset's successor, John Dudley, earl of Warwick and future duke of Northumberland, inherited a financially exhausted and weak administration.[3] Eager to consolidate his position and re-establish order, Warwick moved to end England's conflict with France at Boulogne and in Scotland.[4]

---

[1] Merriman, 'Struggle for the Marriage', pp. 304-5. This was also Somerset's strategy against the French.

[2] *Ibid*, p.310.

[3] For more on Dudley see D. Loades, *John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland, 1504-1553* (Oxford, 1996) and B.L. Beer, *Northumberland: The Political Career of John Dudley, Earl of Warwick and Duke of Northumberland* (Kent, Ohio, 1973).

[4] *CSP Spain*, X, pp. 47, 92-3.

On 18 February 1549/50, therefore, negotiations for an Anglo-French peace accord began and culminated in the treaty of Boulogne (24 March 1549/50) – a treaty in which Scotland was comprehended as an ally of France.[1] As the 'Protector' of Scotland, Henri assumed control over Scottish diplomacy and all matters pertaining to Scotland were represented by the French commissioners at the peace talks. The English still held the strongholds at Roxburgh, Eyemouth, Dunglass, Lauder and Broughty, and while this was the subject of great debate, the treaty of Boulogne was fundamentally an Anglo-French accord. As such, it was not expected to settle all differences between England and Scotland. The major issue was Boulogne and the terms under which it would revert to French possession. Indirectly, however, it did provide for the cessation of Scotland's hostilities with England and pave the way for an exclusively Anglo-Scottish treaty which was eventually contracted at Norham in June 1551. But it was France's representation of Scotland during the negotiations of the treaty of Boulogne that marked the beginning of Henri II's control over Scottish diplomacy - another defining feature of the establishment of French power in Scotland prior to the union of the crowns.

The treaty of Haddington's significance, therefore, is multi-faceted. On an immediate and practical level, it provided the Scots with French financial and military assistance and a safe haven for their queen, both of which prevented Somerset from conquering Scotland and capturing Mary, Queen of Scots as a bride for Edward VI. Dynastically, the treaty provided for the union of the French and Scottish crowns and, on account of Mary's Catholic claim to the English throne, also laid the foundations for a Franco-British empire. Finally, the treaty of Haddington established a permanent

[1]*Foedera*, XV, pp. 212-5.

protectoral relationship between France and Scotland that enabled Henri to assume control over Scottish foreign policy and diplomacy while maintaining a military presence in Scotland after the cessation of hostilities with England. It would also be responsible for Marie de Guise's future political career in Scotland as Queen Regent. With the removal of the English threat, however, the question remained as to whether the Scots would remain favourable to such an intimate Franco-Scottish alliance that involved the marriage of their absent queen regnant and gave the French King an extraordinary amount of power over their affairs and kingdom. As we shall see, it would appear that the Scots had no such qualms.

CHAPTER II

Henri II's Protectorate of Scotland and the Establishment of French Power (1550-1552)

The establishment of French power in Scotland came as a direct result of the treaty of Haddington and the protectoral relationship it established between the 'auld allies'. Henri II's military intervention in Scotland was not intended to be a short-term arrangement that would end with the cessation of hostilities with England. Rather, he was commissioned by the Three Estates in Parliament to defend Scotland against England and all others, in liberty and freedom 'at all necessar tymes to cum'.[1] Essentially, Scotland became a protectorate of France and, as its 'Protector', Henri was able to assume control over Scotland's military security, diplomatic affairs and foreign policy. While the betrothal of Mary Stewart to François Valois was an important aspect of the treaty of Haddington, the structure and wording of the accord clearly indicates that it was the protectoral relationship that the proposed Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance was designed to secure in perpetuity.[2]

This is not to say, however, that Henri's protectorate of Scotland superseded the proposed dynastic alliance in importance. On the contrary, Mary Stewart's dynasticism and betrothal were central to Henri's vision of a Franco-British empire and he considered his protection of Mary to be synonymous with his protection of her kingdom

[1] *APS*, II, p.481.

[2] 'Thairfoir hauand consideratioun of the premissis and how that the said maist Christin King hes set his haill hart and minde for defence of this Realme desyrit in his said maisters name for the mair perfyte vnion and indissolubill band of perpetuall amitie lig and confederatioun The mariage of our Souerane Lady to the effect that the said maist Christin Kingis eldest sone and Dolphin of France may be coniunit in matrimonie with grace'. *Ibid*, II, p.481.

and *vice versa*. Writing to inform the Estates of Scotland that the young Queen, 'ma fille', had arrived safely in France and was with 'le Dauphin son Mary', Henri declared that 'par consequence, son Royaume, ses affaires & Sujets estre auec nostre vne mesme choses, sans en faire iamais separation'.[1] Indeed, the Estates' consent to the proposed marital alliance and the solemnity of the ceremony in which it was given, was also used to demonstrate how the Scots already recognised the Dauphin as the King of Scotland.[2] Dynastic arguments such as these were fortified by the residency of Scotland's queen regnant in France. Both the Queen Dowager's brother, François, duc de Guise, and the Constable of France, Anne de Montmorency, for example, wrote of the French King's desire not to differentiate between his own kingdom and that of Scotland as he regarded 'la petite Roine sa fille comme la siene propre'.[3] Because Mary Stewart was in his protection and affianced to his son and heir, Henri considered it his duty and personal obligation to protect and defend her kingdom as he would his own, for now there was no difference between the two.[4] During the period 1550-1552, however, it was Henri's protection of the *actual* kingdom of Scotland that emerged as the principal reason behind the establishment of French power in Scotland. His contention that Scotland,

---

[1] 30 July 1548, M. Belot (ed.), *Lettres et mémoires d'estat des roys, princes, ambassadeurs et autres ministres sous les regnes de François I^er^, Henri II et François II par G. Ribier* (Paris, 1666), II, pp. 150-1.

[2] Henri wrote to his ambassador resident in England, Odet de Selve, that 'le contract de mariage d'entre ... passe solennellement en Escosse, auant le partement de ladite Reyne, & l'inuestiture & possession des Royaumes, Sceptre & Couronne, baillee & delaissee en la presence, & du consentment des Estats du pays, à mes deputez au profit de mondit Fils, lequel a este en ce faisant reconnu pour Roy d'Escosse'. *Ibid*, II, p.152. The Imperial ambassador, St. Mauris, also reported that Henri had declared that the 'Parliament of Scotland had agreed to the marriage of the Queen of Scots to his son, and for that reason he had already taken possession of the kingdom, which he intended to keep and govern as his own kingdom'. *CSP Spain*, IX, pp. 336-7.

[3] NLS, MSS.2991, fos. 14^v^-5^r^, 9^v^-10^r^; *Fourquevaux Mission*, pp. 12, 9. They also wrote of how 'le Roy a acueur le bien des affaires d'Escosse qui sont les siens propres'.

[4] On 30 July 1548, Henri wrote to de Selve that, 'la protection, & conseruation dudict Royaume d'Ecosse, comme du mien propre, n'estant a present tous deux qu'vne mesme chose l'vn auec l'autre'. Ribier, *Lettres et mémoires*, II, p.152.

'comme *Royaume* qui est a ma protection et que j'estime comme mien', was used to justify this process and, more importantly, was accepted on a national and international level.[1]

As the 'Protector' of Scotland, therefore, Henri was not only able to justify his intervention in Scotland in 1548, but also maintain a legitimate military position within the archipelago after the cessation of hostilities in 1550, assume control over Scotland's diplomatic affairs and, by implication, her foreign policy. These defining characteristics of French power,[2] and the 'protectoral' arguments used to justify its establishment, are effectively demonstrated in three areas which are dealt with in this chapter: the negotiations over, and Scotland's comprehension within, the terms of the treaty of Boulogne; the *rapprochement* between the Scots and Charles V; and the extensive involvement of France in Anglo-Scottish relations, particularly during the negotiations that culminated in the treaty of Norham.

***

Dynastic and imperial considerations unquestionably motivated Henri II to intervene in Scotland in 1548. But these considerations were only potential returns on his military and financial investment that ultimately depended on the marriage of Mary Stewart to François Valois. To suggest that Henri was motivated by dynastic and imperial

[1] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, VIII, f.103^{v}; D.L. Potter (ed.), 'Documents concerning the negotiation of the Anglo-French treaty of March 1550', *Camden Miscellany*, xxviii/29 (1984), 47, p.134.

[2] Another feature was the introduction and circulation of French currency in Scotland. This, however, seems to have been a less popular aspect of the establishment of French power owing to the refusal of some Scots to accept French coins as legal tender. Having been examined by the auditors of the Exchequer in July 1550 and authorised as legal currency on 7 August, increasingly harsh penalties were prescribed by the Privy Council for those who refused to accept French coins - including escheat and death. In the end, the obstinacy of the Scots prevailed and the Privy Council was forced to issue a prohibition on the importation of certain French coins on 16 November 1551. *RPC*, I, pp. 104-5, 106, 108-9, 109-11.

ambitions *alone* is a narrow interpretation of events - especially since it was a very real possibility that these prospects would *not* materialise. The incentive for Henri's intervention in Scotland must be seen in the wider European context as part of his territorial quest to recover Boulogne, neutralise England, and redress the balance of power that was then in Charles V's favour.

Captured by Henry VIII in 1544, the 'loss of Boulogne had dominated French policy towards England in the last years of François I and the first of Henri II'.[1] Henry VIII's determination to hold on to Boulogne prompted François I to launch an attack on the Isle of Wight and Seaford in July 1545 in the hope of forcibly weakening the English King's resolve. Stalemate rather than surrender led to negotiations for an Anglo-French peace, and the resulting treaty of Ardres (7 June 1546) provided for the return of Boulogne in 1554, but only upon receipt of two million crowns. Less than satisfactory from a French perspective, it comes as no surprise that the reconquest of Boulogne continued to be a military objective upon the accession of Henri II in 1547. The traditional Habsburg-Valois rivalry, however, constrained Henri from taking any overt military action against the English for fear of recriminations by Charles V. But the Scots' timely appeal for French aid and the ensuing treaty of Haddington presented Henri with the ideal opportunity to confront England directly and legitimately as the 'Protector' of Scotland. French military intervention in Scotland would not only serve to divert English attention from the Continent and deplete resources that otherwise would have been used to maintain and fortify Boulogne, but also provided Henri with

[1] Potter, 'The Treaty of Boulogne and European Diplomacy, 1549-50', *Bulletin of the Institute of Historical Research*, lv (1982), pp. 50-1.

the opportunity to cash in on the long-term dynastic and imperial rewards that an alliance with Scotland had to offer.

By July 1549, it was clear that Charles V was not prepared to assist the English in their defence of Boulogne.[1] The door had effectively been left open for Henri to declare war against England in August and commence his military campaign. Despite having taken many of the forts surrounding Boulogne, such as Ambleteuse, Henri's military campaign to take Boulogne itself had ultimately failed.[2] French forces were impeded by adverse weather conditions and what D.L. Potter describes as, 'a certain improvisation in the late planning of the campaign'.[3] For England, a series of domestic crises culminating in the collapse of Somerset's protectorate in October 1549, and the debilitating effects of a confrontation with France on two fronts, made the overtures for peace as welcome to the war weary and financially exhausted English as they were to the French.[4] Just six months after war had been declared, therefore, negotiations for an Anglo-French peace accord began in earnest on 18 February 1549/50.[5]

Although the treaty of Boulogne was fundamentally concerned to engineer a *rapprochement* between England and France, Scotland nevertheless figured prominently in the negotiations and was represented by Henri and his negotiating commissioners:

---

[1] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 160, p.36; Potter, 'Treaty of Boulogne', p.51. Paget was despatched to the Imperial Court at Brussels in order to ask for assistance against the French in June 1549. See also Charles' letter to Van der Delft on 26 July 1549 in *CSP Spain*, IX, pp. 411-2.

[2] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 196, p.46. See also, for example, W.K. Jordan (ed.), *The Chronicle and Political Papers of King Edward VI* (London, 1966), p.13; Cloulas, *Henri II*, pp. 268-9; Baumgartner, *Henry II*, pp. 141-3.

[3] Potter, 'Documents', p.59.

[4] Between 1545 and 1550, England's war expenses totaled £3,491,472, approximately £603,900 of which was for their military campaign in Scotland alone. BL, Harley MSS, 353.28, fos. 90-102; PRO, SP10/15/11; Merriman, 'Struggle for the Marriage', p.323.

[5] Potter, 'Treaty of Boulogne', pp. 51-65 and 'Documents', pp. 58-180.

Francois de Montmorency, Seigneur de Rochepot, Gaspard de Coligny, Seigneur de Chatillon, Andre Guillart, Seigneur du Mortier, and Guillaume Bochetel, Seigneur de Sassy.[1] The French King's primary aim was to settle the financial terms under which the English would relinquish Boulogne. By 2 March 1549/50, he was 'merveilleusement aise' that his offer of 400,000 *ecus d'or soleil* and the reservation of England's pension rights were considered reasonable by the English.[2] In order to consolidate the resumption of friendly relations with England and at the strong urging of Antonio Guidotti,[3] mediator of the negotiations, Henri also proposed the marriage of his eldest daughter, Elisabeth, to Edward VI.[4] Seen by the French commissioners as 'le plus grand et honnorable qui soit en nostre instruction', the acceptance of this proposal would bring to an end England's persistent, albeit futile, demand for the recognition of the treaties of Greenwich and facilitate the promotion of French interests at the English Court.[5] On a more immediate and practical level, *rapprochement* with England, with or without a dynastic alliance, would ensure England's neutrality in the seemingly inevitable renewal of the Habsburg-Valois conflict for European supremacy. In this respect, the Franco-Scottish alliance of 1548 and the subsequent establishment of French military power in Scotland placed Henri in a strong position within the archipelago to enforce England's neutrality or, if need be, to check English involvement

---

[1] Potter, 'Documents', 1, pp. 74-5.

[2] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, VIII, f.101^{r}; Potter, 'Documents', 47, p.129.

[3] A Florentine merchant, Antonio Guidotti was a naturalised Englishman with influential contacts at the French court. *Ibid*, p.85 *n.*1 and 'Treaty of Boulogne', pp. 57-8.

[4] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, II, f.287^{v} and VIII, f.107; Potter, 'Documents', 2, 27, pp. 81, 103. For more on the Tudor-Valois marriage negotiations see *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 347, 351, 387, 411, pp. 107-8, 109, 133, 150; BL, Harley MSS, 353.33, fos. 110-1 and 353.34, fos. 112-3.

[5] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.* Angleterre, VIII, f.107; Potter, 'Documents', 27, p.103.

and/or ambitions on the Continent. But as long as England had a military foothold in Scotland, France's strategic position was undermined and Scotland's national security threatened. Henri's secondary objective during the negotiations, therefore, was the relinquishment of all strongholds held by the English in Scotland.

England's military position in Scotland was a very contentious issue during the negotiations, but could not be, and was not, effectively dealt with in the treaty of Boulogne itself. This was primarily due to the fact that it brought into question specific Anglo-Scottish boundary disputes. The contentious issue at hand was the fate of the English strongholds located at Roxburgh, Eyemouth, Broughty, Lauder and Dunglass. Henri's position on the matter was clear and unwavering from the outset: all those places and fortifications that had been conquered and occupied by the English since Henry VIII's invasion were to be relinquished and returned to the Scots.[1] The English commissioners, conversely, were explicitly instructed to hold on to all English strongholds in Scotland and, only as a last resort, to surrender the lesser forts at Lauder, Dunglass and Broughty.[2] By late February, the English had done just that,[3] but they were determined to reserve the English King's title to Scotland and retain Roxburgh and Eyemouth, claiming that they constituted 'leurs anciennes limites et frontieres'.[4] This

[1] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.* Angleterre, II, f. 287[r]; Potter, 'Documents', 2, p.80.

[2] BL, Cotton MSS, Caligula E.iv, fos. 285[r], 278[r], Harley MSS, 36.12, fos. 54-5, 55-6 and Lansdowne MSS, 2.33, fos. 81-3; Potter, 'Documents', p.129 *n*.2.

[3] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.* Angleterre, VIII, f.101[r]; Potter, 'Documents', 47, p.129. Henri wrote to his commissioners that, 'vous ont accorde de me rendre Boulogne et tous les fortz Escosse, scavoir est: Donglas, Bourtierac et Ladres, retenans a eulx Roxbourg et Aymond [Eyemouth]'.

[4] BL, Harley MSS, 36.11, fos. 52-3 and Cotton MSS, Caligula E.iv, f.282[r]; Potter, 'Documents', p.138 *n*.1.

proved to be as unacceptable to Henri as it was to Marie de Guise, who wrote of the 'grand mal que ce ne seroit s'il leur demeroit un seul fort dans ce royaume'.[1]

In response to these claims, Henri was quick to establish and assert his position as 'Protector' of Scotland. Because Scotland was in his protection and, therefore, a kingdom of his own, 'il ne seroit raisonnable que je leur laissasse riens de ce qu'ilz ont prins depuis les dernieres guerres'.[2] As Eyemouth and Roxburgh had been taken since the last war, Henri flatly rejected the claims that they constituted England's ancient borders and similarly declined the offer of Broughty on the grounds that there was nothing there but the worst ensigns even the English did not want.[3] For these reasons, Henri could not accept England's terms and ordered his commissioners back to the negotiating table to demand the return of Eyemouth and Roxburgh and, while they were at it, to try for a reduction in the price of Boulogne.[4] The English, however, were equally determined to retain Roxburgh and Eyemouth, even to the point of temporarily suspending the negotiations, as their position in Scotland was the only leverage they had against the French.[5] Consequently, Scotland was reduced to nothing more than a bargaining tool with which both sides haggled over the price of Boulogne, leaving the fate of Scotland's strongholds still to be determined when peace between England and France was finally contracted on 24 March 1549/50.[6] In order to address this question

---

[1] Marie de Guise to François, duc de Guise, 26 February 1550, J.-P. Micharde et J.-P.-P. Poujolat (eds)., *Mémoires-Journaux de François de Lorraine, duc d'Aumale et de Guise, 1547 à 1563* (Paris, 1854), p.8.

[2] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, VIII, f.102^{r}; Potter, 'Documents', 47, p.131.

[3] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, VIII, f.102^{r}; Potter, 'Documents', 47, pp. 131-2.

[4] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, VIII, fos. 103^{r}-4^{r}; Potter, 'Documents', 47, pp. 133-4.

[5] BL, Cotton MSS, Caligula E.iv, f.282^{r}; Potter, 'Documents', p.138 *n.*1.

[6] *Foedera*, XV, pp. 211-7; SRO, SP7/40.

and other issues pertaining to Scotland's military security and diplomatic affairs, Henri despatched Francois de Seguenville-Fumel, sieur de Thor, to Scotland.[1]

As the Scottish political community would soon hear from Fumel, the treaty of Boulogne provided for a less than conclusive and rather confusing settlement on the question of the English held fortifications in Scotland.[2] Much to the displeasure of Marie de Guise, England retained possession of Eyemouth and Roxburgh, in return for which they agreed to evacuate and surrender the lesser forts of Lauder and Dunglass.[3] England's retention of Eyemouth and Roxburgh, however, was conditional. If the Scots retook Lauder and Dunglass before the publication of the peace, or officially expressed a desire for their demolition, the English would not only have to comply, but would also be constrained to demolish Roxburgh and Eyemouth.[4] The fate of all four strongholds, therefore, needed to be determined by the Scots – but not before Henri took steps to ensure that their decision was in accordance with his own.[5]

At the time of Fumel's mission to Scotland, Henri had already made up his mind on the course of action that should be taken. In his opinion, all four forts should be demolished as Dunglass and Lauder could always be rebuilt to 'faire la une barriere aux angloys pour ne rentrer Jamais dedans ledit pays [Scotland]'.[6] In order to ensure that he got his own way, or at least a decision that was in accordance with the interests of

---

[1] M. Wood (ed.), 'Instructions to the French Ambassador, 30 March 1550', *SHR*, xxvi (1947), pp. 154-67.

[2] Fumel arrived in Scotland in mid-April and addressed the Privy Council on 22 April 1550. *TA*, IX, pp. 393, 397; *RPC*, I, p.86.

[3] Micharde et Poujolat, *Mémoires-Journaux*, pp. 8, 31.

[4] Wood, 'Instructions', p.160; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.* Angleterre, II, fos. 293^{v}-4^{r}, 366^{v}-7^{r}; Potter, 'Documents', 51, p.142.

[5] *Ibid*, 52, pp. 144-6.

[6] Wood, 'Instructions', pp. 160-1.

France, Henri instructed Fumel to discuss the matter with Marie de Guise, d'Oisel and Paul de Termes, lieutenant-general of the French forces in Scotland, before informing Châtelherault of the terms of the treaty and consulting him on the matter. If it was deemed appropriate that the Regent and his council should be consulted, *i.e.* if it was felt that they would reach a similar decision, only then was Fumel to discuss it with them following the advice of the Queen Dowager and her French advisers.[1] The same procedure also applied to Henri's inquiry as to the number of French troops that were needed in Scotland now that Anglo-Scottish hostilities had ceased.

Wanting to reduce his expenditure in this new reign of peace, Henri asked d'Oisel, de Termes and Marie de Guise to determine how many French garrisons were still required for the security of Scotland, and whether it was possible to withdraw the *lansquenets* (for service in Denmark) and light horse, while leaving the *gens d'armes*.[2] This clearly reveals Henri's intention to maintain his military position in Scotland. Surely, the most expedient way of reducing his expenditure would have been the complete withdrawal of all French troops. But it is the way in which Henri discreetly assumed control over Scotland's military affairs that is of greater significance. His insistence that matters of military security be discussed with Marie de Guise and her French advisers in advance of any discussion with Châtelherault demonstrates how the latter's position as Regent was being subtly undermined. Châtelherault was being consulted as a formality - the real decisions were being made by Henri and his French agents in Scotland. To all intents and purposes, though, it appeared as if Châtelherault

[1] Wood, 'Instructions', p.161.

[2] *Ibid*, p.165.

was making the decisions with respect to Scotland's military security. This was a shrewd piece of manipulation by Henri. Whilst reassuring Châtelherault of his position and authority as Regent, Henri was able simultaneously to exert his will in order to ensure that the interests of France were being served in Scotland.

In the end, it was deemed appropriate that Châtelherault be 'consulted' on these matters of national security and, on 22 April 1550, the Scottish Privy Council issued a formal reply to Henri.[1] With respect to the English held fortifications in Scotland, it was the opinion of Marie de Guise, Châtelherault and his Council, 'that the fortis of Lauder, Dunglas, Roxburgh, and Aymouth, be all cassin doun', finally putting an end to the matter.[2] After England's consent to surrender these strongholds had been received,[3] preparations were soon made for 'the essegeing of forttis within Scotland presentlie in the handis of oure auld inemeis of Ingland'.[4] With oxen, 'pikis, schulis and mattokis', the Scots descended on Lauder and Dunglass to cast down their walls and transfer their artillery and munition respectively to Home Castle and Dunbar.[5] Even though their demolition had been completed by July 1550, the English nominally retained Eyemouth and Roxburgh until all the boundary disputes were settled in the treaty of Norham (June 1551).[6]

---

[1] *RPC*, I, pp. 86-93.

[2] *Ibid*, I, p.90.

[3] *APC*, II, p.429.

[4] *TA*, IX, p.396.

[5] *Ibid*, IX, pp. 421, 423-4.

[6] *RPC*, I, p.99; *APC*, III, pp. 47, 97, 171; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 215, 221, pp. 48, 50; *CSP Scot*, I, 371, p.185; *Foedera*, XV, pp. 265-71.

While many of Scotland's strongholds had been allocated for demolition in 1550, France continued to invest in their programme of fortress modernisation that began in 1548.[1] Engineers, such as Camillo Marini, were sent to plan and repair Scotland's border and coastal fortifications.[2] On 8 November 1550, for example, orders were issued to build a fort 'about the toun and castell of Dunbar for strenthing and fortificatioun of the same and resisting of sik danger and inconvenientis as may hereafter follow,'[3] and in the following March, d'Oisel, Châtelherault and Marini recommended that a fort at Jedburgh would be ideal for the defence of the frontier and for enforcing the peace.[4] Despite the complaints of a lack of money sent from France to carry out the desired renovations,[5] work on Scotland's strongholds was conducted at such a pace that the English ambassador resident in France, Sir John Mason, felt compelled to report that this was distasteful to the Scots, who thought they were meant for the keeping of them as opposed to the safety of the country.[6] In the light of the Scots' reaction to Henri's expressed desire to reduce his expenditure in Scotland, however, the accuracy of Mason's statement is questionable and was more than likely intended to reassure his English audience.

---

[1] Merriman, 'The Forts of Eyemouth', p.151; Colvin, *King's Works*, IV, p.609 *n.*4.

[2] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 248, p.59; *Balcarres Papers*, II, lxvi, pp. 92-3.

[3] *ADCP*, p.606.

[4] 15 March 1550/1, *Balcarres Papers*, II, lxvi, pp. 92-3.

[5] In his letter to Marie de Guise, Camillo Marini complained that the 3,000 *livres* Henri sent for the repair of Scotland's border fortifications was insufficient. *Ibid*, II, lxvi, pp. 92-3.

[6] 18 March 1550/1, *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 305, p.79. See also *Balcarres Papers*, II, cxxvii, pp. 185-6, for the work that was to begin diligently at Dunbar in December 1553 - no doubt as a response to Mary Tudor's accession, the arrival of her consort, Philip of Spain, and the work being done on the English side of the Border, most notably at Berwick.

With a view to 'sparing the Kingis expense in tyme of pece', the Privy Council proposed that the forts at Inchcolm, Inchgarvie, Broughty (Balgillo), Montrose and Luffness (Aberlady) also be demolished.[1] While the Scots' proposed certain cost-cutting measures, they also requested that the strongholds at Dunbar, Blackness, Inveresk, Inchkeith and Broughty Castle be fortified and garrisoned with French troops. The strategic positions of Inchkeith and Broughty at the entrances to the Firths of Forth and Tay, 'our Soveranis maist speciale revaris', made this request a particular necessity, as was the maintenance of Home Castle, because of its close proximity to the Borders.[2] England, therefore, was still regarded as a threat to national security, and the stipulation that 1,000 footmen remain in Scotland to garrison the strongholds of the realm, is testament to the Scots' predominant concern with matters of defence at this time.[3] By December 1550, it has been estimated that d'Oisel commanded a force of 1,100 French soldiers in Scotland.[4] The continuation of French military intervention at the explicit request of the Scottish government, and the latter's formal recognition of Henri as 'the sure and onlie defendar and releiff, under God, of all this realme', not only provided for the establishment of French military power in Scotland during 1550-1552, but also confirmed and reinforced the protectoral relationship that existed between France and Scotland.[5] Needless to say, this voluntary recognition and subsequent legitimation of

---

[1] *RPC*, I, pp. 90, 119.

[2] *Ibid*, I, p. 90.

[3] *Ibid*, I, p.90.

[4] Merriman, 'Struggle for the Marriage', p.324. See also R.S. Rait (ed.), 'Muster-Roll of the French Garrison at Dunbar', *SHS Misc.*, II, pp. 105-13. At this point in time, Henri felt that Dunbar should be garrisoned with 93 French soldiers.

[5] *RPC*, I, p.87.

Henri's protectorate was a point conveniently forgotten by the Lords of the Congregation in their proclamations of French domination and conquest a decade later.

The fate of the English held fortifications in Scotland and other matters of military security having thus been determined, Thomas, Master of Erskine, was despatched to England on 24 April 1550 with a commission to 'ratifie, afferme, and appreve ... the comprehensioun of Hir Grace and hir realme of Scotland' in the treaty of Boulogne.[1] The ratification of Scotland's comprehension was formalised on 15 May 1550.[2] From England, Erskine then proceeded to France to present the Scots' reply to Henri's memorial and to pledge their continued support for the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance.[3] Echoing the French King's wish 'veoir ung Jour son fils mary dune des plus vertueuses princesses que lon scauroit desirer,' the Scots also expressed their hope that 'be hir [Mary Stewart's] birth, mak his Hienes to be callit the gudschir of ane of the maist victorious princes in the warld and Kyng to ryng lang prosperouslie abufe baith the realmes'.[4] By placing the military security of Scotland in the hands of Henri, recognising him as the 'Protector' of Scotland and asking for continued intervention after the cessation of hostilities with England, the Scottish political élite willingly abetted the establishment of French military power in Scotland prior to a projected union of the crowns. More importantly, this was neither forced nor the result of military conquest. But were the Scots in any position to refuse?

---

[1] *TA*, IX, pp. 393, 394, 397; *RPC*, I, p.87; Wood, 'Instructions', pp. 159-60.

[2] SRO, SP6/49; BL, Cotton MSS,Caligua B.vii, fos. 405, 406, 414, 418-20 and B.viii, fos. 279-80; *CSP Spain*, X, pp. 91, 98, 168.

[3] *RPC*, I, pp. 86-93.

[4] Wood, 'Instructions', p.163; *RPC*, I, p.88.

The very fact that Henri asked the Scots to determine what, if any, French forces were needed in Scotland is noteworthy. Having expressed the wish to reduce his expenditure, he could have stopped providing French military and financial aid completely. Likewise, the Scottish political community could have requested the immediate removal of all foreign troops and the complete cessation of French military and financial intervention. Instead, the Privy Council issued Henri with certain criteria that would take a considerable amount of time to satisfy, if at all. Firstly, it was stipulated that, 'gif it be the Kingis pleasour to tak away his army here', enough troops were to remain until a final and perfect peace was concluded with England *and* sure knowledge was had of peace with Charles V.[1] If these objectives were not attainable, Henri's 'imperial dewite ... oblisit [him] to defend pupillis, that he will grant support of men, munitioun, and sic thair reasonabill help as he may spair'.[2] As we shall see, securing an enduring Scoto-Imperial peace and 'ane honorabill peax of the King of Ingland', was no mean feat – nor, for that matter, was the Scots' second demand.[3] The Privy Council also looked to the French and Marie de Guise, in particular, for help in pacifying their country internally. Once peace had been established on an international level, it was requested that 'sik ordour sall be takyn for executioun of justice and ordouring of the cuntre be the avise of the Quenis Grace [Marie de Guise], ... quharewith the King sall have caus to be contentit, and sall be advertist thairof in dew tyme.'[4] As we shall see in Chapters V and VI, years of warfare had reduced Scotland to

[1] *RPC*, I, p.93.

[2] *Ibid*, I, p.93.

[3] *Ibid*, I, pp. 90, 93.

[4] *Ibid*, I, p.90.

near lawlessness, especially on the Borders and in the Highlands, and the restoration of law and order in those areas and throughout the kingdom in general, would neither be a short-term nor an easy endeavour for Guise. Given the nature of these demands, therefore, it would seem that the Scottish political élite was in no hurry to see the back of the French. Indeed, it was not Regent Châtelherault to whom they appealed for the 'ordouring of the cuntre' or for international peace, but Marie de Guise and, once again, Henri II.

***

Diplomatic control was another feature of France's establishment of power in Scotland during the period 1550-1552. As in matters of military security, control over Scotland's diplomatic affairs and, by implication, her foreign policy, was considered by Henri to fall within the jurisdiction of the 'Protector' of Scotland. Using what was fast becoming his catch-phrase, that 'comme Royaume qui est ma protection ... j'estime comme mien', Henri was able to justify his eclipse of Châtelherault's authority in the realm of diplomacy.[1] More importantly, the Scottish political community's acceptance of this justification not only sanctioned the French King's assumption of power, but was also an act of recognition that their kingdom was a protectorate of France. Two occasions in particular, demonstrate Henri's assumption of control over Scotland's diplomatic affairs: the negotiations that culminated in the treaties of Binche (1550) and Norham (1551).

The volatile and particularly hostile nature of Scoto-Imperial relations in 1550 provided Henri with the ideal opportunity to assert and exercise his diplomatic

[1] Wood, 'Instructions', p.163; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, VIII, f.103^{v}; Potter, 'Documents', 47, p.131.

authority. In his memorial, Henri instructed Fumel to rebuke Châtelherault for making overtures of peace with Charles V without his knowledge or consent.[1] Indeed, Henri found it 'very strange' that the Governor should dare to take such an independent course of action given that Scotland was in his protection, and when negotiations should have been conducted by one of his ambassadors resident with the Emperor.[2] In order to persuade Châtelherault to accept the French King's assumption of diplomatic control and, of course, to further bind him to the interests of France, Fumel was to disclose that steps had been taken at the Court of Rome, via the Cardinal de Guise, to grant legatine powers to his brother, John Hamilton, the archbishop of St Andrews, as a gesture of Henri's contentment with the Regent in his retaking of the strongholds held by the English.[3] Undoubtedly fuelled by dynastic ambition, and the prospect of a Hamilton controlling the dispensation of all ecclesiastical benefices and offices in Scotland, save bishoprics, Châtelherault relented and beseeched Henri to 'send his ambassadouris towart the Empriour to procurer ane peax ... always referring the tyme to his Majesteis discretion', while not forgetting to thank and implore the king to continue the efforts made on behalf of his brother at the Papal Court.[4]

Any peace negotiations between the Scots and Charles V, however, were destined to be fraught with difficulty whoever was at the helm. Reminding the Scots that they could not afford to have an enemy in the person of Charles V, Henri's first task was to

---

[1] NLS, MSS.2991, fos. 72^{v}-3; *Fourquevaux Mission*, pp. 27-8.

[2] Originally, Fumel was instructed to state that Henri found Châtelherault's actions 'assez mauvais', but this was later modified to 'estrange'. Wood, 'Instructions', p.163 *n.*c; *RPC*, I, p.89.

[3] Wood, 'Instructions', pp. 163-4; *RPC*, I, p.89; Micharde et Poujolat, *Mémoires-Journaux*, p.7; Ribier, *Lettres et mémoires*, II, p.272; *Balcarres Papers*, II, li, pp. 67-70.

[4] *RPC*, I, pp. 89, 91-2; Finnie, 'The House of Hamilton', pp. 8-9; Mahoney, 'The Scottish Hierarchy', pp. 51-3.

admonish Marie de Guise and Châtelherault for 'le grans dommaiges que aucuns leurs subgectz continuent a faire par mer a ceulx de lempereur,' and to order the cessation of these maritime molestations.[1] The Scottish political élite's immediate response to this demand was, at best, half-hearted. Thomas Erskine was commissioned 'to putt inhibitioun to the capitanis, maisteris, and awnaris ... that nane of thame tak upon hand to mak were upon the Empouris subjectis', but only if he happened to come across any Scottish warships while in France.[2] The Scots' apprehension was justified. Previous peace treaties contracted at Antwerp in 1545 and Edinburgh in 1546, for example, had failed to calm the waters and served only to inaugurate a period of rampant piracy that was unprecedented in its hostility.[3] While the Privy Council desired the 'maist Christine King to trete ane peax betuis the Empriour and us, be his ambassadour presentlie being with the Empriour,' Erskine was to make it clear to Henri that *their* conditions for peace must be satisfied on account of the continual violation of the peace by the Emperor and his Flemish subjects, who, in the taking of a great number of Scottish ships 'at the desyre of Ingland,' caused 'grete hurt and dampnages of the liegis of this realme'.[4]

By 6 July 1550, the Scots' misgivings seemed to be vindicated by the 'gret enormiteis dalie done' within Scotland's 'awin watteris and firthis ... be the schippis of Holand, Flussing, and uthiris the Lawlandis of Flandaris, subjectis to the Empriour'.[5] An order issued by the Privy Council licensing the launch of Scottish warships for the

---

[1] Wood, 'Instructions', p.162.

[2] *RPC*, I, p.87.

[3] M.P. Rooseboom, *The Scottish Staple in the Netherlands* (The Hague, 1910), pp. 68-9.

[4] *RPC*, I, pp. 89, 91-3.

[5] *Ibid*, I, p.104. Specifically, d'Oisel had alleged that from 4 July to 24 July 1550, the Emperor's 'ships had committed several outrages on the Scots at sea, and behaved with inhuman cruelty'. *CSP Spain*, X, p. 157.

'stanching thairof', effectively disregarded Henri's command to cease all confrontational activity against the Emperor's subjects.[1] This hiccup in the resumption of friendly relations was further exacerbated by the confusion and distrust caused by France's involvement in the negotiations and, ultimately, its alliance with Scotland.

The confusion surrounded a letter issued by Marie de Guise and Châtelherault to Sebastian de l'Aubespine, Abbé of Bassefontaine, the French ambassador at Brussels, to Mary, Queen Dowager of Hungary, sister of Charles V and Regent of the Netherlands, empowering him to conclude a treaty on the Scots' behalf.[2] Having scrutinised the letter, the Queen Dowager of Hungary and her Council conveniently found some discrepancies that would forestall the negotiations. Firstly, it was argued that de l'Aubespine did not have the power to conclude a truce because he was the ambassador resident to the Queen Dowager of Hungary and not, as the letter clearly stipulated, the King of France's ambassador resident with Charles V (M. de Marillac). Secondly, the proposed duration of the truce until May 1551 was denounced as being 'so long a term that one can only take it the real object of the truce is to put off a peace, and make sure that all your [Charles V's] warships shall be disarmed in the meantime, in order to make war again in the spring if the French feel like it'.[3] Indeed, these fears seemed to be vindicated only weeks after the Scoto-Imperial peace had actually been concluded at Binche in December 1550, when Sir John Mason reported that great warlike

[1] *RPC*, I, p.104; *CSP Spain*, X, p.157.

[2] See *ibid*, X, pp. 157-61, for the Queen Dowager of Hungary's discussion of this letter and analysis of its contents.

[3] *Ibid*, X, p.158.

preparations on land and sea were being made in France for use against the Emperor.[1] Although nothing immediately came of these preparations, Mary of Hungary's perception of her Valois rival was remarkably acute. Thirdly, and perhaps more importantly, the clause expressing the Queen of Scotland's wish to comprehend her 'abettors, confederates and friends' immediately raised alarm bells as to Henri's true intentions. The Queen Dowager of Hungary astutely remarked that:

> It looks very much as if they [the Scots] wished to include the King of France, so that if we were hereafter to break with the Scots, they might claim that we were also breaking with the King of France. This point is of importance, and we must be careful to have it cleared up if we really treat with the Scots: namely, whether or no war with one country would mean war with the other.[2]

Although de l'Aubespine stressed that Henri was merely 'anxious to have the truce concluded in order to stop hostilities', the doubts raised by the Queen Dowager of Hungary do merit some consideration as to the implications of Henri's protectorate of Scotland.[3]

The comprehension of France in any treaty contracted between Scotland and Charles V had serious repercussions in the wider context of the Habsburg-Valois struggle for European supremacy. Something as slight as a shipping infraction, for instance, would constitute a violation of the peace and justify French retributory action against the Emperor, thus legitimately renewing the conflict. As an ally of France, Scotland would automatically be drawn into the conflict and *vice versa*. Moreover, France's alliance with, and military position in, Scotland could be used to divert

---

[1] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 270, 282, pp. 65, 69. The target of these warlike preparations, such as the hasty completion of ships, was originally thought to be England because of the internal dissension it was then experiencing.

[2] *CSP Spain*, X, p.158.

[3] *Ibid*, X, p.159.

Imperial attention and resources from the focus of the Habsburg-Valois conflict in Italy - most notably, through intrigues at sea. As in matters of military security, Henri's assumed control of Scottish diplomacy, while ostensibly for the purpose of defence and, therefore, within his jurisdiction as 'Protector' of Scotland, also provided him with the means to manipulate events and pursue his ambitions *offensively* on the Continent. The concerns raised by the Queen Dowager of Hungary are indicative of the advantageous position Henri found himself in as a result of his protectorate of Scotland – a position that could be exploited equally for defensive and offensive purposes.

On 23 August 1550, the potential problems that arose with France's involvement were simply avoided by Mary of Hungary, who empowered her commissioners to negotiate the terms of a peace settlement only with the envoys of Scotland, making no reference to the French King's Imperial ambassador.[1] Marie de Guise and Châtelherault duly responded on 8 September 1550 by commissioning Thomas Erskine to proceed to Flanders in order to negotiate the accord.[2] Left to their own devices, however, nothing more than a truce could be agreed upon - only when France intervened were the differences between Scotland and the Low Countries resolved in a treaty signed at Binche on 15 December 1550.[3]

Comprehending Henri II and Edward VI, the treaty of Binche sought to put an end to all the hostility and enmity, past and present, between Scotland and the Low

---

[1] 23 August 1550, *CSP Spain*, X, p.167. The Imperial commissioners were Count de Reuil, M. de Praet, Charles, Count de Lalaing, Charles, Seigneur de Berlaymont, Jehan de St. Mauris, Seigneur de Montbarey, and Viglius de Zwichem.

[2] 8 September 1550, *ibid*, X, p.174; *CSP Scot.*, I, 370, p.184.

[3] *Foedera*, XV, p.265; *CSP Spain*, X, pp. 197-201; *CSP Scot.*, I, 374, p.186; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 229 237 and *Relations*, I, p.250; Rooseboom, *The Scottish Staple*, pp. 69-71. Thomas Erskine arrived in France with the conclusion of the peace on 30 December 1550. *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 270, p.65.

Countries and usher in a new era of amicable Scoto-Imperial relations.[1] This was to be achieved specifically through the abolition of piracy and the promise to help each other in times of war. The treaty also provided for the free passage and entry into each other's territories (eradicating the need for safe-conducts), the alleviation of trade restrictions for merchants who paid the appropriate customs and duties, and full and immediate compensation for crimes committed by the subjects of one party to the other. The offenders, or anyone who tried to inflict harm, were to be branded as robbers and pirates. Finally, in what must be seen as a victory for the Queen Dowager of Hungary in the negotiations, it was stipulated that any action perceived to be contrary to the basic tenor of the treaty was not to be considered a breach of the peace and, therefore, a pretext for war.[2]

Although the terms of the treaty had been concluded, 'certan small differens' arose over its ratification by the Scots.[3] Charles V wanted two ratified versions of the peace: one in the Queen's name, to which her great seal alone should be affixed, and the other with the Queen's seals followed by the Regent's and those of the Council and Estates.[4] The reasoning behind this unusual and seemingly pedantic request was the ratification of the treaty of Binche by the Estates of Scotland who, it was claimed, had no written power to do so. The Three Estates' lack of authority could, technically speaking, be used to repudiate the treaty by rendering it invalid, although it was thought

---

[1] The treaty also comprehended the King of Denmark and Norway, the King of the Romans, Hungary and Bohemia, and the Estates of the Roman Empire. *Foedera*, XV, p.265; Rooseboom, *The Scottish Staple*, p.71.

[2] *Foedera*, XV, p.265; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 239-48; Rooseboom, *The Scottish Staple*, pp. 70-1.

[3] *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxix, p.354.

[4] *CSP Spain*, X, p.337; *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxix, p.354.

highly unlikely that the Scots themselves would think to use this as a reason. There was, however, the possibility that the Scots could be 'influenced and egged on by their neighbours', no doubt a reference to France, who knew that the absence of power was a point taken very seriously by the Imperialists.[1] In June 1550, Matthew Strick was sent to Scotland as the Imperial envoy to receive the two ratifications that Henri's 'imbassadour now in Flanderis [de l'Aubespine] hes grantit tharto'.[2] Once again, France had assumed control and directed Scottish diplomacy. Although the Scottish nobility complied and granted the two ratifications, they nevertheless felt it necessary to respond to the inference that their authority was deemed insufficient.[3] Proclaiming that 'they did not treat separately, and will not ratify separately', the Scots insisted that both ratifications were to be identical in wording and begin with the words *Maria Regina Scotorum*.[4]

While the treaty of Binche is significant in itself as a peace treaty, the predominant role played by Henri in the resumption of friendly Scoto-Imperial relations is of greater significance. Fumel's instructions, and the answers given by the Privy Council in response to Henri's memorial, clearly indicate that peace with Charles V was an objective for both Châtelherault and the French King. Why, then, was Henri so adamant that he should control the negotiations when the Regent had already made overtures of peace? To ensure that the terms of the treaty were compatible with French interests is one obvious answer. The insistence that France be comprehended in the treaty, as an

[1] *CSP Spain*, X, p.338.

[2] *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxix, p.354.

[3] A meeting of the Scottish nobility was scheduled for 22 June 1550 to mend the 'certan small differens' that existed over the ratification of the treaty of Binche. *Ibid*, ccxxxix, p.354.

[4] *CSP Spain*, X, p.337.

abettor, confederate and friend of Scotland, was also a means by which Henri could prevent Châtelherault from pursuing independent policies on the Continent that might conflict with or undermine those of France. Control over Scotland's diplomatic relations ensured that her foreign policy was aligned with that of France. Unity in policy symbolised and conveyed strength. Yet, France was more than an ally of Scotland and Henri was not merely employing strong-arm tactics as a display of French domination or to coerce the Scots into submission. As the defender and protector of Scotland, her rights and liberties against England and all others, Henri's protectorate naturally extended to include diplomacy. Moreover, his belief that Scotland was a kingdom of his own because it was in his protection facilitated the establishment of French power in Scotland prior to the union of the crowns, of which diplomatic control was a major feature. Henri's involvement in Scoto-Imperial relations, however, is but one example demonstrating how his protectorate of Scotland included control over Scottish diplomacy. Another and more revealing example is his extensive and multi-faceted involvement in Scotland's relations with England. This is especially true of the negotiations that culminated in the treaty of Norham.[1]

***

As an Anglo-French accord, the treaty of Boulogne did not settle the disputes that pertained specifically to England and Scotland, nor was it expected to. Although progress had been made regarding the English held fortifications in Scotland, of which Roxburgh and Eyemouth had been fully dismantled under the supervision of Sir Robert

[1] For an overview of the negotiations for the treaty of Norham from an English perspective, see P.G. Boscher, 'English provincial government and its relationship with central government, 1550-70' (unpublished PhD Thesis, University of Durham, 1985), pp. 117-33.

Bowes by 11 July 1550, there were still remnants of the Anglo-Scottish war that needed to be settled in order for the peace finally to be concluded.[1] As the preamble to the treaty of Norham states, certain questions and controversies needed to be handled in a friendly manner, ordered and ended, lest great jeopardy ensue.[2] Such questions and controversies included the boundaries between England and Scotland and, in particular, the Debatable Land, the detention and delivery of captives and pledges, the administration and execution of justice for the piracies, spoils and 'attemptates' done to the subjects of both kingdoms, and the hospitable and friendly reception of merchant ships and subjects into each kingdom.[3] Exclusive as these matters were to England and Scotland, Henri nevertheless took an active and predominant role through his ambassador resident in England, Sieur de Chemault and, more significantly, through his diplomatic envoy, Louis de Saint Gelais, Sieur de Lansac.

It became apparent almost immediately after the ratification of the treaty of Boulogne that these problems were in urgent need of resolution. In response to the daily and continual incursions made against the Scots by the English troops still garrisoned at Roxburgh and Eyemouth, the Scottish Privy Council ordered 'all and sindry' to apprehend and imprison anyone who emerged from these fortifications without licence and/or who, it was thought, intended to inflict harm on Scotland or the lieges thereof.[4] The release of captives and pledges was brought to the fore with the detention of Alexander Gordon, archbishop of Glasgow, who was caught travelling

[1] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 215, 220, 224, pp. 48, 50, 51; *RPC*, I, p.99; *APC*, III, pp. 47, 97, 171.

[2] *Foedera*, XV, p.265; W. Nicolson, *Leges Marchiarum: Or, The Border-Laws* (London, 1714), pp. 56-7.

[3] *Foedera*, XV, p.265; Nicolson, *Leges Marchiarum*, p.57.

[4] 22 May 1550, *RPC*, I, pp. 99-100.

through England without a safe-conduct.[1] The English considered the Archbishop of Glasgow to be a legitimate prisoner because England 'had no peace with Scotland such that they [the Scots] might pass [through] our country'.[2] Although the archbishop was deemed a 'prisoner of good price', his ransom being set at 20,000 crowns, Edward VI nevertheless consented to Henri's demand that the Scottish prelate be liberated in view of the Anglo-French peace that had lately been concluded.[3] Yet, despite the English King's concession, there still existed a mutual distrust between the 'auld enemies' largely because boundary disputes continued to exacerbate tensions on the Border.

In July 1550, the English Council received word from William, Lord Dacre, Warden of the West March, that his opposite number in Scotland, Robert, Lord Maxwell had assembled a considerable Franco-Scottish force and was planning to invade the Debatable Land in order to pursue certain fugitives there.[4] The fugitives in question were the Grahams, a family whom Edward VI confessed to be 'yielded to me'.[5] The Council immediately warned the French Ambassador that if Maxwell carried out

---

[1] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 221, p.50; *APC*, III, p.62; Jordan, *Chronicle*, p.38.

[2] *Ibid*, p.38; *APC*, III, p.62.

[3] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 218, 220-1 and *Relations*, I, pp. 242-3; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 235, p.54. Henri's diplomatic intervention is interesting given that it was reported by Sir John Mason on 20 July that, 'the King refused to interfere for the Archbishop of Glasgow, who must "stand to folly"'. Henri later thanked Edward for the 'enlargement of the Archbishop of Glasgow'. *Ibid*, 224, 238, pp. 51, 55.

[4] Sir John Mason reported '2,000 Scots and 400 or 500 Frenchmen', while M. de Chemault wrote to Henri on 15 August 1550, that 'la Reine, mon cousin le Gouverneur d'Ecosse et le sieur de Termes faisoient marcher vers la terre debatable quatre ensignes de gens de pied'. *Ibid*, 232, p.53; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.217, and *Relations*, I, p.239.

[5] *APC*, III, pp. 104-5, 108-9; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 230, 232, pp. 52-3; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 222-3, *Relations*, I, p.244; Jordan, *Chronicle*, p.44. Banished from Scotland c.1516, the Grahams eventually settled in the Debatable Land on the English side of the Esk. However, through a string of advantageous marriages with other Scottish Border families, such as the Armstrongs, their occupation of evacuated properites and the extensive tracts of land granted to them by the English crown, the Graham network spread and eventually crossed over into the Scottish side of the Debatable Land at Canonbie. As we shall see, the subversive activity of the Grahams against the Scots was the source of much contention in Anglo-Scottish relations. W. Mackay Mackenzie, 'The Debatable Land', *SHR*, xxx (1951), pp. 109-25.

his invasion, it would be considered to be a breach of the treaty of Boulogne.[1] Chemault flatly rejected this line of argument. The Debatable Land was not English held territory and the Scottish Privy Council had expressly prohibited any Borderer from taking it 'upoun hand to ryde in Ingland or to make ony pertubatioun thairintill ... under the pane of tresoun'.[2] A raid into the Debatable Land was not an invasion of England and, therefore, would not be a contravention of the peace.

Clearly this boundary dispute was not going be settled without formal negotiation, but the English Council still took steps to defend the Debatable Land as if it was their own. If the Scots forcibly entered the Debatable Land, Dacre was instructed to fight back and then to 'reason the matter with the Scottes, why they shulde entre upon the Debatable Grounde, knowing it to have been in the Kinges possession these many yeres'.[3] Dacre was also directed to entreat 'the Graymes, enhabitauntes there, as amyablie as he might, to kepe them still the Kinges Majesties good subjectes as they have been before.'[4] This was of particular importance as the Grahams had threatened to switch allegiances if England failed to protect them against Maxwell. The prospect of having the Grahams as hostile neighbours and being the target of their criminal activity was something the English knew they did not want - as the Scots could well testify.[5] To prevent such an undesirable situation from even developing, therefore, the English

---

[1] Teulet, *Relations*, I, pp. 246-7; J. Nicolson and R. Burn, *The History and Antiquities of the Counties of Westmorland and Cumberland* (London, 1777), I, pp. lxxv, lxxvii, lxxix-xxx.

[2] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 230, pp. 52-3; *RPC*, I, p.86.

[3] 14 & 21 August 1550, *APC*, III, pp. 104, 108-9. On 3 September, the Warden of the East March for England, Sir Robert Bowes, had been ordered to supply 'ccc hacquebutiers ... to the Lord Dacres if he write for theim'. *Ibid*, III, p.119.

[4] *Ibid*, III, p.105.

[5] Nicolson and Burn, *History and Antiquities*, I, p.lxxv.

Council demanded that the French King send an envoy to Scotland to deal with the situation and stay the said enterprise.[1]

Henri had already been informed of the events on the Scottish Border by his ambassador resident in England, and personally by Lansac, who delivered Chemault's report.[2] The French King's response reveals that Maxwell had not embarked on an independent course of action, but that 'la Reine [Marie de Guise], mon cousin le Gouverneur d'Ecosse et le sieur de Termes faisoient marcher vers la terre debateable quatre ensiegnes de gens de pied'.[3] In an attempt to ease the escalating tensions, Henri issued a formal statement explaining Maxwell's movements on the Border. The purpose of the Scoto-French march was not to invade England, but to pursue the troublemakers who were threatening the *neutrality* of the Debatable Land. Refusing to recognise England's claims to the disputed territory, Henri asserted that the Debatable Land had always been neutral and Chemault was to remind the English Council of this point and of the treaty of Boulogne's stipulation that all things were to return *status quo ante bellum*. But, recognising the signs of a potentially explosive situation, Henri also instructed Châtelherault and d'Oisel to re-establish order on the Border, if that was possible, and to leave the settling of border disputes to the appointed Scottish and English commissioners.[4] On 26 August, Sir John Mason confirmed Henri's wish to

[1] 18 August 1550, *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 230, pp. 52-3; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.222 and *Relations*, I, p.244.

[2] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.222 and *Relations*, I, p.244.

[3] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.217 and *Relations*, I, p.239.

[4] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.218 and *Relations*, I, p.239.

resolve this affair amicably and reported that the French King 'would issue immediate orders for the prevention of such in future'.[1]

It soon became apparent that Scotland's comprehension in the treaty of Boulogne was riddled with ambiguity. Although the potentially damaging situation of Maxwell's assembly on the Scottish frontier had, for the time being, dissipated, diplomatic tensions soon flared up during Thomas, Master of Erskine's visit to England in September 1550. After presenting various letters to Edward VI, Erskine raised what was fast becoming the main concern for the Scots; namely, that 'syns the realme of Scotlande was comprehended in the Treatie, the Quene and Counsaill there desired to knowe wheather the Kinges Highnes and Counsaill ment thei shulde enjoie their olde lymites in like maner as thei did before the last warres'.[2] Specifically, 'their olde lymites' referred to Edrington, also known as Cawe Mill, which was occupied by the English, and the fishing rights to half of the River Tweed.[3] The English Council's reply was less than amenable. Although they declared that their primary concern was the 'continewance of thamytie withe Fraunce' and of Scotland's comprehension therein, the English Council claimed that the Scots had 'required divers thinges more than resonable, which wee oughte not to satisfie, and therfore if thei seeke redresse of any thinge (as we thinke thei have no cause), than lett the French Kinge by his Ministers declare it, and we shall accordinglie make him aunswere whith [*sic*] whom the Treatie hathe been concluded,

[1] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 232, p.53.

[2] 28 September 1550, *APC*, III, p.132.

[3] The land and house at Edrington was located six miles north-west of Berwick.

and not with them'.[1] As Erskine was en route to France, the Council referred him to the French King for an explanation of the treaty.[2] Ironically, the English Council's insistence that France represent Scotland's interests served only to strengthen Henri's position as 'Protector' by legitimising his control over Scotland's diplomatic affairs and, inadvertently, contributing to the establishment of French power in Scotland.

While diplomatic tensions could be masked by polite words at the English Court, the same was not as easily done on the Borders themselves. The threat of vigilante retribution and physical confrontation loomed heavily over the meetings between the Wardens of the West Marches. In October 1550, for instance, Dacre's refusal to provide restitution for the crimes committed by the English against the Scots led to a riotous outbreak, largely at the instigation of the Scottish Warden. Upon hearing of Maxwell's role in the disturbance, d'Oisel strongly advised him to conduct himself in a friendly manner towards the English, so as not to give them occasion to cause intrigue and enable Henri and Edward to resolve the differences between England and Scotland. Specifically, he was ordered not to let the hounds loose, so to speak, if the English should irritate him or his own, but to do everything by the book and inform Dacre of any problems.[3] Henri was similarly displeased with news of this incident. The source of his displeasure, however, was not Maxwell, but England's Border officials. 'Les ministres du Roi d'Angleterre etant sur la frontiere dudict pays d'Ecosse', he wrote, 'ne suivent pas la douce voie que l'on vous assure ordinairement par dela vouloir tenir en

---

[1] *APC*, III, pp. 132, 134; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 242, p.56. In addition to Edrington, the fishing of the Tweed and the Debatable ground between the Esk and Sark in the West March, the Scots also laid claim to Thriepland in the Middle March.

[2] *Ibid*, 242, p.56.

[3] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.226 and *Relations*, I, p.247. See also BL, Harley MSS, 34.14, fos. 57-9.

toutes choses; car ils se veulent faire croire en ce different de la terre debateable, et cependant en retenir une possession que malaisement l'on leur voudroit laisser, s'ils en usent de telles sortes,' and subsequently ordered Chemault to demand that they behave graciously and reasonably.[1]

Despite these apparent setbacks, Henri was nevertheless pleased with the overall progress being made on Scotland's diplomatic front by December 1550. Under his direction, a Scoto-Imperial peace had just been concluded at Binche, and a settlement with England seemed imminent. Expressing his optimism to Chemault with respect to the latter, Henri made the very revealing and confident statement that, 'il y sera incontinant pourvu et donne si bonne provision a mes sujets qu'ils auront occasion de demeurer contens'.[2] The realisation of such a sentiment, however, greatly depended on the success of his envoy, Sr. de Lansac, on his mission to Scotland.

***

In January 1550/1, Henri complied with the English demands for French diplomatic intervention and sent Lansac to the English Court to present the French King's demands on behalf of the Scots. Feeling it necessary to dispel any English fears of possible ulterior motives, Henri informed his ambassador that, 'l'occasion pourquoi je l'envoye par dela, qui tend seullement a pacifier les differends qui sont entre les Angloys et les Escossoys, dont je desire bien veoir la fin et que la Royne d'Escosse puisse avoir net ce qui luy appartiens'.[3] Chemault then proceeded to the English Court to request that the

---

[1] 26 November 1550, Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.227 and *Relations*, I, p.248.

[2] 21 December 1550, Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.228 and *Relations*, I, p.249.

[3] Henri II to M. de Chemault, 23 January 1550/1, Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.207 and *Relations*, I, p.251. See also *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 282, pp. 68-9.

'gentleman whom the French King hathe sent hither may see and speake withe the Kingis Majestie', and to continue the diplomatic pressure being placed on the English to respond to the main questions of the Anglo-Scottish debate concerning the restoration of Scotland's ancient limits and the neutrality of the Debatable Land - questions which 'had been divers tymes asked and never fullie aunswered'.[1] Chemault was feebly informed that Dacre had already been sent north where he was to make a full answer on the neutrality of the Debatable Land upon his arrival.[2] With respect to Lansac's audience, the entry in the register giving the Council's response is incomplete, but presumably favourable, as Henri's demands were formally presented on 1 February 1550/1.[3]

The French King's demands were, to say the least, predictable. They had already been voiced many times by Erskine and Chemault on behalf of Marie de Guise and Châtelherault. Henri's primary objective was the full restoration of what he termed 'le propre patrimoine d'Escosse'; namely, that Edrington, the fishing rights of the Tweed and the Debatable Land be returned to the *status quo ante bellum*. As in the negotiations for the treaty of Boulogne over the fate of Roxburgh and Eyemouth, Henri thought it unreasonable that the English should claim these things as their own, considering that they had only been held *since* the war, and appealed to Edward VI on a personal level to see their restitution. He used Scotland's comprehension in the treaty as a confederate of France to justify his diplomatic intervention and, of greater interest, informed Edward that, because Scotland was in his protection, he would be constrained

[1] 29 January 1550/1, *APC*, III, p.203.

[2] *Ibid*, III, p.203.

[3] *Ibid*, III, pp. 204-5.

to assist and defend the Scots in this quarrel, which he considered to be just.[1] This point was not lost on the English. They reported that:

> ...forasmuche as he [Henri] had taken the protection of the Scottish Quene, considering that Scotlande was comprehended, he coulde no lesse do then to desire the King his goode brother to restore Edrington, fyssheng in Twede and other like limites, with the newtrall estate of the Debateable Grounde, in like maner as every thing was before the beginneng of the last warres.[2]

In addition to the restoration of Scotland's ancient limits and frontiers, the French King also demanded the immediate payment of ransoms for English prisoners who had already been released, the restitution of the five Scottish ships taken since the peace, full and free traffic at sea and on land, open intercourse between the two kingdoms and, finally, the release of the Scottish hostages who had been taken at Solway Moss. The latter was particularly important since the English prisoners taken at St. Andrews had already been liberated.[3]

On the whole, the English Council's response to Henri's demands was conciliatory. They agreed, for example, to the liberation of all Scottish ships not belonging to pirates and the immediate payment of ransoms due.[4] But once again, the Council claimed that the Scots had solicited the French King to demand far too much, and had it not been for Henri's desire to maintain amicable relations with England, Henri would have refused to do so.[5] This was particularly true with respect to his

---

[1] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 208-9 and *Relations*, I, pp. 251-3.

[2] *APC*, III, p.204.

[3] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 210-1 and *Relations*, I, pp. 253-4; *APC*, III, p.205; Jordan, *Chronicle*, pp. 51-2. See Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 211-2 and *Relations*, I, pp. 255-6, for a list of Scots taken prisoner at Solway Moss, which included two of Glencairn's sons, and of English prisoners released since the peace. The payment of ransoms, the return of prisoners, hostages and Scottish ships had been topics of great debate since June 1550. *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 215, 221, 224, pp. 48, 50, 51; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 221-4 and *Relations*, I, pp. 241-5; *APC*, III, pp. 114, 116-7.

[4] *Ibid*, III, p.212; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 214-5 and *Relations*, I, pp. 257-8; *Balcarres Papers*, II, lxiv, pp. 88-91.

[5] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.213 and *Relations*, I, p.256.

demands for the restoration of Scotland's old limits and frontiers and the *full* liberty of traffic through England, which met with some, albeit superficial, resistance. They argued, for example, that Edrington, the fishing rights of the Tweed and the Debatable Land had all originally belonged to Henry VIII and, having been inherited by his son upon his death, were, consequently, not subject to restitution. It was thus deemed 'laufull for the Kinges Majestie to enyoie and keepe not only Edrington, with other thinges that he keepeth not within that realme, having had the same in his possession long before the last Treatie'.[1] As a gesture of England's commitment to the peace, however, the Council declared that an envoy would be sent to Henri to give a fuller answer on this matter, with which Henri 'oughte to be contented'.[2]

Sir William Pickering was the chosen envoy who, in the words of Edward VI, was 'to declare that, although I had [the] right in the aforesaid places yet I was content to forbear them under conditions to be agreed on by commissioners on both sides'.[3] Pickering was also to give Henri a fuller answer regarding the full liberty of traffic through England. While the Council had declared that 'all Scottishe shippes which arr driven in by tempest or that come by necessitie, shall have libertie to goo agayne', they felt that they could not conveniently consent to the 'further libertie of trafficque'.[4] The detention of the Archbishop of Glasgow for not having the proper travel documentation in July 1550 was but one telling example of the underlying distrust the English had for the Franco-Scottish alliance. Another and more revealing example was the Council's

---

[1] *APC*, III, p.211.

[2] *Ibid*, III, pp. 211-2; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 290, p.73.

[3] Jordan, *Chronicle*, p.53.

[4] *APC*, III, p.212.

refusal to allow Lord Maxwell to pass through England on his return journey from France in February 1550/1. The free passage of the French and Scots through England was a matter of great concern to the Council now that Scotland had been 'made Frenche, and bicause it appeareth the libertie therof shulde muche advaunce the French affaires and hinder our owne'.[1] Maxwell's safe-conduct was denied on the pretence that 'the realme had been so chargded withe the furnyssheng of those that syns the Peace concluded had thus passed to and from, that wee could not convenyently and lenger supporte it'.[2] The great influx of applications for safe-conducts from Scots who had travelled to France with Marie de Guise and now wished to return, no doubt added an element of truth to the Council's refusal.[3] But their refusal was more than likely due to the timing of Maxwell's application. It directly coincided with the great invasion scare of Ireland by France, and the receipt of a related report from Sir Robert Bowes and the Captain of Berwick that Châtelherault, with all the French troops in Scotland and a complement of Scottish ships, was planning to attack Berwick while ostensibly punishing thieves in Liddesdale.[4] Henri's reaction to the English Council's refusal left him 'highly irritated' which, according to Sir John Mason, was further 'fomented by the Queen of Scots [Marie de Guise] and her house ... who desireth as much our subversion, if it lay in her power, as she desireth the preservation of herself'.[5] Ironically, the Council's attempt to hinder the return of Maxwell backfired. Forced to travel by sea,

[1] 3 February 1550/1, *APC,* III, p.205.

[2] *Ibid,* III, p.206.

[3] Among the applicants wishing to return to Scotland in February 1550/1 were Sir Hugh Campbell of Loudon, his son Matthew, and both their wives, Hugh Kennedy, Ninian Cranston and Sir James Douglas of Drumlanrig. *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 280, 281, 283, pp. 68-9.

[4] 17 February 1550/1, *ibid*, 291, p.73.

[5] 23 February 1550/1, *ibid*, 295, p.75.

Maxwell returned to Scotland in just three days and was able to join Châtelherault and d'Oisel at the justice ayre at Jedburgh in accordance with the Queen Dowager's instructions.[1] The intimacy of the Franco-Scottish alliance, which the English themselves recognised and feared, made French intrigues in Ireland at this time a matter of great concern.[2]

***

Tudor Irish policy, particularly Henry VIII's Kingship Act of 1541 and the creation of an English Pale in Ireland, left in its wake many disaffected Irish chieftains. One such individual was Cahir O'Connor who, in 1548, mounted an unsuccessful revolt against the English that ended with the confiscation of the O'Connor and O'More lands and many executions.[3] These events led some disaffected Irishry to appeal for French aid. Henri was not unaware of the Irish antagonism towards England and recognised that intervention, or political intrigues at the very least, would serve to distract the English from the Continent whilst also depleting their resources.

In 1548, Henri sent Beccarie de Paive, Baron de Fourquevaux, on an exploratory mission to Ireland whilst the latter was delivering men and munitions to the Scots.[4]

---

[1] *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxiv, pp. 344-5; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 305, pp. 78-9; *TA*, IX, pp. 473-4; *RSS*, IV, 1145-58, pp. 185-6. Two musters had been called for this justice ayre (24 February and 4 March 1550/1) and were supported by a French military force under d'Oisel. A bond was also signed on 26 March 1551 by Châtelherault and other Border nobles, pledging to keep good rule within their bounds and to bring offenders to justice despite the remission of many crimes against their households, tenants and servants. *CSP Scot.*, I, 369, p.184.

[2] Potter, 'French Intrigue in Ireland during the Reign of Henri II, 1547-1559', *International History Review*, v (1983), pp. 159-80; *Fourquevaux Mission*, pp. 1-36; Dawson, 'Two Kingdoms or Three?: Ireland in Anglo-Scottish Relations in the Middle of the Sixteenth Century' in Mason (ed.), *Scotland and England*, pp. 113-38; W. Palmer, *The Problem of Ireland in Tudor Foreign Policy, 1485-1603* (Woodbridge, Suffolk, 1994), pp. 15-88; C. Brady, 'The Decline of the Irish Kingdom' in Greengrass (ed.), *Conquest and Coalescence*, pp. 94-115.

[3] Potter, 'French Intrigue in Ireland', p.161.

[4] NLS, MSS.2991, fos. 7, 29, 43, 49.

Fourquevaux's visit to Ireland began in October 1549 and lasted approximately three months.[1] Accompanied by Robert Wauchop, 'the blind bishop', and Jean de Monluc, Fourquevaux met with the Irish princes and noblemen who were 'willing to cast aff the yok of England and becom subiect to the King of France, provyding that he wald procure the Paipes gift of Yreland, and then send to ther help 2000 hacbuters 200 leicht horse men and four canons'.[2] Intervention in Ireland was also favoured by the Earl of Argyll, who offered to lead a subsidised military expedition there, and d'Oisel, who not only provided a military strategy for Argyll's proposed campaign, but also the justification: England received Ireland only on condition that they maintain the rights and authority of the Apostolic Church, and if there was any violation thereof, Ireland would automatically revert to Papal suzerainty.[3]

When Monluc and Fourquevaux returned to Scotland in January 1549/50, they immediately proceeded to France in order to present Henri with the various propositions concerning Ireland, the basic tenor of which was that, in return for French military and financial aid, a number of the Irish gentry were prepared to accept French sovereignty.[4] Should he agree, Henri would then be provided with a loyal and obedient following in yet another strategic position within the archipelago. But would such an investment yield the French King the same short and long-term returns as it did in Scotland? Henri clearly did not think so, but in order to exploit his advantageous position in Ireland at the time, he conveniently took his time to decline the offers of the Irish.

---

[1] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 707, 711.

[2] NLS, MSS.2991, f.49; James Melville, *Memoirs of His Own Life by Sir James Melville of Halhill* (Edinburgh, 1827), pp. 9-12; *CSP Ireland, 1509-1573*, p.107; *Maitland Miscellany*, I, 11, pp. 220-1.

[3] NLS, MSS.2991, fos. 74^{v}-6^{v}; *Fourquevaux Mission*, pp. 30-4.

[4] Melville, *Memoirs*, p.12; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 716-8.

Henri secretly put an end to his intrigues in Ireland in April 1550. One of Fumel's tasks in Scotland was to order Fourquevaux and Monluc to stop their dealings in Ireland.[1] But it would not be until April 1551 that the Irish envoy, George Paris, was officially told that the French King would not be providing military aid to the Irish malcontents.[2] Paris, an Anglo-Irish gentleman who had links with the O'Connors and represented other disaffected Irishry such as McWilliam, visited France in 1550 and 1551 to try and persuade Henri to intervene on their behalf against the English.[3] Needless to say, these meetings were of great concern to the English ambassador, Sir John Mason. He filed alarming reports of 'this' Paris, who sought to annoy the King and his realm by serving as 'a common post between the wild Irish and the French'.[4] Mason also informed the Council that the letters presented by Paris bragged that the 'whole nobility of Ireland from the highest to the lowest, had conspired to rid themselves from the yoke of England'. In light of this discovery, Mason felt obliged to voice his opinion that, 'We have, these many years past, wasted there [in Ireland] great sums of money by piecemeal, which, if it had been spent together, might have bred more quietness than we have at this Present', adding that, 'These *Wildbeasts* would be hunted aforce, and at the beginning should so be bearded, before the whole herd run together'.[5] The perceived gravity of the situation was brought home when Mason

---

[1] Wood, 'Instructions', pp. 166-7.

[2] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 320, 324, 327, pp. 89-90, 92, 95; P.F. Tytler, *England under the reigns of Edward VI and Mary* (London, 1839), I, pp. 351-3.

[3] Paris' mission to France in June 1550, for instance, was to present Henri with letters of credence from McWilliam. *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 217, p.48; Tytler, *Edward VI and Mary*, I, pp. 291-2; Potter, 'French Intrigues in Ireland', pp. 169-70.

[4] Tytler, *Edward VI and Mary*, I, pp. 292, 301; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 217, 218, pp. 48, 49.

[5] 29 June 1550, Tytler, *Edward VI and Mary*, I, pp. 301-3.

reported in October that there had been much talk at the French Court, especially since the coming of the Scots, that Ireland was theirs whenever the King wished. A similar report was sent in December and stated that Paris himself 'doubteth not to see the French King shortly to bear the crown of Ireland'.[1]

Reports such as these, together with those informing the Council of the great warlike preparations being made in France, led to the invasion scare of January and February 1550/1.[2] It is of significance to note that this coincided with Lord Maxwell's application for a safe-conduct which, as has already been demonstrated, was received with a tremendous amount of suspicion. Because 'the Frenchmen did go about practice in Ireland', major preparations were promptly made by the English Council. Admiral Winter was to command a small fleet of four ships, Lord Cobham was appointed to take charge of the military preparations, St. Leger was ordered to repair to the southern parts of Ireland with force, Sir James Croft was despatched to Ireland with John Roberts to begin fortifications, John Parker was commanded to victual his forts at Knockfergus and Olderfleet to resist the Scots who planned to attack from the Western Isles, and Osbert Mountford, a dealer in bread grains, was commanded to provide victuals for the ships embarking for Ireland.[3] Interestingly, preparations were also made for Berwick and the northern parts of England, where it was feared a simultaneous attack would be launched by Châtelherault, his French military entourage and its naval complement that had been

[1] In December 1550, George Paris returned to Ireland with the French King's replies to the letters he presented from McWilliam and other Irish malcontents. *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 247, 264, pp. 58, 63.

[2] 30 December 1550, *ibid*, 270, p.65.

[3] Jordan, *Chronicle*, pp. 51-2; *APC*, III, pp. 195, 204-5; *CSP Ireland, 1509-1573*, pp. 110-2.

assembled *ostensibly* for a justice ayre at Jedburgh.[1] The crisis peaked when it was reported that sixteen ships of a large French fleet destined for Scotland, and laden with victuals and munitions, had perished on the Irish coast.[2] Given this course of events, it comes as no surprise that the English were anxious to appease the French regarding Scotland - despite their pretences to the contrary. In reality, England was in no position to press their claims in Scotland and had no choice but to capitulate to the French. This was the real reason why Sir William Pickering was sent to France.

Pickering's primary objective in France was to reach an amicable settlement with Henri of all the differences still extant between England and Scotland.[3] In this, he was successful, but only because Edward was willing to relinquish what he considered to be his rightful claims to Edrington, the fishing of the Tweed and his private use of Debatable land in the West Marches, Roxburgh and Eyemouth – despite being taking through conquest.[4] Edward's 'kind gesture', however, was only an attempt to retain some degree of English prestige during the negotiations with France. In a private letter to Sir Richard Morsine (England's ambassador to Charles V) the Council admitted that none of these things were really worth keeping and, more importantly, that since the last wars, English soldiers had held Edrington, the Scots had been forbidden from fishing on the Tweed, and wasteland common to both realms in the Debatable Land had been

---

[1] Jordan, *Chronicle*, p.52; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 291, 295, 305, pp. 73, 75, 78-9; *Scottish Correspondnce*, ccxxxiv, p.344; *TA*, IX, pp. 473-4; *RSS*, IV, 1145-58, pp. 185-6.

[2] Jordan, *Chronicle*, pp. 54-5; *CSP Ireland, 1509-1573*, p.112; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 305, pp. 78-9.

[3] BL, Harley MSS, 297.5, fos. 31-5 and 353.27, fos. 86-9; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 290, 292, p.73. In this, Sir William Pickering was to work with Sir John Mason, whom he succeeded as ambassador in April 1551. *Ibid*, 318, p.87; Jordan, *Chronicle*, p.156.

[4] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 314, p.83; *CSP Scot.*, I, 371, p.185.

privately held by the English.[1] Finally, the French King was told that Edward was willing to liberate the Scottish prisoners taken at Solway Moss and that the use of English ports by Scottish merchants and ships would revert to customary practices.[2]

These proposals ultimately proved acceptable to Henri, who summoned Marie de Guise, then at Châteaudun, for consultation before replying to the English King on 17 March 1550/1.[3] Henri simultaneously despatched Lansac and Thomas, Master of Erskine, back to England as his commissioners to discuss these proposals and other Anglo-Scottish Border disputes, and to work with the French ambassador, Chemault, in getting the official negotiations underway.[4] The involvement and influence of the French in Anglo-Scottish affairs did not wane once these negotiations began. As Henri's representative, Lansac played a prominent role during the formal negotiations and was supported by other loyal supporters of the French cause, Thomas Erskine, Maxwell, Sir Robert Carnegy of Kinnaird and Robert Reid, bishop of Orkney.[5] To counter this Franco-Scottish delegation were Edward's representatives: Sir Robert Bowes, Sir Leonard Beckwith, Sir Thomas Challoner and Richard Sampson, bishop of Lichfield and Coventry.[6] Despite some initial communication problems on the part of the English commissioners, who allegedly lacked the proper instructions to accord what

---

[1] 6 April 1551, *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 314, p.83.

[2] *Ibid*, 314, p.83.

[3] *Ibid*, 301, 305, pp. 77-8.

[4] *Ibid*, 303-5, pp. 78-9. On 5 April 1551, for example, Lansac and Chemault presented the names of the Scottish commissioners who were to take part in the discussions preceding the formal negotiations. They were named as either Robert Reid, bishop of Orkney, or David Paniter, bishop of Ross, and Patrick, Master of Ruthven. Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.215 and *Relations*, I, p.258; *APC*, III, pp. 250-1; Jordan, *Chronicle*, p.57.

[5] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.215 and *Relations*, I, p.258; *APC*, III, pp. 252-3; *Foedera*, XV, pp. 263-4.

[6] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.215 and *Relations*, I, p.258; Jordan, *Chronicle*, pp. 57-8; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 318, p.87.

Pickering and Mason had agreed with Henri, the negotiations eventually began on Monday, 1 June 1551 and ended nine days later with the formal conclusion of the treaty of Norham.[1]

The articles of the treaty of Norham did not contain any surprises.[2] It was agreed that the English would relinquish all their holdings and 'claims' in Scotland. The limits, bounds and borders of both kingdoms were to revert to their original state as they were prior to the war; the Debatable ground between the West Marches was to revert to its accustomed state and use by subjects of both realms; Edrington was to be restored to the Queen of Scots, the English garrison there being evacuated, in addition to the fishing rights of the Tweed, from Berwick to Ryding-burne.[3] The treaty also provided for the expedient delivery of all captives and pledges, and laid out explicit regulations for merchant traffic and the issuing of safe-conducts.[4] Years of war had clearly had devastating effects on the Borders, and the considerable amount of attention devoted to Border Law and the administration and execution of justice in the treaty reflects the urgent need felt by both parties to impose law and order.[5] The treaty called for the delivery and punishment of murderers, thieves, rebels and other evil-doers by the Wardens of the Marches and their Deputies at the Days of Truce according to Border Law. Malefactors who had sought refuge in the other kingdom were to be returned to

---

[1] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 356, p.111; BL, Harley MSS, 297.5, fos. 36-9; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.230 and *Relations*, I, p.271; *Foedera*, XV, pp. 265-72; Nicolson, *Leges Marchiarum*, pp. 56-71; *CSP Scot.*, I, 375, p.186. The treaty of Norham was ratified by Edward VI and Mary, Queen of Scots on 30 June and 14 August 1551 respectively. *Ibid*, I, 367-7, 379, pp. 186-7; *Foedera*, XV, p.273.

[2] *Ibid*, XV, pp. 265-72; Nicolson, *Leges Marchiarum*, pp. 56-71.

[3] *Foedera*, XV, pp. 265-6; Nicolson, *Leges Marchiarum*, pp. 58-60.

[4] *Foedera*, XV, pp. 266, 268-70; Nicolson, *Leges Marchiarum*, pp. 60, 65-70.

[5] *Foedera*, XV, pp. 266-8; Nicolson, *Leges Marchiarum*, pp. 60-5.

the appropriate Warden and tried in the place of the crime. Acts of revenge or retribution by an injured party were also discouraged through the annulment of the injured party's cause.

The treaty of Norham, however, was far from conclusive. The exact division of the Debatable Land still needed to be determined and was deferred to a later date due to the sensitivity of the subject. Lawlessness, violence and disorder on both sides, and across the Anglo-Scottish border continued to rage on, as did the almost incessant assembly of Border commissions attempting to resolve these problems. Indeed, Border disputes were the most prominent and consistent feature of Anglo-Scottish relations during the 1550s and, arguably, the bane of Marie de Guise's relations with England. As we shall see in Chapters IV and V, these disputes assumed great significance with the accession of Mary Tudor and, in particular, her marriage to Philip of Spain. The Borders became the *loci* not only of political intrigue and heightened tensions, but also where Valois and Habsburg power met *tête à tête*. The immediate task at hand, however, was to restore amicable relations between the 'auld enemies' in an exclusive Anglo-Scottish peace accord. In this, the treaty of Norham succeeded – albeit precariously.

The prominent role played by Henri in achieving this is beyond question. Archbishop Hamilton commented that 'be the kyngis mageste lawboris all the boundis of Scotland is als fre as thai war in ony of ouris days ... and gud redres and justice on the bordouris'.[1] The participation of Henri in these proceedings, as in the treaties of Boulogne and Binche, not only served to strengthen and consolidate his own position as

[1] 14 June 1551, *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxix, p.353.

the 'Protector' of Scotland and her queen, but also facilitated the establishment of French power in Scotland. Having eradicated all effects of the English occupation, and established peaceful relations with Charles V and Edward VI on the Scots behalf, Henri was now free to devote all his attention to his struggle with Charles V on the Continent. The year 1552 witnessed the rekindling of the Habsburg-Valois conflict and the simultaneous reduction of the French King's personal intervention in Scottish affairs. Henri did ensure, however, that French intervention continued in the person of Marie de Guise. Having declared Mary, Queen of Scots, of age on 12 December 1553, Henri then informed Châtelherault that his tenure as regent was over and that his successor would be the Queen Dowager.[1] Guise's formal assumption of the regency and government on 12 April 1554 marked the completion of the process establishing French power in Scotland. Although Guise was intent on securing the marriage of her daughter to the Dauphin and irrevocably binding Scotland to the interests of France, her ascendancy should not be seen as a foregone conclusion. After the cessation of hostilities with England in 1550, Guise returned to France for what many thought would be a permanent homecoming. It was only when she made her somewhat surprising return to Scotland a little over a year later that Marie de Guise's political destiny became clear, and it is to her ascent to power that we now turn.

[1] NLS, Adv.MSS, 33.1.9, f.1^{r-v}.

PAGE NUMBERING AS ORIGINAL

CHAPTER III

The Final Building Block: Marie de Guise's Ascent to Power in Scotland

While Henri II's protection justified and facilitated the establishment of French power in Scotland, the realisation of the dynastic provisions contained within the treaty of Haddington was nevertheless crucial to its ultimate and long-term success. This, in turn, depended on the Scottish political élite remaining favourable to the proposed dynastic alliance and to the idea of Franco-Scottish union. The Three Estates' renunciation of the treaties of Greenwich, however, demonstrated all too clearly that a ratified betrothal contract was in no way a guarantee that the marriage itself would actually occur. The question facing Henri, therefore, was how to ensure that it did - for only in the person of Mary Stewart could his vision of a Franco-British empire become a reality. It is within this wider context of European dynastic politics that Marie de Guise emerged as a leading figure intent on securing the marriage of her daughter to the Dauphin François and irrevocably binding Scotland to the interests of France. On 19 September 1550, Guise touched foot on her native soil and returned to France after an absence of twelve years.[1] The year she spent there constituted the watershed in her political career.[2] Her return to Scotland in 1551 marked the beginning of her campaign to assume control of her daughter's kingdom, supplant Châtelherault as Regent upon his stipulated resignation, and fulfil the dynastic and imperial objectives common to the houses of Guise and Valois.

---

[1] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 244, p.57.

[2] Marie de Guise arrived at Portsmouth on 22 October 1551. *Ibid*, 477, p.190; *APC*, III, p.364.

Marie de Guise's return to France is, perhaps, the most misunderstood event of her political career. This is largely due to the tendency of historians to presume that, because Guise eventually returned to Scotland to assume the regency in 1554, the main purpose of her trip was to promote her own political ambitions. But the failure of historians to explain adequately why Guise should wish to return to Scotland, given her daughter's situation in 1550, has resulted in weak and unconvincing analyses. In his *Historie and Cronicles of Scotland*, for example, Robert Lindsay of Pitscottie contends that Guise 'passit haistalie to France, and tuik certane of the nobillis of Scottland witht hir and thair procurit at the king of France and hir dochteris hand that scho might have the governance in the realme of Scotland thair to be as regent thairof'.[1] Similarly, John Lesley wrote in his *History of Scotland* that the principal purpose of Guise's visit was 'to prepair and fynd all moyens, be the quhilkis sho mycht obtane the governement of the realme of Scotlande and be regent thairof'.[2] But according to this exponent of the Catholic and Marian cause, this was not the only reason for her journey. Guise also went to visit 'the Quene hir dochter' and to 'congratulat and rejoise' with Henri of the fact that, as Mary was now living in France, Scotland was 'moir subject and bound ... as a prvnce joynit unto France be mariage'.[3] At the other end of the political and religious spectrum, John Knox focused on 'diverse of the nobilitie ... baronis and gentillmen of

---

[1] Pitscottie, *Historie*, II, p.112. Although he was a contemporary of Guise, Pitscottie's *Historie* should not be taken as an example of historical accuracy. Citing his kinsman and noted reformer, Patrick, 6th lord Lindsay of Byres as one of his influences, it comes as no surprise that his *Historie* unabashedly reflects his Protestant bias.

[2] Lesley, *History*, pp. 234-5. An apologist for Mary, Queen of Scots, the Bishop of Ross wrote this work in 1573 and clearly conveys his pro-Catholic inclinations.

[3] *Ibid*, p.234.

ecclesiasticall estait' who accompanied Guise to France and her 'promisses that thei should be richely rewarded for thare good service'.[1] What Knox implies is that she did so for political purposes, '... for schortly after hir returnyng, was the Governour deposed of the governement, ... and she maid Regent'.[2]

For their part, modern historians diverge only slightly as to the perceived 'political' objective of Marie de Guise's trip.[3] Marshall, Fraser, Tytler and Hay Fleming all contend that the primary purpose was to gain Henri's approval for her designs to supplant Châtelherault as regent,[4] while McKerlie is somewhat ambiguous in her statement that in order to conciliate the Scots, the French King 'did all in his power to promote the assumption of the Regency by the Queen Dowager on her return to Scotland'.[5] Financial exigencies have also been cited as a motivating factor. Marshall argues that Guise needed to augment her revenue and replenish her empty coffers to restore Scotland's prosperity, while Fraser asserts that she needed the money to buy the political support of her Scottish travel companions.[6] But it is Gordon Donaldson's contention that Marie de Guise's trip was fundamentally 'a brain-washing expedition',

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 241-2 and *History*, I, p.116.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, p.242 and *History*, I, p.116. Considering the author and the subject of his work, the history of the Scottish Reformation, it comes as no surprise that John Knox paints Guise in a less than favourable light.

[3] It should be noted that there is a general consensus of opinion amongst modern historians that familial considerations played a large part in Guise's decision to return to France. It had been two years since Guise waved her daughter off at Dumbarton, and twelve years since she last saw her son and other members of her immediate family. She did, however, receive a visit from her younger brother, Claude, duc d'Aumale, who had been sent to England as a pledge for the treaty of Boulogne in April 1550.

[4] Tytler, *History of Scotland* (Edinburgh, 1842), VI, pp. 50-1; Fleming, *Mary, Queen of Scots*, p.16; Fraser, *Mary, Queen of Scots*, p.77; Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, p.182.

[5] McKerlie, *Mary of Guise-Lorraine*, p.147.

[6] Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, p.182; Fraser, *Mary, Queen of Scots*, pp. 76-7.

whereby Henri bought the former pillars of the English and reforming cause with French pensions, that has been commonly accepted and adopted by historians such as Merriman and Lynch.[1] By inference, Donaldson also presumes that Guise had every intention of returning to Scotland to serve as Henri's principal agent and promoter of the French cause.

There thus appears to be a general consensus that Marie de Guise went to France with political designs to oust Châtelherault from his regency, thereby explaining her return in 1551. But are these interpretations accurate? Is it not possible that hindsight has provided historians with a convenient explanation as to the purpose of Guise's trip and, more importantly, why she returned at all? In fact, as we shall see, the evidence suggests that Guise returned to France with no political agenda for Scotland and with no intention of returning to her daughter's kingdom.

When news spread that Mary, Queen of Scots was leaving Scotland to become an absentee monarch, it was commonly assumed that Marie de Guise would accompany her daughter to France.[2] Contrary to the public's expectations, however, the Queen Dowager remained in Scotland to see the Anglo-Scottish hostilities brought to an end. In a revealing letter to her brothers informing them that the French army had arrived and the galleys were ready to transport 'la Royne votre niesse', Guise wrote that, 'Le Roy ne

---

[1] It is unclear as to whether Donaldson has coined this phrase himself, or is using a contemporary description of Guise's trip in *All the Queen's Men*, pp. 25-7, 106 and *James V-James VII*, p.80. Marcus Merriman agrees with Donaldson in that Marie de Guise went to France not only 'to see her daughter, but also to expose to a band of accompanying Scotsmen both their young queen and the power and the glory that was the France of her future husband. Merriman, 'Mary, Queen of France', p.36; Lynch, *Scotland: A New History*, p.208.

[2] See, for example, *CSP Spain*, IX, pp. 290, 571; *CSP Venice*, V, 544, p.230; and *CSP Scot.*, I, 274, 306, 336, pp. 136, 155, 169, for reports that Guise was to accompany, or had accompanied Mary to France.

me trouvera james manteuze, combien qu'y me sanble qu'à mon particulier l'on ne m'a pas for bien trétée [traitée], mès je ne léré [laisserai] à fair tout se quy sera an ma peuisanse [puissance]'.[1] Similarly in 1549/50, when asked if she intended to stay in Scotland much longer, Guise responded in reference to the war that, 'Jai ne suis envcouer prester dicy partir du long temper'.[2] Marie de Guise's commitment to the war effort is not entirely surprising. She had been instrumental in gaining Arran's support for the proposed dynastic alliance,[3] and her constant pleas for financial and military aid were largely responsible for France's intervention as a whole.[4] After the arrival of French reinforcements on 16 June 1548, Guise's interest in the war effort intensified. She took an active role in military affairs and, during her tour of the various military camps, roused the allied troops with words of inspiration.[5]

Yet, despite this extensive and personal involvement in Scotland's military affairs, Marie de Guise seems to have been intent on returning to France for good after the cessation of hostilities. Indeed, there is no plausible explanation as to why she would want to stay in Scotland after 1550, especially to pursue her own political ambitions, when her daughter's future seemed so secure. Mary, Queen of Scots was already living in her future husband's kingdom as an absentee monarch and destined to

---

[1] Marie de Guise to the Duc d'Aumale and Cardinal de Guise, 25 June 1548, Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 674-6 and *Relations*, I, pp. 173-5.

[2] Marie de Guise to Mlle. de Fourquevaux, 14 February 1549/50, NLS, MSS.2991, f.27.

[3] *CSP Scot.*, I, 73, 92, pp. 34-5, 42-3; *TA*, IX, pp. 127, 15, 4.

[4] See, for example, Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 674-6, 680-1, 694-7 and *Relations*, I, pp. 173-5, 179-80, 192-5; *Balcarres Papers*, I, cxlv, cxlvi, cxlix, lxxii, pp. 188-9, 189-90, 195-6, 242; *Maitland Miscellany*, I, 5-7, pp. 215-8.

[5] *Histoire de la guerre d'Ecosse, pendant les campagnes 1548 et 1549 par Jean de Beaugué* (Maitland Club, 1830), pp. 37-8, 126-33; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.188 and *Relations*, I, pp. 220-1; Lesley, *History*, pp. 212, 228.

become the Queen of France. Guise's prior involvement in Scottish politics, particularly in her struggle for power during the 1540s, was inextricably associated with the future welfare and authority of her daughter who, at that time, was still in Scotland.[1] If, like the treaties of Greenwich, the treaty of Haddington had stipulated that Mary was to remain in Scotland until she reached marriageable age, the argument that Guise had political designs in Scotland at the time of her trip to France would acquire some degree of credibility. Even less convincing is Marshall's romanticised notion that Guise returned to Scotland out of a genuine concern for the welfare of her late husband's subjects or her argument that Guise was on a mission from God to transform Scotland into 'a civilized, sophisticated, well-organized and modern state'.[2] There are too many discrepancies and unanswered questions found in these arguments that cast doubt over the perceived 'political' objective of Guise's trip to France and, more importantly, the reason for her return to Scotland. What is certain is that Marie de Guise's sojourn requires more investigation before any attempt to understand the reason for her return to Scotland in 1551, or her quest for power immediately thereafter, can begin.

***

In his letter to Edward VI requesting a safe-conduct for Marie de Guise, Henri stressed that the purpose of the Queen Dowager's voyage was 'pour nous visiter et la Reine d'Escosse notre petite fille'.[3] The timing of Guise's arrival to coincide with Henri's

---

[1] See, for example, Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, pp. 89-153; Donaldson, *James V-James VII*, pp. 63-71; *Scottish Correspondence*, pp. 1-252.

[2] Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, pp. 187-8.

[3] 23 July 1550, Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.234 and *Relations*, I, pp. 237-8. See also Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.235 and *Relations*, I, pp. 238-9; *ADCP*, pp. 605-6; *APC*, III, pp. 95-6, 101-2; and Jordan, *Chronicle*, p.43, for the letters authorising Guise's safe-conduct and the French galleys sent to transport her, and for details of Mary's proposed passage through England.

triumphant entry in Rouen also suggests that the purpose of her trip was largely celebratory in nature. The grandeur afforded to Guise upon her arrival at Dieppe and at Rouen, moreover, demonstrates the extent to which her own 'homecoming' was considered to be a cause for celebration in itself.

At the behest of Henri, great preparations were made for Marie de Guise's arrival in France. Montmorency informed the Queen Dowager that, because of Henri's 'grant contentment' with her management of Scottish affairs, 'vous serez la tres bien venue et trouverez une compaignye qui vous recevra et verra avecque tout l'honneur et contantement que l'on scauroyt penser'.[1] Indeed, it was later reported by the English ambassador in France that Guise's 'service in Scotland is so highly taken here, ... she is in this Court made a goddess'.[2] In August 1550, and just as Montmorency had promised, François, duc de Guise, and 'the flower of the nobility' congregated at Dieppe to await the arrival of Henri's esteemed guest.[3] So highly was she regarded that Henri not only desired her to be the godmother of his son, but even deferred the day of his christening to allow for her late arrival, which had become a source of great concern at the French court, 'lest recent storms should have driven her to the coast of Flanders'.[4] Unbeknownst to her welcoming committee, the reason for Guise's non-appearance was not adverse weather conditions, but the fact that she had not yet left Scotland. A dispute

---

[1] *Balcarres Papers*, II, li, p.71. See also SRO, SP13/70 for Henri's letter to Guise dated 4 September 1550, in which he writes how eagerly he awaits her arrival in France, and NLS, MSS, 3112, f.1, for the lodging arrangements he made for Guise and her daughter for his entry into Rouen on 1 October 1550.

[2] The words of Sir John Mason in a letter dated at Blois, 23 February 1550/1, *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 295, p.75.

[3] *Ibid*, 232, p.53; NLS, Adv.MSS, 19.1.25, f.6.

[4] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 232-3, 237, pp. 53, 57. Mary did not arrive in time to attend the christening ceremony for Louis.

between several of those who were to accompany her to France had delayed her departure.[1]

The altercation surrounded Huntly's arrest of William Mackintosh of Dunnachtane, a Highland chief whom he had charged with conspiracy against his life. According to Lesley, Huntly's subsequent forfeiture of Mackintosh's lands, in which he acted as the judge of his own cause being the lieutenant-general of the north, sparked a bitter reaction from Gilbert, 3rd earl of Cassillis, Maxwell, Sir George Douglas of Pittendreich and Sir James Douglas of Drumlanrig. Given the high profile nature of the dispute, Guise could not proceed to France until the feud between many of her travelling companions was settled. It was because of this that Marie de Guise decided to step in. As a result of the Queen Dowager's intervention, a truce was arranged whereby both sides agreed to a reduction in the process of forfeiture and the restoration of Mackintosh's lands to his son and heir.[2] As a mark of their truce, which was to last for the duration of their trip to France, each one 'uthalden his hand to the Quenis Grace, moder to our Soverane Lady, quhais Grace tuk every manis hand thair upoun'.[3] Having achieved an albeit fragile state of accord between her travelling companions on 5

---

[1] *RPC*, I, p.107; Lesley, *History*, p.235; *Scottish Correspondence*, ccliv, p.381 *n.*1; Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, p.185.

[2] Lesley, *History*, p.235.

[3] *RPC*, I, p.107. For Huntly, however, the issue was not closed. Lesley reports that after he departed for France, the Countess of Huntly ordered the execution of Mackintosh on her husband's orders. This, in turn, led to retributory action and the murder of Huntly's agent and sheriff-deputy, Lachlan Mackintosh on 30 September 1551. Attempts were also made on Huntly's life. After his return to Scotland, he complained to Guise 'off the greit tresone and dyssait devyssit for my slayng'. Although Huntly does not identify those who were planning to assassinate him specifically, he was more than likely alluding to associates of the Clan Mackintosh. *Scottish Correspondence*, ccliv, p.381 *n.*1; Lesley, *History*, p.381; A.M. Mackintosh, *The Mackintoshes and Clan Chattan* (Edinburgh, 1903), pp. 128-40.

September, Marie de Guise was finally ready to depart for France and set sail the next day.[1]

After much anticipation, Marie de Guise finally arrived at Dieppe on 19 September 1550. There, 'sho was honorable receaved' by her brother and his noble entourage, which included her 15 year old son, François, duc de Longueville.[2] From Dieppe, Guise then made her way to Rouen, where she was 'received with much honour'[3] at the French court six days later. Henri, in particular, welcomed Guise 'with gret effectione and fawour, shawin alswell to all the nobill men that was with hir and to hir self'.[4] More importantly, she was reunited with her daughter, Mary, Queen of Scots. Whilst her delayed departure from Scotland had caused her to miss the baptismal ceremony for the Valois prince,[5] she did arrive in time to participate in what was ostensibly the main purpose her journey - Henri's triumphant entry into Rouen on 1 October 1550.[6]

Unlike his previous entries at Lyons (1548) and Paris (1549), for example, Henri's entry into the Norman capital was more than a typical Renaissance fête

---

[1] If Sir John Mason's report of 10 September is accurate, Guise embarked for France from the port of Leith on Saturday, 6 September 1550. *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 237, pp. 54-5; C.R. Cheney (ed.), *Handbook of Dates* (London, 1991), Table 16, pp. 114-5.

[2] NLS, Adv.MSS, 19.1.25, f.6.

[3] Guise arrived at Rouen on 25 September 1550. Tytler, *Edward VI and Mary*, I, p.327; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 244, p.56.

[4] Lesley, *History*, p.236.

[5] On 28 August 1550, Mason reported that 'The christening is to be on Sunday next'. *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 233, p.53.

[6] Tytler, *Edward VI and Mary*, I, pp. 325-6; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 244, p.56; *CSP Spain*, X, pp. 181-2. For more on Henri's entry into Rouen, see Cloulas, *Henri II*, pp. 271-94; Merriman, 'Mary, Queen of France', pp. 35-41; M.B. McGowan, 'Form and themes in Henri II's entry in Rouen', *Renaissance Drama*, i (1968), pp. 199-252; and M. Wintroub, 'Civilizing the Savage and Making a King: The Royal Entry Festival of Henri II (Rouen, 1550)', *Sixteenth Century Journal*, xxix/2 (1998), pp. 465-94.

celebrating his accession and sovereignty.[1] It was also a vainglorious display of his accomplishments and a confident expression of things yet to come. Unsurprisingly, his recent recovery of Boulogne and emancipation of Scotland from the English were flaunted unabashedly as great 'military' victories. Following the ceremonious procession of Rouen's townspeople and local officials, a military parade with elaborate floats depicted Henri's apparent 'conquest' of Boulogne.[2] This ostentatious and rather pretentious display included replicas of the forts of Boulogne and the spoils, such as ammunition and prisoners of war, taken from the English during Henri's military campaign of August 1549.[3] This pretence of military victory did not escape comment from the English ambassador, Sir John Mason, who was overheard as saying that 'if it [Boulogne] had cost them nothing they might have had a triumph with good reason'.[4] But the recovery of Boulogne was not the only cause for celebration; so, too, was France's successful intervention in Scotland. Another military procession saw soldiers in Roman costume carrying banners signifying the Scottish strongholds defended and 'recouvert par la force francoise', followed by a chariot on which a winged Fortune held

---

[1] See, for example, I.D. MacFarlane (ed.), *The Entry of Henri II into Paris, 16 June 1549* (Binghampton, New York, 1982).

[2] The Imperial ambassador, Simon Renard, reported that, 'The townspeople made a good show; some were on horseback, and three ensigns of foot-soldiers equipped at their expense were present and took part in it. The clergy came first, then the burgesses, followed by the judges and the admiralty. The Rouen bailiffs and their officers, the tax collectors for the province, the officials of the parliament, ... followed in the succession'. *CSP Spain*, X, p.181; Cloulas, *Henri II*, pp. 276-8.

[3] Simon Renard also reported that, 'The last triumph were the forts of Boulogne; and with it the spoils taken from the English, ammunition and similar things, as a sign and symbol of the conquest of Boulogne. *CSP Spain*, X, pp. 181-2; Cloulas, *Henri II*, pp. 278-83; Merriman, 'Mary, Queen of France', pp. 36-9.

[4] *CSP Spain*, X, pp. 182-3.

an Imperial crown over a laurelled figure clad in armour representing Henri.[1] Directly behind this symbolic chariot rode the two figures who were destined to play a large part in the realisation of Henri's imperial ambitions: the Dauphin of France and Mary, Queen of Scots.[2]

Henri's entry into Rouen, therefore, was also a celebration of the treaty of Haddington and a bold statement of his imperial objective for a Franco-British empire. Just days before his entry, Henri wrote:

> ... j'ai pacife le Royaume d'Ecosse que ie tiens & possede auec tel commandement & obeissance que j'ai en France, ausquels deux Royaumes, j'en ay joint & vny vn autre, qui est Angleterre, dont par vne perpetuelle vnion, alliance & confederation, ie puis disposer, comme de moy-mesme, du Roy, de ses Subjets, & de ses facultez; de sorte que lesdits trois Royaumes ensemble se peuuent maintenant estimer vne mesme Monarchie.[3]

The success of the French King's plan for 'vne mesme Monarchie', however, ultimately depended on the marriage of Mary Stewart to François Valois and, in the interim, on a Scottish government favourable to an intimate Franco-Scottish alliance brought about by the proposed union of the crowns. In 1550, the question remained as to how this was to be achieved most effectively. Although the Scottish political élite had expressed their desire for the continued protection of the French King in April, this did not guard

---

[1] McGowan, 'Forms and themes in Henri II's entry into Rouen', pp. 213-4; Merriman, 'Mary, Queen of France', p.38.

[2] It should be noted that Henri's imperial ambitions extended beyond his vision of a Franco-British empire. At the entry, an elaborate performance was staged depicting France's projected victory over Portugal in Brazil. *CSP Spain*, X, p.182; Tytler, *Edward VI and Mary*, I, p.326; Williamson, 'Scots, Indians and the Empire: the Scottish Politics of Civilization, 1519-1609', *Past and Present*, 150 (1996), pp. 46-83; Wintroub, 'Civilizing the Savage', pp. 465-71; Cloulas, *Henri II*, pp. 283-8; Merriman, 'Mary, Queen of France', pp. 38-9.

[3] Henri II to the Grand Sultan of Constantinople, 27 September 1550, Ribier, *Lettres et mémoires*, II, p.288. See also the Cardinal of Ferrare's letter concerning Henri's alleged designs against the English, in which he writes that, 'estimant que quand vour seriz joints & vnis ensemble; qu'il vour seroit plus aise d'obtenir l'vn de l'autre quelque grace qu'autrement'. *Ibid*, II, p.250.

against the possibility that they could renege on the betrothal contract if, at a later date perhaps, they no longer felt the need for French protection.[1] In this respect, the Rouen entry may also be seen as an elaborate exercise in public relations directed at the Scots who were in attendance with Marie de Guise. The lavishness of Henri's entry into Rouen exposed them to the grandeurs of France and, by inference, to the benefits of a dynastic alliance. This message was accentuated by the prominence of Mary, Queen of Scots in the procession. Her position *alongside* the Dauphin, her future husband, was a recognition of her own sovereignty and projected an image of equality in the union of the crowns. The Scots could not fail to be impressed. Even the English and Imperial ambassadors were compelled to report that Henri's entry was so imposing, 'brave and so rich, ... the like ... hath not been seen'.[2]

But can such imagery and exposure to lavish ostentation be seen as an attempt to 'brainwash' the Scots? More to the point, was Marie de Guise's trip to France with a large retinue of Scottish notables intended to be 'a brainwashing expedition' whereby Henri could buy their support with French pensions? It is in answer to these questions that historians have used the composition of Marie de Guise's retinue to suggest that it was. Closer examination, however, reveals that there are serious flaws in this line of argument.

Issue must first be taken with the term 'brainwashing'. Implying a forced mental and physical imposition, if not complete control over, passive victims, one

---

[1] *RPC*, I, pp. 86-93.

[2] Tytler, *Edward VI and Mary*, I, pp. 325-6; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 244, p.56; *CSP Spain*, X, pp. 181-3.

would be hard pushed to describe the Scots as either passive or victims (especially in light of the activities of the 'assured Scots' during the 1540s), or Henri as one who was in a position to exercise complete control. Some credit must also be given to Henri and Marie de Guise. They needed only to refer to the inability of the English to keep these Scots 'assured' to realise that it would take significantly more than a one off trip to France to secure their long-term and unwavering support to the French cause. The prevalent use of the term 'brainwashing', moreover, implies that *all* the Scots who accompanied Marie de Guise to France, or were recipients of French patronage, were opposed to the Franco-Scottish alliance. Surely, Guise wished to be surrounded by friends and loyal supporters at an event that celebrated the failure of England's Scottish policy. Gordon Donaldson, in particular, has further exaggerated these misconceptions by placing undue emphasis on those Scots in Guise's retinue with reforming and/or anglophile sympathies. As will become apparent, Donaldson's analysis is as inaccurate as his interpretation is misleading.

The biggest hole in Donaldson's argument is that by relying on an extremely limited source base, he has failed to consider all the Scots who were in, or travelled to, France during Guise's visit. In *All the Queen's Men*, he presents as a complete list only those who are mentioned in the *Register of the Privy Seal*, as being the 'persons who accompanied Marie de Guise to France on her 'brainwashing expedition' in 1550'.[1]

---

[1] *RSS*, IV, 879, 880, 882, 883, 887, 893, pp. 146-9; Donaldson, *All the Queen's Men*, Appendix C, p.160. In *James V - James VII*, p.80, Donaldson also makes reference to those Scots listed in Knox's *Works*, I, pp. 241-2 and *History*, I, p.116. By examining a wider range of sources, however, it soon becomes obvious how many more Scots accompanied Guise to France or joined her later - not to mention the large number of Scots who were already there. Safe-conducts, correspondence, ambassadorial reports and receipts contained in *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, *CSP Scot.*, I, *APC*, *Scottish Correspondence*, *Balcarres Papers*, II, *RPC*, *RMS*, *RSS*, and NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.5 all contain references to these individuals which have been compiled in Appendix A.

Secondly, he has made no attempt to consider the political and religious loyalties of those who did *not* go to France, or whether these individuals were also the recipients of French patronage. And finally, Donaldson has completely disregarded the fact that French patronage had been distributed to the Scots since 1548. Needless to say, these oversights have resulted in an inaccurate and misguided analysis of the motivating factors behind Marie de Guise's return to France. By taking into account these oversights, it soon becomes apparent that the argument highlighting the positive correlation between those Scots with anglophile or reformist inclinations and those who received French patronage is a grossly simplified account based on incomplete evidence, preconceived notions and sweeping generalisations.

There is no doubt that Marie de Guise's retinue was as grand in its composition as it was diverse. As Appendix A shows, those Scots who travelled to France included great nobles, such as the Earls of Cassillis, Glencairn, Huntly, Marischal, Sutherland, and Lords Erskine, Fleming, Home, Maxwell and Somerville, as well as men of lesser status, such as Master John Douglas, parson of Newlands, Master David Henderson, vicar of Rossie, and the monks of Pittenweem priory. There were also many lairds in attendance, such as Sir Hugh Campbell of Loudon, Sir George Douglas of Pittendreich, Sir James Douglas of Drumlanrig and Sir William Murray of Tullibardine, in addition to James V's illegitimate sons, Lords James, John and Robert. Other visitors to France included John Spottiswoode, William Lauder of Haltoun, and representatives of the ecclesiastical estate, such as Robert Stewart, bishop elect of Caithness, Andrew Durie, bishop of Galloway, and John Roull, prior of Pittenweem and Blantyre. But one must not forget the countless other Scots in France, such as students, merchants, soldiers and

servants, who may have also joined in the celebrations at Rouen or attended the same pageants and fêtes as Marie de Guise and Mary, Queen of Scots throughout their French progress.[1] What is certain, and what Appendix A only begins to demonstrate, is that there were far more Scots in France during Marie de Guise's trip than we have been led to believe.

Just as the composition of those Scots in France was diverse in terms of social status, so too were their religious and political sympathies. Representatives from all across the religious and political divide seem to have been present. Marie de Guise's entourage included committed reformers, such as the Earls of Glencairn and Marischal; faithful adherents to the established Church, such as the earls of Huntly and Sutherland; and those who may be described as reforming Catholics, the most notable of whom were John Winram, subprior of St. Andrews, and Henry Sinclair, dean of Glasgow.[2] The religious sympathies of others are less certain. While many were ostensibly still Catholics, it is difficult to gauge the effects of the reform movement on particular individuals in 1550, let alone prove the sincerity of their religious convictions. Future membership in the Lords of the Congregation is, similarly, an unreliable indicator of Protestant inclinations in 1550 - widespread support for their rebellion came only when

---

[1] See Lesley, *History*, pp. 236-7, for an itinerary of Guise's movements after Rouen.

[2] As will be discussed in Chapters VII and VIII, the inclusion of reformers in Guise's entourage typifies her policy of accommodation towards the Protestants of her realm. By including them in what was essentially a celebration of the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance, she was inadvertently assuring them that the union of the French and Scottish Catholic crowns was not incompatible with the reform movement. I am extremely grateful to Linda Dunbar, whose research on John Winram reveals that, in 1550, he was fundamentally concerned about reforming the Church from within. L.J. Dunbar, 'John Winram *c.*1492-1582: A Study of his life and his role in the pre and post-Reformation Scottish Church' (unpublished PhD Thesis, University of Edinburgh, 1998), pp. 26-55.

France failed to respond adequately to England's military intervention on the side of the Congregation in February 1559/60.

Using political activities as a gauge of religious sympathies is equally problematic. Due to the ever-changing political scene in Scotland during the 1540s, political allegiances were not always consistent with religious convictions. Glencairn, Cassillis, Marischal, Sir Hugh Campbell of Loudon, Sir George Douglas of Pittendreich and Lord Maxwell, for example, had all been 'assured' Scots and/or were noted as having secret dealings with the English during their 'rough wooing' of Scotland. Publicly, though, these Protestant anglophiles opposed Somerset on political grounds, while others resented the aggression of Somerset's campaign and defended their kingdom against the English occupying forces. But, once again, it is necessary to point out the loyal supporters of the crown and friends of Marie de Guise who were also in France – the most notable of which was the Gordon contingency, including Huntly, Sutherland and James Ogilvy of Deskford and Findlater. There was also Sir Robert Carnegy of Kinnaird, John Beaton of Creich, John Sempill of Fowlwod and the Lords Erskine, Fleming, Home and Somerville, all of whom were either ardent supporters of the French and Catholic cause or just decidedly anti-English. From this brief analysis, it becomes clear that a considerable proportion of Scots who were in France during Marie de Guise's visit were neither anglophiles nor zealous reformers in need of 'brainwashing'. While it is true that, as an exercise in public relations, Guise's trip promoted the Franco-Scottish alliance by exposing the Scots to the grandeurs of France, particularly at Henri's entry into Rouen, Marie de Guise had been actively and effectively securing the support of the Scots since 1548.

In fact, it was Marie de Guise's shrewd and effective distribution of patronage that procured the greatest support for the Franco-Scottish alliance. Guise had seen first hand how offers of French gold and titles were instrumental in securing the political support of Arran for an alliance that directly contravened his own dynastic and personal ambitions in 1548. Henry, lord Methven, confirmed the important role patronage played in gaining the support of the Scottish nobility as a whole:

> The lordis that is greit men and uther lordis and barronis to be cherisit fawvorable wyth your graic and wyth all the prynsipall men of gud quhay that cummis out of France heyr, for the nater of this pepill is of this realm; first to be gentillie don to, and that tha persaif luf and gudnes in the kingis graice of France. And als this realm is pwyr and the greit men can na way beyr greit exspens of thar awn leving. All greit men in this realm has, and utheris efter thair greis has, folkis to sarve tham in thair awn bowndis but ony mone bot allanerly gud tretyng and greit houss to be haldin of daly exspens ordynar of meyt and drynk; bot to remayn lang out of thair awn boundis apon thair awn exspenssis thai ma na way do the samyn wythout tha be suppleyit and helpit be substance.[1]

The accuracy of Methven's description of the Scottish nobility, and how best to treat them, is effectively demonstrated by Patrick, earl Bothwell, whose loyalties during Somerset's occupation were highly suspect.[2] In a letter to the Queen Dowager, Bothwell reminded her of the 2,000 crowns promised to him, but as of yet not received. Knowing that Guise wanted him and Huntly to embark on a northern expedition, he

---

[1] *Scottish Correspondence*, clxxii, p.242.

[2] During the early 1540's, Bothwell was an ardent supporter of Marie de Guise and the French cause, staunchly opposing the English alliance and reformed doctrines. But a year after he apprehended the reformed preacher, George Wishart, in 1546, Bothwell's name appeared on the list of Scots who had bound themselves to Henri VIII and, in 1549, he signed a bond of fealty to Edward VI. Charged with treason in 1550, Bothwell fled Scotland and did not return until Marie de Guise allowed him to return in 1553. She subsequently granted him a remission for his treasonous activities and appointed him Lord High Admiral and Lieutenant of the Borders during her regency. *Ibid*, cxlv, cxlvii, ccxxiv, pp. 205-6, 207, 320, 321; *CSP Scot.*, I, 92, 353-5, pp. 42, 178; *APC*, II, p.318 and III, p.92; *TA*, IX, pp. 414, 430; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, f.31^{r}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.269 and *Relations*, I, p.279.

shrewdly pointed out that he had 'nocht at this tym money to mak my furnessingis as afferis me to do', and humbly requested that she 'support me with this said money quhilk my servand suld have ressavit in Frans, that I may ordour me tweching my passage according to your grace will'.[1] In other words, no money - no service. Although Bothwell had a valid point in that money was desperately needed to finance military campaigns, his comments nevertheless reflect the advantageous position the Scots found themselves in as pawns in the game of European dynastic politics. Money was being thrown at the Scots by both England and France in the hope of procuring support for their respective causes. As the objects of an international bidding war, the allegiance of the Scots ultimately came at a price.

The years 1548-1549, therefore, witnessed an active campaign by Marie de Guise and Henri to consolidate existing support and secure new support for the Franco-Scottish alliance through the distribution of patronage.[2] Methven's advice seems to have been well heeded by Guise, who was undoubtedly already aware of the important role patronage had to play for the success of France's military and dynastic objectives in Scotland. She was quite forthright in reminding Henri of his financial obligations and, in particular, of the necessity to '... entretienne les seigneurs de ce pays et leur donner des penssions pour les attirer de plus en plus a luy faire service'.[3] As a result, Scots of

---

[1] *Scottish Correspondence*, cxcv, p.284. See also Kerr and Macdowall's letter beseeching Guise to 'fynd sum lywing for ws in Scotland' in return, it is implied, for their loyal support and service. *Ibid*, ccviii, p.299.

[2] This policy was reported on extensively by the Imperial ambassador, St. Mauris, who informed Charles V of Henri's intent to bestow pensions and titles on the Scots in order to 'nourish their affection for France and turn them from friendship or understanding with the English'. *CSP Spain*, IX, pp. 302-4, 312, 361, 573.

[3] 25 February 1548/9, NLS, MSS.2991, f.67^{v}; *Fourquevaux Mission*, p.18.

all religious and political persuasions who were thought to give the best service received the 'luf and all gudnes in the kingis graice of France', predominantly in the form of annual pensions and/or cash gifts.[1] The Earl of Angus and his anglophile brother, Sir George Douglas of Pittendreich, for example, received pensions of 2,500 *francs* and 1,000 crowns,[2] while the decidedly anti-English Border laird, Sir Walter Scott of Buccleuch and Branxholme, was granted a pension of 400 crowns.[3] The Homes were also beneficiaries. John Home of Coldenknowes and Patrick Home of Broomhouse each received 500 *écus*,[4] and in return for relinquishing Home Castle to the French for the duration of the war, pensions of 2,000 *francs* and 500 *écus* were dispensed to Lord Home and his son, Alexander, who, as a calvary captain, also received 100 light horse.[5]

---

[1] NLS, MSS.2991, f.67^{v}; *Fourquevaux Mission*, p.18. Due to the nature and lack of sources, tracing the annual payments of these French pensions has, on the whole, been a fruitless task. Similarly, the receipts for payments that are available, such as those contained in NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, tend not to specify whether the cash received was an annual payment of a pension or a one off cash gift.

[2] SRO, E34/14/5-6. In 1514, Archibald, 6th earl of Angus, famously married his second wife, Margaret Tudor, elder sister of Henry VIII and relict of James IV. Although his allegiances often wavered, Angus was consistent in his animosity for Arran. He led the pro-English/reform faction with Lennox in the early 1540s, but fought for Scotland against Somerset, commanding the defeated army at Pinkie. His younger brother, conversely, was a staunch anglophile and was regarded as the leader of the English party in Scotland during the 1540s. Sir George's refusal to take part physically in Henry VIII's 'rough wooing' of Scotland, however, was not looked kindly upon by the English. They laid waste to his lands and took many members of his family captive, including his wife. He subsequently became a loyal servant to Marie de Guise.

[3] *Ibid*, SP13/14/12. A prominent Border laird, Sir Walter Scott of Buccleuch strongly opposed the Tudor-Stewart marriage and actively defended his kingdom against Somerset, despite suffering badly at the hands of the English. Scott was murdered in 1552 by partisans of his traditional enemies, the Kerrs of Cessford.

[4] 1 July 1549, NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, f.121.

[5] *Ibid*, MSS.2991, fos. 67^{v}-8^{r} and Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, f.123; *Fourquevaux Mission*, p.18. Guise's memo regarding the relinquishment of Home Castle and its furniture is dated 29 February 1548/9; Alexander's receipt for 500 *écus* is dated 1 July 1549.

Bonds of manrent and maintenance were also means through which Marie de Guise granted pensions to Scots.[1] Although many of these bonds have been lost, it is nevertheless significant that the majority of those entered into with the Queen Dowager date to the period 1548-1549 and, in what were usually only personal declarations of loyalty and service, contain financial provisions. Consistent with Guise's policy of patronage as a whole, royal bonds of manrent and maintenance were entered into with Scots of all religious and political persuasions – including committed reformers such as George Meldrum of Fyvie[2] and John Erskine of Dun,[3] and faithful adherents to the crown and Church, such as Robert Carnegy of Kinnaird,[4] Sir Walter Scott of Buccleuch and Branxholme,[5] his son and heir, William of Kirkurd [Kirkhope],[6] the Earl of Huntly[7]

---

[1] For more on this topic, see Wormald, *Lords and Men in Scotland: Bonds of Manrent, 1442-1603* (Edinburgh, 1985), especially pp. 168-373, for a comprehensive list of 'Bonds and Contracts of Manrent of Maintenance'.

[2] 14 March 1548/9, SRO, SP13/65. George Meldrum of Fyvie was a noted reformer and anglophile, although he did fight for Scotland at the battle of Ancrum (1545).

[3] 30 September 1549, *ibid*, SP13/68. A reformer whose political allegiances were not always consistent with his religious convictions, John Erskine of Dun opposed Somerset during his occupation of Scotland as the Constable of Montrose. For this, and his surrender of Montrose Castle to the French, he received the heartfelt thanks of Marie de Guise (*Spalding Misc.*, IV, pp. 48-51). In what would also seem to be a clash of interests after signing the 'First Band' of the Congregation in December 1557, Dun went on to negotiate Mary, Queen of Scots' marriage contract and help Guise to 'stay' the Congregation during the opening stages of their rebellion in 1559. In essence, Dun is a prime example of how Guise sought to accommodate her Protestant subjects and assure them that her dynastic policies, which aimed to unite the French and Scottish Catholic crowns, were not incompatible with the reform movement.

[4] 14 April 1548, SRO, SP13/59. A loyal servant to the crown, Carnegy entered into his bond with Guise in return for an annual payment of £100 from the rents and duties of Orkney and Shetland.

[5] 13 August 1548, *ibid*, SP13/61; Fraser, *Buccleuch*, II, pp. 187-8.

[6] 14 March 1548/9, SRO, SP13/65, 66; Fraser, *Buccleuch*, II, p.195.

[7] 14 April 1548, SRO, SP13/58. While being held in Newcastle after being taken prisoner at Pinkie, Huntly was promised that the French King would pay his ransom and award him the 'order of France [St. Michael]'. He was also promised an annual pension of £2,000 and investiture in one of the earldoms of Orkney, Ross or Moray, and provision for his kin and followers. By 13 February 1548/9, he had been made a knight of the Order of St. Michael (confirmed during his trip to France in 1550-1 and giving rise to his nickname 'Cock o' the North') and had been granted the lands and earldom of Moray. In the following May, Huntly also received a charter for the hereditary bailiary of all the lands in the bishopric of Aberdeen. *RMS*, IV, 299, 319, 366, pp. 71, 75, 84.

and his younger brother, Alexander Gordon, the postulate of Caithness.[1] Of these, Carnegy was granted an annual pension of £100, Dun a pension of 500 crowns per annum (in addition to a ruby and diamond for his relinquishment of Montrose Castle), Sir Walter Scott of Kirkurd the annual fees formerly received by the late John Melville of Raith, and Alexander Gordon an annual pension of £200 Scots.[2] In addition to her bond of manrent, Guise also entered into an obligation with Gordon to compensate him for his renunciation of the bishopric of Caithness in favour of Robert Stewart on 13 April 1548, and to ensure that he 'perpétuellement demeurer son [Henri's] fidel serviteur et subgect'.[3] As such, he was promised another benefice of the same calibre with an annual revenue of 500 merks Scots in either France or Scotland, an annual pension of 1,000 *livres* that Guise was to obtain from Henri and, in the interim, a pension of 400 *livres tournois* from the French King.

The effectiveness of bonds of manrent and pensions in binding the Scots to the interests of France, however, was limited. Patrick, lord Gray, for example, entered into his bond of manrent with Guise just weeks after he had sworn allegiance to 'take the King's [Edward VI's] part in his godly purpose'.[4] The 500 merks he received as an annual pension merely lined his pockets rather than persuading him to abandon the

---

[1] 17 January 1547/8, SRO, SP13/55. For a survey of Alexander Gordon's ecclesiastical career, see Donaldson, *Reformed by Bishops: Galloway, Orkney and Caithness* (Edinburgh, 1987), pp. 1-18, 54-5.

[2] SRO, SP13/59, 68 and E34/15/5; Fraser, *Buccleuch*, II, p.170.

[3] SRO, SP13/55; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 662-3; NLS, MSS.2991, f.68; *Fourquevaux* Mission, pp. 18-9; *Scottish Correspondence*, clxi-ii, clxxi, pp. 227-9, 239-40. Gordon entered into a bond of manrent with Guise on 17 January 1547/8 and an obligation on 14 April 1548.

[4] 26 March 1548, *CSP Scot.*, I, 148, pp. 71-2; SRO, SP13/56. Gray was a noted anglophile and reformer, who pledged to promote the Tudor-Stewart marriage and surrender Broughty Castle to the English. Two weeks after the battle of Pinkie, in which he did not fight, the said castle was relinquished to the English. *CSP Scot.*, I, 4, 129, 141, pp. 2, 60-1, 66.

English cause. On the other hand, Guise's bond of manrent with the earl of Sutherland seems to have been decisive in securing his support for the French cause.[1] Traditionally, Sutherland's religious and political sympathies were staunchly Catholic and anti-English. A clash with Huntly over the tacks of Moray, however, appears to have led him to consider switching allegiances, if only to force a favourable decision over the disputed earldom.[2] In his letter assuring Guise of Sutherland's loyalty, Methven hinted that his stepson's fealty was conditional on her granting 'the takkis of Mwrray ... to the erll of Sotherland nor till ony utheris'.[3] Such a decision would also, of course, be characteristic of Guise's 'greit wisdom ... don evir for the commoun weill persever'.[4] Methven's warning was further substantiated by reports that, despite his ostensible displays of loyal service,[5] Sutherland was actually 'of good mind to the King's godly purpose ... beand honestly entyrtaynit'.[6] It would appear, therefore, that Marie de Guise's bond of manrent, in which Sutherland was granted tenancy in the

---

[1] 20 February 1548/9, SRO, SP13/63.

[2] *Scottish Correspondence*, clxvi, clxx, ccxvlii, ccxvliii, pp. 234, 237-9, 365-7; Fraser, *Sutherland*, I, pp. 106-7 and III, pp. 110-3; *ADCP*, p.615. Although fragile, Marie de Guise's resolution of the Huntly-Sutherland dispute over Moray in 1552 is a prime example of her political acumen and ability to use land and ecclesiastical disputes to her political advantage. By satisfying both parties in the feud, Guise ensured that both Huntly and Sutherland remained in her service as opposed to one of them supporting Châtelherault out of disaffection.

[3] 1 June [1548], *Scottish Correspondence*, clxx, pp. 237-8.

[4] *Ibid*, clxx, p.238.

[5] In the same letter, for example, Methven informed Guise that Sutherland 'has promyttit to do his utir delygens in thay partis for gud rewill and concord, and to cause all the folkis be in armour and wappines and to sarve the auttorite', and later reported on 17 July 1548 that, 'This day the erle Sotherland and the northtland folk departis of Edinbrogh to the camp, - xvj^{c} men, and, as tha say, ma is cummand'. *Ibid*, clxx, clxxvii, pp. 238, 251.

[6] 28 August 1548, *CSP Scot.*, I, 323, p.163. In addition to Sutherland, Lord Gray cited Atholl, Crawford, Marischal, Rothes and Errol as potential supporters of the English cause and, therefore, suitable candidates for bribery.

earldom of Ross, was a direct response to his alleged wavering loyalties.[1] Whether Sutherland's temporary lapse of faith was genuine or simply a ruse for personal gain, Guise's bond nevertheless succeeded in its objective and secured the steadfast support of Sutherland for the French cause.

Despite the example of Lord Gray, Marie de Guise considered the distribution of French pensions to be an effective and necessary policy - albeit an expensive one. Initially, she covered the costs personally, but in 1549 informed Henri that she could no longer afford to do so. In her request for financial assistance, Guise revealed that a total of 'XXV mils francz par an' was needed to 'distribuer aux personnages qui ly pourrount faire le plus de service'.[2] The combined total of the pensions subsequently granted to the Queen Dowager (10,000 *francs*), Arran (6,000 *francs*) and Huntly (6,000 *francs*) suggests that they were intended for redistribution as opposed to personal gain.[3] But, according to Guise, offers of French gold were not the only means by which support for the Franco-Scottish alliance could be maintained or procured. The resources of France extended beyond the monetary to include the titular, and both Henri and Marie de Guise were astute enough to realise the importance and effectiveness of benefices and preferments.

The offer to Arran of a French duchy and investiture in the Order of St. Michael is, perhaps, the best example of how effective titles and honours were in securing

---

[1] 20 February 1548/9, SRO, SP13/63; Fraser, *Sutherland Book*, III, p.107.

[2] NLS, MSS.2991, f.67^{v}; *Fouquevaux Mission*, p.18. Fourquevaux agreed that 'XXV ou trente mils escuz' was needed from Henri, 'pour faire presentz aux seigneurs descosse tels que ladite dame [Guise] ly dira. Et ce faisant tout le Royaulme marchera arme a sa faveur et la devotion desdits seigneurs sera tout plus encline au service et bien du Roy'. NLS, MSS.2991, f.78v; *Fourquevaux Mission*, p.36.

[3] BN, MSS.f.fr.18153, fos. 66-8; *Fourquevaux Mission*, p.18 *n.*1.

support, or at least a resigned acceptance of the Franco-Scottish alliance.[1] Arran's sons were also beneficiaries. In 1548, for instance, Master James Hamilton was assigned a post in Guyenne worth 10,000 *francs* a year and 50 lances in an attempt to keep Arran 'well in hand, firm in his own devotion, and willing to foster it among the other Scottish lords'.[2] For his part, Arran was quick to take advantage of Henri's generosity and asked that he send two of his sons 'au college a Paris et laisne servir Roy'.[3] But, as in the case of pensions, Guise realised that this was a policy that needed to be extended to other Scots. In February 1548/9, she reiterated to Henri that by bestowing French titles on 'des principaux contes et seigneurs ... ilz ly seront plus fideles et affectiones serviteurs,' and proceeded to nominate the Earls of Cassillis, Erroll and Marischal, Lord Home and Sir George Douglas of Pittendreich for honours, in addition to the Earls of Angus, Argyll and Huntly, 'les trois chevaliers de lorder [of St. Michael]'.[4] Guise's recommendations were taken seriously by the powers that be in France. Following one such request, a son of Lord Erskine was soon provided to Cambuskenneth Abbey.[5]

Huntly, in particular, seems to have been earmarked for special recognition. Guise wanted it expressly known by Henri, of 'la conduite dudit seigneur de hontelay entout ce qui touche et concerne son service et quil sera tres bon quil plaise au Roy le

---

[1] Following the ratification of the treaty of Haddington, Arran, his heirs and successors were also issued with letters of naturalisation. Bonner, 'French Naturalization of the Scots', pp. 1109-11.

[2] *CSP Spain*, IX, pp. 303-4. As has already been discussed in Chapter I, Master James was also promised the hand of the Duke of Montpensier's eldest daughter in 1548.

[3] NLS, MSS.2991, f.74^{r}; *Fourquevaux Mission*, p.29.

[4] NLS, MSS.2991, f.67^{v}; SRO, E34/14/5; *Fourquevaux Mission*, p.18 *n*.b; Knox, *History*, I, p.103 and *Works*, I, p.217; *RMS*, IV, 299, 366, pp. 71, 84.

[5] NLS, MSS.2991, f.68^{v}; SRO, SP2/4, f.321; *Fourquevaux Mission*, p.20.

bien traiter doresnavant'.[1] As for his brother, Guise had not forgotten her obligation and implored Henri to provide Alexander Gordon with some 'benefice pour luy donner moyen de sentretenir et de continuer a ly faire le service quil a commence'.[2] Henri, however, did not need reminding as he had already taken steps to compensate Gordon for the loss of Caithness with the archbishopric of Glasgow. Alexander Gordon's subsequent provision to the see of Glasgow on 5 March 1549/50 would prove to be as controversial as it was short-lived.[3]

Upon the death of Gavin Dunbar on 30 April 1547, the vacancy of the prized western see of Glasgow became the source of great contention. No sooner had the bishopric become vacant than Châtelherault nominated his half-brother, James, to the post. Arran's recommendation of the Dean of Brechin, however, was flatly rejected by the Court of Rome – ostensibly because the Council of Trent had prescribed lawful birth as a prerequisite for all episcopal appointments.[4] But James Hamilton's rejection was due less to his illegitimacy than to his half-brother's over-riding dynastic ambition in the ecclesiastical sphere and, in particular, his exploitative use of the right of recommendation as Governor.[5] The papacy had become increasingly wary of Châtelherault's nepotistic recommendations - especially in light of the fact that a Hamilton was already the Archbishop of St. Andrews. The prospect of having

---

[1] NLS, MSS.2991, f.68^{r}; *Fourquevaux Mission*, p.18.

[2] NLS, MSS.2991, f.68^{r}; *Fourquevaux Mission*, pp. 18-9.

[3] *HBC*, p.313. For discussions on the controversy surrounding Gordon's provision to the see of Glasgow, see Hannay, 'Some Papal Bulls', pp. 25-41, especially pp. 32-5, and *Scottish Correspondence*, pp. 325-33.

[4] Hannay, 'Some Papal Bulls', p.34.

[5] Finnie, 'The House of Hamilton', pp. 8-17; Mahoney, 'The Scottish Hierarchy', pp. 52-3.

Hamiltons holding the two most important ecclesiastical offices in Scotland was daunting and less than ideal. As a result, the papacy was extremely reluctant to confer the archbishopric of Glasgow on James Hamilton, and used his illegitimacy to justify their refusal. When Alexander Gordon was provided to the see of Glasgow on 5 March 1549/50, Châtelherault was far from pleased.[1] Apart from the fact that his dynastic ambitions had been thwarted, Châtelherault was particularly upset because he had not recommended Gordon for the office. As the Governor and representative of the crown, it was his prerogative to nominate individuals for vacant ecclesiastical offices. In the case of Alexander Gordon, his right of recommendation had not only been eclipsed, but also sanctioned by the papacy:

> La Royne d'Escosse, soubsage, avec le Gouverneur du royaulme aultrefoys et nagueres traictantz des matieres concernantz le faict dudict royaulme et les libertez parcydevant a luy donnes par plusieurs papes, le tout par le conseil et consentement des grandement blessez et preiudiciez d'une telle quelle dicts provision de la personne d'un quidict Alexandre Gordoun a l'eglise de Glasgo, faicte par Notre Sainct Pere le pape.[2]

Châtelherault did not take being snubbed lightly. His immediate response was to place Gordon on a charge of barratry and to lodge a formal protest with Pope Julius III, requesting that an inquiry be launched to investigate the events surrounding Gordon's appointment.[3]

The French King seems to have been the principal agent behind Gordon's unorthodox provision to Glasgow. In this, he was naturally supported by 'les Guises'

---

[1] *HBC*, p.313.

[2] *Balcarres Papers*, II, 1, pp. 68-9.

[3] In his letter to the Queen Dowager dated at Peebles, 14 June [1551], Archbishop Hamilton reports that Gordon '... is cumit and stollying this benefice [Glasgow] and tharfor declarit ane barratour in this cuntre'. *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxix, p.352; Hannay, 'Some Papal Bulls', pp. 34-5.

and the papacy, but had also written to Châtelherault 'for his consent of Glasquha'.[1] The Queen Dowager, conversely, was in a difficult position - she could not publicly support Gordon's claim for fear of antagonising Châtelherault and directly challenging his authority as Governor. Although Gordon was keen to have Guise's unqualified support, he was nevertheless mindful of her situation. He reassured her that, 'I put nocht zour grace to pain in this mater in aventeur my lord governor suld think zour grace did him tort, and I salbe laitht to gyff my lord governor occasion but to do zour grace service as partenis him.'[2] And, in what must be seen as a clear indication that his provision to Glasgow was the result of French intrigue, he pledged that:

> ... gyff God pleis put me in that rome, I salbe als necessair and sedabill to the werk of zour grace as any of may estait borne in ony of the realmes. I sek bot ane lyf and to haif the moyance to serve zour grace and my natife princes zour grace dochter, and that I wer provydit therein, sall all I haif done be dischergit as the King and zour grace plessis.[3]

Yet, despite the high esteem with which both Henri and Marie de Guise held Gordon,[4] they were nevertheless reluctant to take steps to resolve the controversy surrounding his provision to Glasgow.[5] As a result, the papacy had no choice but to rule in

---

[1] *Balcarres Papers*, II, Appendix B, ii, pp. 309-10.

[2] *Ibid*, II, p.309.

[3] *Ibid*, II, p.309.

[4] *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxix, pp. 352-4. Archbishop Hamilton, in particular, objected to the favour shown by Henri and the Queen Dowager to Alexander Gordon, despite the latter's charge of barratry. This, he complained, has led to rumours that 'the kyngis mageste and your grace is nocht contentit with my lord [Governor] in na sort, ... for the kyngis mageste hes gevin to the said master Alexander the respeck to ane abbacy and hes relevit his pension and bakoris and hes don na thyng on the wther twart Glasg[o]w'. See also *Balcarres Papers*, II, p.309, where Gordon thanks Guise for the gracious reception he received from her family in France.

[5] See, for example, *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxvii, ccxxxvii, ccxxxix, pp. 323-4, 349, 352-4, in which James Beaton, abbot of Arbroath, Huntly and Archbishop Hamilton all wonder what Guise and Henri have decided to do about Gordon's provision to Glasgow. Beaton had a particular interest in the outcome of the Glasgow controversy as he had been gifted the temporalities of the archbishopric on 6 January 1549/50. *RSS*, IV, 533, pp. 89-90.

Châtelherault's favour and uphold his objections to Gordon's nomination. In a series of papal bulls dated 4 September 1551, James Beaton, the abbot of Arbroath, was provided to the archbishopric of Glasgow, while Gordon received the titular archbishopric of Athens, Inchaffray *in commendam* and other emoluments in Scotland, presumably in compensation for his loss of Caithness and Glasgow.[1]

The cessation of hostilities with England did not witness the end of the distribution of patronage, but rather saw its continuation – most notably during Marie de Guise's celebratory return to France. The fact that patronage had been distributed extensively throughout the period 1548-1549, and to Scots whose sympathies lay all across the political and religious divide, negates the suggestion that the purpose of her trip was exclusively to provide Henri with an opportunity to 'buy off' the Scots – particularly those, as Donaldson stresses, with anglophile and/or reformist tendencies.[2] Rather, the expedition to France provided Guise and Henri with an ideal opportunity to reinforce a policy that had been successfully implemented for the past two years.

Daniel Barbaro is largely responsible for the prevalent view that Marie de Guise's trip to France was for the sole purpose of buying the political support of the Scottish nobility.[3] In his report on England, the Venetian ambassador claimed that, 'the Queen Dowager, having gone to France, taking with her the chief nobility of Scotland, the King bought them completely; so that in France there is neither Scottish duke, nor lord, nor prelate, nor lady, nor dame, but who is munificently bribed by the most

---

[1] Hannay, 'Some Papal Bulls', p.35; *HBC*, p.313.

[2] Donaldson, *All the Queen's Men*, p.25 and *James V-James VII*, p.80.

[3] *CSP Venice*, V, 703, pp. 338-362; *APC*, III, p.111.

Christian King'.[1] Barbaro's observations and interpretation of events, however, are not entirely accurate. Firstly, there were many Scots of note who did *not* accompany Guise to France and, more importantly, who had been recipients of French patronage during 1548-1549. The most obvious example of this is, of course, Châtelherault. Someone had to stay and govern the realm, although it was reported that d'Oisel wielded almost sovereign authority during the Queen Dowager's absence.[2] Other recipients in this category included the Earls of Angus and Argyll, Sir Walter Scott of Buccleuch and John Erskine of Dun.[3] An examination of the patronage that was distributed in France reveals further inconsistencies in the argument that Guise went to France so that Henri could buy the Scots off completely.

Commenting on the distribution of patronage in France, Knox wrote that, 'What thei [the Scots] receaved we can nott tell; but few maid ruse at thare returnyng'.[4] Whilst it is impossible to determine what every member of Guise's retinue received in the form of patronage, if anything at all, it is certain that this policy was continued in France and, more importantly, benefited Scots who were not all pillars of the English and reforming cause. Moreover, several of them had already profited from the 'luf and all gudnes in the kingis graice of France' prior to their journey.[5] Cassillis, Huntly, Marischal, Fleming, Lord James Stewart, commendator of Kelso and Melrose, James Ogilvy of

---

[1] *CSP Venice*, V, 703, p.361.

[2] *CSP Spain*, X, p.559.

[3] SRO, E34/14/5, E34/15/5, SP13/14/12 and SP13/68; NLS, MSS.2991, f.67^{v}; *Fourquevaux Mission*, p.18; *RMS*, IV, 299, 366, pp. 71, 84.

[4] Knox, *Works*, I, p.242 and *History*, I, p.116.

[5] See Appendix A. Patronage was also distributed by the Scottish government in the form of gifts of escheat, non-entry and grants of crown land etc.

Deskford, Gavin Hamilton, commendator of Kilwinning Abbey, John Beaton of Creich and Patrick, Master of Ruthven, all received pecuniary benefactions in France.[1]

Nominations to ecclesiastical offices were also on offer in France. Lord John Stewart, commendator of Coldingham, for example, was recommended to the 'abbacie of Flawgeny [Flavigny]' and his half-brother, Lord James, commendator of St. Andrews, to another.[2] Indeed, the strong contingent of James V's bastard sons in France suggests that they were targeted for support in particular. Rumours of Lord James' double dealings with England may have also played their part - especially if he influenced the political and religious loyalties of his half-brothers.[3] In addition to their pensions and ecclesiastical nominations, it is significant that both Lord James and Lord John were also granted letters of legitimation on 7 February 1550/1.[4] But the example of Lord John's nomination to Flavigny highlights another feature of Guise's policy of distributing patronage - the granting of 'empty promises'. Indeed, Guise would later be forced to rely on this technique during her negotiations with the Congregation in the hope that she could buy enough time for reinforcements to arrive from France. This is not to say that all of her promises were empty from the outset, but there is some evidence to substantiate Sir John Mason's rather exaggerated claim that this was a deliberate policy to keep the Scots impoverished with 'the intent that, being brought to

---

[1] NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, fos. 143, 146, 140, 142, 138, 136, 150, 148, 151; *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxv, pp. 345-7.

[2] *Ibid*, ccxxxiii, p.343; Donaldson, *James V-James VII*, p.80.

[3] Along with other noted agents such as Bothwell and the zealous reformers, John Cockburn, laird of Ormiston, and James Henrison, Lord James received several payments from the English during the period 1550-1552. *APC*, III, pp. 103, 347 and IV, pp. 103, 190.

[4] *RMS*, IV, 565, p.125; *RSS*, IV, 1064, p.174.

extreme need, they may be compelled upon hope of relief, like slaves to hang upon the Queen'.[1] It is in this respect that the example of Lord John Stewart is most revealing. Despite having been nominated for the ecclesiastical office, Lord John found he could not come into possession of the abbacy of Flavigny because the:

> ... sowme is gret that I man gif for my bullis ... and it is nocht wnknawne to your grace [Guise] that I have gottin na proffet of my benefice in Scotland sen the begynnyng of the weiris. And be ressone that I can nocht gett possesioun of the benefice that the kyngis grace hes vouchasit apoun me ther will na bancquier tak on hand to furnis the prowisioun of my bullis, for I have na othir way to recompence the bringis hayme of my provisioun bot allanerlie the dewtie of my said benefice. Heirfor I beseik your grace to laubour affectuousslie at this tyme that I may have ane commissioun of the kyngis grace to put me in possessioun, otherwayis I will gett na credett of na bancqueir for the expeditioun of my bullis for I have na othir esperance bot in your grace alanerlie.[2]

Just as the English ambassador had described, Lord John was completely dependent on the help of Guise and Henri to escape a predicament that they themselves had created, perhaps unintentionally. In such a state of desperation, Lord John had no choice but to remain loyal to those who had the power to determine the fate of his existence.

To all intents and purposes, the continuation of this policy during 1550-1551 seemed to be effective in securing support for the French cause - at least in the short-term. In return for his pension of 'ij thousand iiijcc frankis', for example, Glencairn promised Guise that 'Quhat service your grace plesis comman me vith in Scotland let me be advertyst and it salbe reddy don vith sic gud vill as I am able to do'.[3] Maxwell is another case in point. Upon hearing the news that, in addition to the 'xij hunder frankis,

---

[1] Tytler, *Edward VI and Mary*, I, pp. 354-5.

[2] *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxiii, p.343.

[3] *Ibid*, ccxxxvi, pp. 347-8.

... ye [Guise] appontid to gewe me', he was to receive 'viij^{c} frankis mair' and 'be ane of the gentilmen in the [ki]ngis chalmer,' Maxwell was not only 'mair adettid to serve [the] king and you,' but also 'redy to serve ... quhair it sall pleis the king or you to command me ... for I sall reserwe nathing to my parte bot only my allagence to quene my soverane'.[1] Marie de Guise soon took advantage of Maxwell's offer of ready service and, in February 1550/1, sent him back to Scotland on a special mission to join Châtelherault and d'Oisel on the Borders, where tensions with England were mounting.[2]

Time would tell how effective patronage would be in securing and maintaining long-term support for the proposed dynastic alliance. Glencairn, for example, was the first magnate of significance to support the Congregation's rebellion openly and militarily in May 1559, and was followed soon after by Argyll and Lord James Stewart. In the mean time, offers of French pensions, titles and offices were eagerly accepted by the Scottish nobles who profited immensely from their position as pawns in the game of European dynastic politics. It was exactly because of their position as pawns that the Scots could afford to change their loyalties if the price was right. If patronage was going to be an effective policy, therefore, it needed to be a continuous and long-term endeavour. The fact that French patronage had predominantly taken the form of annual pensions was one way of providing for this, but actually making these yearly payments was another matter altogether. Lord Homes's pension of 2,000 *livres*, for example, was in arrears by 1556.[3] When it had been determined that she would return to Scotland,

---

[1] *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxviii, pp. 349-51.

[2] Chapter II, pp. 69-71.

[3] 'MSS of the Duke of Athole and Earl of Home', *HMC Twelfth Report*, Appendix viii, p.184.

Marie de Guise was adamant (even to the point of falling out with Henri) that she had with her a considerable sum of money presumably for this purpose.[1] Because of this, her trip to France cannot be seen as a one off attempt to buy the Scots, but rather as the continuation of a policy that had been implemented since 1548 and would continue after 1551. Neither should it be assumed that this policy was directed exclusively at those Scots whose political and religious loyalties clashed with the interests of France, or as part of an elaborate brainwashing scheme. The composition of those who were recipients of French patronage and/or were part of Guise's retinue in France clearly indicates that favour was shown to Scots all across the religious and political spectrum. By taking into account these considerations, Guise's trip takes on a far less sinister tone. The timing of her return to coincide with Henri's entry into Rouen, which was a celebration of Scotland's liberation, Mary Stewart's dynasticism and the new Franco-Scottish alliance, suggests that the ostensible purpose was rather more festive in nature.

But could the distribution of patronage alone, or a trip whereby a select group of Scots were exposed to the grandeurs of France, ensure the long-term support of the Scots to the French cause or guarantee that the Franco-Scottish union of the crowns would become a reality? What was needed in Scotland was an administration that was not only willing to promote, but also act in the interests of France and, more importantly, secure the marriage of Mary, Queen of Scots to the Dauphin. The question remained as to whether Châtelherault could be relied upon to act in such a capacity. Matters pertaining to the government of Scotland, therefore, were of extreme

[1] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 305, 341, pp. 79, 103.

importance to Henri if his imperial objectives had any chance of being realised. It is in this respect that Marie de Guise's trip to France might better regarded as a 'brainstorming' rather than a 'brainwashing' expedition. Now that the Anglo-Scottish hostilities had ceased, France's policy in Scotland not only needed to be determined, but also who was going to implement this policy with the greatest chance of success.

***

By early September, it was clear that Scottish affairs of state were going to be a major topic of discussion with the arrival of Marie de Guise in France. When asked about the liberation of the Scots who had been taken at the siege of St. Andrews Castle (30 July 1547),[1] Henri responded that 'he would defer the question of their full liberty till the arrival of the Queen Dowager, when that and all matters connected with Scotland should be adjusted'.[2] There was much 'adjustment' needed with respect to Scotland. Châtelherault had agreed to resign his regency when Mary, Queen of Scots reached her age of majority and the question at hand was who was going to replace him and, as it would later emerge, when. The question of government in Scotland, therefore, was the

---

[1] Bonner, 'The Recovery of St. Andrews Castle in 1547: French Naval Policy and Diplomacy in the British Isles', *EHR*, cxi (June 1996), pp. 578-98; C. Edington, 'John Knox and the Castilians: A Crucible of Reforming Opinion?', in Mason (ed.), *John Knox and the British Reformations* (Aldershot, 1998), pp. 29-50.

[2] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 238, p.55. At the urging of Marie de Guise, Henri released the 'Castilians' who had been transported to prison in France on 7 July 1550. In the words of Knox, they were shortly thereafter, 'called to Scotland, thare peax proclamed, and thei thame selfis restored to thare landis, in dyspite of thare ennemies. And that was done in hatterent of the Duck, becaus that then France begane to thrist to have the regiment of Scotlan in thare awin handis ... Thare rested a nomber of commoun servandis yitt in the galayes, who war all delivered upoun the contract of peace that was maid betuix France and England, after the tackin of Bullon [Boulogne]; and so was the haill cumpany sett at libertie'. Knox, *Works*, I, p.233 and *History*, I, p.111. The release of all the hostages and prisoners was a lengthy process and, although the treaty of Boulogne had stipulated their liberation, it was still an issue that had to be specifically addressed in the negotiations for the Anglo-Scottish treaty of Norham. For additional references to the release of the 'Castilians' at this time, see *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 215, 221, 224, 314, pp. 48, 50-1, 83-4; *APC*, III, pp. 95, 205; and Jordan, *Chronicle*, p.38.

subject of great consultation during Guise's visit, as, indeed, she had expected it to be.[1] Henri and his ministers had been eager to hear Guise's thoughts and proposals on this matter as early as May 1550. In his flattering letter to Guise, Montmorency wrote:

> Quant au surplus des affaires dela [Scotland], il est impossible de mieulx les acheminer que vous faictes, dont ledict Seigneur [Henri] a grant contentement, les voyant disposees pour venir au poinct qu'il desire et s'asseure qu, avant vostre partement de la pour venir icy, vous y pourvoyerex de sorte que vous en serez tous deux en repos; ... M'asseurant que au retour de Sieur de Bresze, mous scaurons la deliberation que vous aurez sur ce prinse.[2]

Whether Guise's proposals included standing for the regency herself is unknown, but the matter soon became the subject of great debate in France.

According to Lesley, discussions pertaining to the government of Scotland took place at Blois, where the French Court, including 'the Quene of Scotlande and the Quene douarier hir moder, and the nobill men of Scotlande', took up residence for the winter season after Henri's entry into Chartres on 20 November 1550.[3] It was at this time, Lesley contends, that:

> ... the Quene douarier did oppin the caus of hir cuming into France to the King and his secreit counsallouris, be the adwyse of the duike of Guise and Cardinall of Lorane hir brethir, principallie for advancing of hir to the goverement of the realme of Scotland, quhilk was thocht verrey guid, and approved by the King and his counsall, quha referrit the ordering and dres of the hoill matter principallie to the Quene hir self, specialie quhat was to be observed to draw the governement of the realme furth of the Duik of Chattillirailt handis without ony tumult.[4]

---

[1] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 255, p.61.

[2] *Balcarres Papers*, II, li, pp. 70-1.

[3] Lesley, *History*, pp. 236-7; McKerlie, *Mary of Guise-Lorraine*, pp. 146-7.

[4] Lesely, *History*, p.237. Similarly, Lindsay contends that Guise lobbied for the government of the realm, 'because scho saw the realme nocht weill gydit at that tyme, ffor scho saw nothing bot awarice and gredienes in the place of Iustice, nor nothing sought ffor the weillfair of the realme nor for the profeit of hir dochter that was to succeid thairto. The king of France and consall heirand this grantit immedeatlie to hir desyre, that is to say [to] be regent of Scotland and he to tak on him to satisfie the governour ffor his goode will and tyttill thairof and that he did schortlie'. Pitscottie, *Historie*, II, pp. 112-3.

At Caudebec on 3 November 1550, Sir John Mason reported that there had been 'great consolation [sic] as to Scotland, the French desiring to keep the Queen Dowager in France, and to appoint a Frenchman there, to which the Scots will not agree'.[1] Clearly, Marie de Guise was not the prime candidate to succeed Châtelherault as Regent, nor was it she to whom the idea of a French gentleman acting as viceroy was anathema, but the Scots themselves. This may be due to the fact that the Scottish political élite had looked to Guise, and not Châtelherault, for the restoration of law and order, having commissioned her on 22 April 1550 to provide for the 'execution of justice and [the] ordouring of the cuntre'.[2] As Queen Dowager and Queen Mother, Guise was a familiar and respected figure in Scotland, who had also established herself in recent years as a direct channel to the resources of France.

Neither had Marie de Guise's political acumen gone unnoticed in France. Upon his arrival in Scotland, for example, the French captain, M. de la Chapelle de Biron, commented that:

> ... sans le bon ordre et conduicte que y mect la Royne le tout yroit mal. Maiz en ma vie ne congeuz prince ne princesse, veu ces affaires, s'i scavoir mieulx gouverner. Elle est bien aymee en ce pays et y a beaucoup de gentilzhommes qui m'ont dict que, si se n'estoit pour l'amour d'elle, ne feroient aucune chose pour monsieur le Gouverneur.[3]

From a French perspective, the fact that Guise dynastic ambition was synonymous with Henri's dynastic and imperial objectives ensured that the Queen Dowager would serve French interests if she returned to Scotland. The Scots' apparent preference for Guise,

---

[1] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 255, p.61.

[2] *RPC*, I, p.90.

[3] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 659-60. For similar comments on Guise's management of Scottish affairs, see *Balcarres Papers*, I, cxxxv,cxlv, lxiii, pp. 179, 188-9, 239 and II, li, pp. 70-1; and *Maitland Misc.*, I, 4, pp. 214-5.

moreover, would theoretically render them more amenable to the implementation of Franco-centric policies by her as opposed to a French stranger, who might adversely be seen as a symbol of French hegemony. This was something d'Oisel had come to understand first hand. Despite having been 'laisser ... chef pardela' by Henri during the Queen Dowager's absence, d'Oisel considered the return of Guise to be imperative for the ultimate success of Henri's objectives.[1] Guise's absence, he declared, 'ne pourra porter aucun fruit mays au contraire beaucoup de domaige aux affaires du Roy et aux siens, qui sont une mesme chose'.[2] For all parties concerned, therefore, Marie de Guise emerged as the best candidate to return to Scotland to assume the regency from Châtelherault and govern Scotland during her daughter's majority. As such, it was hoped that she would secure the marriage of Mary, Queen of Scots to the Dauphin, and complete the establishment of French power in Scotland with the least amount of resistance from the Scots.

The decision surrounding Marie de Guise's return to Scotland appears to have been made at Blois during the winter months of 1550/1. This would seem to be confirmed by the disparaging and foreboding tone of Sir John Mason's report on 23 February:

> The Scottish Queen desireth as much our subversion, if it lay in her power, as she desireth the preservation of herself, whose service in Scotland is so highly taken here, as she in this Court made a goddess. Mons. de Guise and M. d'Aumale, and the Cardinal of Lorraine, partly at her egging, and partly upon an ambitious desire to make their house great, be no hindrance of her malicious desire.[3]

---

[1] *Balcarres Papers*, II, xlix, p.66; *CSP Spain*, X, p.339.

[2] *Balcarres Papers*, II, lvii, p.79.

[3] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 295, p.75.

Such noteworthy praise had not been afforded to Guise since her arrival in France, and the fact that Mason felt it necessary to comment on it, albeit negatively, suggests that something was afoot. Guise, however, seems to have been reluctant to return without some form of personal compensation and, more importantly, a guarantee that her administration would be supported financially by Henri and the coffers of France. In March 1550/1, therefore, Marie de Guise received an annual pension of 50,000 *francs* for the maintenance of her estate, and an additional 50,000 *francs* 'more to bestow as she shall see cause'.[1] But by May, it was almost with glee that Sir John Mason reported that, 'The Dowager of Scotland maketh all this Court weary of her, from the high to the low, such an importunate beggar she is for herself and her chosen friends. The King would fain be rid of her'.[2] The cause of this alleged ill feeling was the money promised by Henri, who wanted Guise to return to Scotland 'upon a promise of payment'. Guise, however, was insistent that she 'have the money with her'.[3] The Queen Dowager knew all too well the importance of money in procuring the support of the Scots. She was astute enough to realise that the mere promise of money would have a limited effect in achieving her dynastic and political objectives, let alone pay the annual instalments of the French pensions she and Henri had been so free in distributing throughout 1548 and 1549.[4]

---

[1] 18 March 1550/1, *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 305, p.79.

[2] *Ibid*, 341, p.103.

[3] *Ibid*, 341, p.103.

[4] NLS, MSS.2991, fos. 67^{v}, 78^{v}; *Fourquevaux Mission*, pp. 18, 36.

Despite the wishful thinking of Sir John Mason, Henri and Marie de Guise's difference of opinion over money did not result in a permanent rift.[1] The Queen Dowager and her Scottish entourage remained the honoured guests of Henri, and spent the following spring and summer travelling with him to places such as Tours, Angers and Nantes.[2] Only at the end of her sojourn did Guise part company with the French Court in order to visit her family at Joinville before she embarked on her journey back to Scotland.

***

In September 1551, thirteen months after her departure for France, Marie de Guise prepared to return to her adoptive kingdom at the dawn of a new era of peace.[3] Henri's control over Scotland's military security and diplomatic affairs had successfully ended the Anglo-Scottish conflict and resulted in Scotland's comprehension in the treaty of Boulogne, and the treaties of Binche and Norham. While this was the cause for great celebration in France, Marie de Guise's homecoming was marred by personal tragedy. In April 1551, an assassination plot to poison Mary, Queen of Scots was uncovered[4] and the following September, her son died in her arms at Amiens.[5] Shortly after the

---

[1] Marie de Guise's trip to France is an area that requires much more investigation, especially in the archives of France. The sources I have consulted for the purpose of this thesis, for example, do not reveal whether Guise actually left with the promised 50,000 *francs* or not. In the French King's accounts for 1554 it is recorded that an annual payment of 60,000 *livres* was granted 'a la Royne d'Écosse', but it is unclear as to whether this is a reference to Mary, Queen of Scots or her mother. Bouillé, *Ducs de Guise*, II, Appendix vi, p.592.

[2] Lesley, *History*, p.239.

[3] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 449, p.174; *APC*, III, pp. 364, 397; Jordan, *Chronicle*, pp. 80, 84, 89; Lesley, *History*, pp. 239-40.

[4] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 249-60 and *Relations*, I, pp. 260-70; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 332, 371, pp. 97-8, 121; Jordan, *Chronicle*, p.62. Robert Stewart's motives are uncertain. For more on his plot to poison the Queen, see Merriman, 'James Henrisoun', pp. 100-1

[5] NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.1, f.90.

internment of François, Guise made her way to Dieppe in order to await passage across the Channel.

The decision to return to Scotland through England was a shrewd political move by the Queen Dowager - though reports of Flemish ships along the coast and the desire to avoid a long and potentially rough sea voyage also made this decision a practical one.[1] A 'state' visit through England would provide Marie de Guise with an ideal opportunity to launch her political campaign officially and promote herself as a political force on the international stage. Her visit also served the interests of France. The Habsburg-Valois rivalry was on the verge of erupting into a full-scale war in Italy, and Henri was particularly concerned to maintain favourable Anglo-French relations in the hope that England would remain a neutral party in the conflict.

Landing at Portsmouth on 22 October 1551, Marie de Guise officially began her royal progress through England.[2] As in France, she was honourably received and lavishly entertained by the flower of the English nobility. Upon hearing that she had arrived, Edward VI immediately issued orders for the 'honourable entertainment' of the Queen Dowager, who was not only to be greeted by members of English nobility, but escorted all the way to Borders where she would eventually pass into Scotland.[3] The likes of the Dukes of Northumberland and Suffolk, the Earls of Warwick and Wiltshire, the Marquis and Marchioness of Northampton, the Countess of Lennox and a plethora of other ladies and gentlemen were all on hand to welcome Guise who, on 4 November,

---

[1] Pimodan, *La Mére des Guises*, p.143.

[2] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 477, pp. 190-1; Jordan, *Chronicle*, p.89.

[3] BL, Harley MSS, 290.2, fos. 6-8; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 477, pp. 190-1; Jordan, *Chronicle*, pp. 89-94.

'was most honourably and princely received and welcomed by the King's Majesty' at Westminster.[1] That evening, Guise dined with Edward, who took great pains to record the most banal details of the banquet, down to the serving staff and number of sewers [2].[2] 'After dinner, when she had heard some music,' Edward noted that he then 'brought her to the hall and so she went away' - but not before receiving a diamond ring and two nags as a gift from the king the next day. Unfortunately, Edward's journal gives no indication as to whether affairs of state were discussed, but based on the elaborate reception Marie de Guise received throughout her journey, and the composition of the party which escorted her from Portsmouth to Berwick, the Queen Dowager was deemed a very esteemed and important guest.

Marie de Guise finally returned Scotland in late 1551. Met by the Earl of Bothwell, Lord Home 'and utheris barronis apoun the bordouris', Guise was immediately conveyed to Edinburgh, 'quhair the Governour receaved hir with gret honour and fawour'.[3] But for Châtelherault, the return of the Queen Dowager was anything but a cause for celebration; it marked the beginning of the end of his political career. Rumours had already begun to circulate that measures were being taken in France 'to prevein the tyme of the governouris office afore the quenis cuming to perfite age'.[4] Although Châtelherault denounced such rumours publicly, the fact that he felt it necessary to remind Henri and Guise of their 'promis and appoyntment' portrays a man

---

[1] *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 477, pp. 190-1.

[2] Jordan, *Chronicle*, pp. 93-4.

[3] Lesley, *History*, pp. 240-1.

[4] *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxiv, p.344; *CSP Spain*, X, pp. 339-40.

on the defensive.[1] This is further substantiated by his intention to send 'the Abbé [de Villouin] towards his Majesty, to ascertain his intentions regarding the administration of the country after the Queen's minority expires'.[2] While the return of Marie de Guise clearly revealed who was designated to succeed Châtelherault as regent, it was less clear when this transfer of power would actually occur, as Mary, Queen of Scots' perfect age was conveniently brought into question by the French. But reports that Châtelherault had openly declared that 'while he lived there should be no other Regent in Scotland than he', indicated that it was not only a question of when, but if Châtelherault would resign as regent at all.[3]

At the behest of Henri, the Parlement of Paris considered the question as to when exactly Mary, Queen of Scots, reached her age of majority.[4] Specifically, was it during, or upon completion of her twelfth year? After examining many historical and legal precedents, the Parlement of Paris determined that at any time *during* her twelfth year, Mary, Queen of Scots could officially assume control of the government of Scotland, and her kingdom 'administré par l'advis et conseil de tels personnages qui seront à ceste fin esleuz selon le bon plaisir due Roy'.[5] With this piece of legislation behind him

---

[1] *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxiv, p.345.

[2] *CSP Spain*, X, p.585. In response to this news, Marie de Guise advised Châtelherault to 'put off the Abbé de Villouin's journey until a more suitable season', while d'Oisel reminded him that it was his duty 'to endeavour to enable his Majesty to rest secure and tranquil. In the meantime he might be sure he would have to do with a King so good, sincere and virtuous that as long as the Regent should serve him and the Queen Dowager loyally, he might confidently look forward to great favour and advancement'. If Châtelherault persisted, Guise and d'Oisel assured Henri that they would do their best to dissuade him and/or delay Villouin's departure in order to give the King time to act accordingly. This report, dated at Falkland, 6 October 1552, was intercepted by the Imperialists. *Ibid*, X, pp. 586-7.

[3] *Ibid*, X, p.586.

[4] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 261-6 and *Relations*, I, pp. 274-8.

[5] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.261 and *Relations*, I, p.274.

confirming his role as 'Protector', Henri could insist that Marie de Guise assume the regency as early as 8 December 1553, the date of her daughter's eleventh birthday and one year earlier than Châtelherault's anticipated date of resignation. But the question as to when Guise should actually assume the regency remained a matter of great debate at the French Court.[1] In d'Oisel's opinion, Henri and Guise's brothers were 'plustost trop de chaleur pour effectuer et advancer la besogne dont est question'.[2] The Cardinal de Lorraine, in particular, seems to have been pushing the hardest for his sister to assume the regency during Mary, Queen of Scots' eleventh year. Because of 'la mauvaise volunte envers elle du Gouverneur', the Cardinal argued that Châtelherault should be deposed immediately before he had the chance to fortify himself with friends.[3] D'Oisel disagreed and the matter was ultimately left to Guise's discretion, who was to report on Châtelherault's activities so that Henri *et al* could better assess the situation and supply her with reinforcements if necessary.[4]

Marie de Guise duly complied and sent two reports, prompting Henri and his ministers to meet once again to discuss the timing of the Queen Dowager's assumption of the regency.[5] By 30 November 1553, it appears that the decision to proceed had been made. Montmorency wrote to Guise that, 'je veoy le temps et l'occasion si apropoz

---

[1] 8 August 1553, *Balcarres Papers*, II, Appendix A, pp. 302-6.

[2] *Ibid*, II, p.304. 'Les Guises' were in a position to push for their sister's advance because of the Duc de Guise's recent military victory in capturing the Three Bishoprics of Lorraine (Metz, Toul and Verdun) for the French King.

[3] *Ibid*, II, p.304.

[4] *Ibid*, II, pp. 304-5.

[5] 31 October 1553, *ibid*, II, cxx, pp. 174-6. Marie de Guise's reports were dated the 15th and 25th of September 1553.

pour ceste heure de conduire a fin ce que nous avons tant actendu et desire'.[1] The decision to act had no doubt been prompted by Guise's suspicion that Châtelherault was intriguing with, or at the instigation of the English to prevent her from assuming the reins of power.[2] Voicing her suspicions to the French ambassador in England, Sr. de Noailles, Guise wrote that, '... les Commissaires que nostre Gouverneur a envoyez pour demester les affaires de nos frontieres s'accordent bien. Mais je trouve leur demeure trop longue, qui me faict avoir doubte de quelque praticque, ou je feray dilligence d'en scavoir la verite'.[3] The Queen Dowager obviously shared her brother's belief that Châtelherault must be deposed as soon as possible.

Just four days after Mary, Queen of Scots' eleventh birthday, therefore, Henri wrote to Châtelherault informing him that, 'madite fille est ... entree en aage pour Joye de ses droictz cy ce present moys december Que de mectre cy ses manis [administratioun] et gouuernement dudit Royaume'.[4] Thanking him for 'les bons officer et bonnes les depportement dont vous auez cydevant use cy ce que a touche le bien honneur service et satisfaction de la Royne v[ot]re souueraine ma petite fille,' Henri hoped Châtelherault would be content with Mary's recommendation that he be 'lieutenant general soubz ladit dame sa mere Regente', and with his own offers that

---

[1] 30 November 1553, *Balcarres Papers*, II, cxxv, pp. 181-2.

[2] The British and European context of Marie de Guise's assumption of the regency, particularly in relation to Mary Tudor's accession and marriage to Philip of Spain, will be discussed in Chapter IV.

[3] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, fos. 123^{r}, 108, 139.

[4] 12 December 1553, NLS, Adv.MSS, 33.1.9, f.1^{r}. As we shall see in Chapter IV, the approval of Mary Tudor's marriage contract to Philip of Spain on 7 December 1553 also influenced the timing of Henri's declaration.

d'Oisel was to present on his behalf.[1] Unsurprisingly, Henri's offers were largely designed to appeal to Châtelherault's greed.

On 19 February 1553/4, Châtelherault agreed to resign the regency in favour of Marie de Guise in April 1554.[2] In a private contract with Guise, Châtelherault was promised all monies owing to the crown and a discharge of all goods intromitted since the death of James V. His position as second person in the realm was guaranteed in the event that Mary, Queen of Scots should die without issue, whereby it was promised that all the castles and forts in French possession would be returned and the Hamilton claim to the Scottish succession safeguarded. Châtelherault was also absolved from 'ony maner of cryme of quhatsumevir gretnis' during his regency and was to receive a formal declaration that he had faithfully performed his duty as Regent in Parliament. For his part, Châtelherault agreed that his resignation of the regency was 'of his awin free will' and that Edinburgh Castle would be immediately handed over to Lord Erskine for the use of Marie de Guise.[3]

Securing Châtelherault's capitulation, however, had been a gruelling task for d'Oisel, who reported that it took two days to reach a settlement that even resembled 'l'intention du Roy'. But, 'avecques l'ayde de Dieu, la conduitte de cette Princesse, joinct aussy que ledict Gouverneur a veu et congneu quasi tous les Seigneurs de ce Royaulme tant spirituels que temporels, accompaigner nostre & cy demeurer fermes et

---

[1] NLS, Adv.MSS, 33.1.9, f.1^{r-v}.

[2] *ADCP*, pp. 630-2. See also *ibid*, pp. 629-30, for the Three Estates' bond with Châtelherault stipulating the terms of his resignation, registered at Edinburgh, 20 February 1553/4.

[3] On 5 March 1553/4, d'Oisel reported that Edinburgh Castle had been delivered as promised on 3 February 1553/4. AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 273, 277 and XII, f.322.

constans, nous en avons finablement obtenu la victoire au grand regret dudict Gouverneur'.[1] The true extent of France's victory was realised on Thursday, 12 April 1554 when Marie de Guise was formally invested in the office of Regent.[2] Following the ceremonial resignation of Châtelherault, the transfer of power was completed when d'Oisel placed the crown of Scotland on the Queen Dowager's head and handed her the sceptre and sword of state.[3]

As in matters of diplomacy and military security, Henri's 'protectorate' of Scotland enabled him to control Scotland's government. His appointment of Marie de Guise to the regency effectively completed the process establishing French power in Scotland, which was to be consolidated by marriage of Mary Stewart to François Valois four years later. It should not necessarily be presumed, however, that Marie de Guise always had aspirations of becoming regent. Had it not been for her past political experiences in Scotland and the Scots professed affection for her, there was a very real possibility that Marie de Guise would not have returned to Scotland at all in 1551. But the integral role she *did* play in securing French military and financial intervention and Scottish support for the proposed dynastic alliance, most notably through the effective distribution of patronage, had rendered her the best candidate to ensure that the interests of France would be served in Scotland. Marie de Guise's assumption of the regency, 'au grand contentement de tous les Estatz', was crucial to the realisation of Guise

---

[1] 21 February 1553/4, AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, fos. 321-2, 333 and IX, f.258.

[2] *Ibid*, XII, f.379. See *Balcarres Papers*, II, cxxxvii, cxxxix, cxl, pp. 200-7, for letters of congratulation from Guise's mother, Antoinette de Bourbon, and her brothers, the Cardinal de Lorraine and Duc de Guise.

[3] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, f.379; Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, p.198.

dynastic ambition and, more importantly, Henri's vision of a Franco-British empire.[1] As one well-wisher remarked to Guise shortly after becoming regent, 'Je luy fais en ce lieu tres humble requeste de voulois tellement fortuner et accroistre vostre nouveau Gouvernement que je puisse bientost voir toute l'isle en vostre obeissance'.[2] But as we shall see, Marie de Guise's administration would be continually affected (largely in a negative sense) by the international scene and, in particular, by events in England – no more so than during the reign of Mary I.

[1] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, f.398.

[2] Noailles to Marie de Guise, 27 April 1554, *ibid*, IX, f.321.

CHAPTER IV

Mary Tudor and the Anglo-Imperial Threat: Anglo-Scottish Relations (1553-1556)

Apart from the obvious dynastic considerations, Marie de Guise's regency in Scotland is characterised by her overwhelming concern for law and order. The debilitating effects of seven years of 'rough wooing' had resulted in dearth, prolific violence and a general state of lawlessness and disorder. After the cessation of hostilities with England, and even before it had been determined that Marie de Guise would remain in Scotland to supplant Châtelherault as regent, the Scottish political élite looked to the Queen Dowager 'for [the] executioun of justice and ordouring of the cuntre'.[1] It is of great significance and testament to the perceived ineffectualness of Châtelherault's governing abilities that Guise was entrusted with such a formidable and important task. Having a vested interest in strengthening royal authority and advancing the interests of the crown at the expense of local jurisdictions, Marie de Guise naturally accepted this commission with relish. Almost immediately following her return from France, Guise worked laboriously to 'put the realme to ane quyatenes' - at no time more vigorously than during her tenure as Queen Regent.[2] The Highlands and, in particular, the Borders demanded most of Guise's attention in this respect, but a concerted effort was made to pursue royal justice and impose law and order throughout all of Scotland. Guise's

[1] *RPC*, I, p.90.

[2] An apt phrase describing Marie de Guise's objective taken from 'Notes of Advice for Punishment of Crime' in *Scottish Correspondence*, ccliii, p.379.

efforts to combat the dual problems of dearth and disorder, however, were severely undermined by international events, and it is impossible to treat them in isolation.

The accession of Mary Tudor in 1553 and her subsequent marriage to Philip of Spain (later Philip II) in 1554, inaugurated a period of renewed tension and intense suspicion between the 'auld enemies'. Through the forging of dynastic alliances, England and Scotland had become inextricably, although not necessarily directly involved in the Habsburg-Valois conflict, which now met *tête à tête* on the Anglo-Scottish Border. The struggle for power on the Continent had, consequently, evolved into a quest for supremacy in the British Isles. But, on a more immediate level, fears of an Anglo-Imperial invasion of 'Valois' Scotland dictated that matters of defence become a top priority – particularly on the Borders. It is for this reason that, throughout Mary Tudor's reign, matters of national security assumed great significance and were a primary and predominant concern for Marie de Guise. Set within the wider context of European dynastic politics, therefore, this chapter will examine the effects of dynasticism on Scotland's relations with England and consider the events that led up to England's formal declaration of war against France on 7 June 1557.

***

The overthrow of Lady Jane Grey as Queen of England by Mary Tudor in July 1553 was a political, dynastic and imperial disaster for Henri II. As the cousin of Charles V, Mary Tudor's natural affinity to the Habsburgs made the prospect of an Anglo-Imperial alliance a very real possibility. In such a situation, the best Henri could hope for was that England remain neutral in the Habsburg-Valois conflict. But when rumours began to circulate that a marriage with Philip of Spain was on the cards for the English Queen,

Henri's hopes quickly diminished. An Anglo-Imperial dynastic alliance had far more serious repercussions for France and Scotland – namely, complete encirclement by the enemy. As his French Ambassador resident in England, Antoine de Noailles, foresaw, this scenario spelled disaster, for Henri would most certainly be engaged in a perpetual war with both his traditional and current enemy at the same time.[1] But the potential military force that an Anglo-Imperial alliance could muster was not the only way in which Mary Tudor's accession and marriage to Philip threatened France. From a dynastic point of view, it also prevented the immediate realisation of Henri's vision of a Franco-British Empire – which could have happened if Queen Jane had reigned supreme and not been superseded.

The imperial opportunities that the Franco-Scottish alliance afforded Henri were the cause of great concern at the Imperial Court, at no time more so than on the eve of Edward VI's death and during the short reign of Queen Jane. When, in the spring of 1553, it was clear that he was not going to survive his recent bout of pulmonary tuberculosis, Edward made it clear that he did not want his Catholic half- sister, Mary, to succeed him. As this directly contravened the terms of Henry VIII's 'Third Act of Succession', Edward decided to follow in his father's footsteps and prescribe the order of the succession in his last will and testament. The result was his 'deuice for the succession'.[2] By-passing the Tudor line in favour of the Suffolks, the descendants of

---

[1] On 6/7 September 1553, Noailles wrote to Henri that, 'la chose me semble estre d'une extresme importance, estimant que ce soit pour vous et les vostres une perpetuelle guerre estans tous vos anciens et presens ennemis joincts ensemble pour estre aprez si fortz'. AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, fos. 61^{r}-2^{v}; L'Abbé de Vertot, *Ambassades de MM. de Noailles en Angleterre* (Leiden, 1763), II, pp. 144-5.

[2] Inner Temple, Petyt MSS, 538/47, fos. 317^{r-v}; J.G. Nichols (ed.), *The chronicle of Queen Jane and two years of Queen Mary* (Camden Society, 48, 1850), pp. 89-90. I am extremely grateful to Alan Bryson for his help and advice on the 'Device' and the reign of Edward VI as a whole.

Henry VIII's *younger* sister, Mary, Edward stipulated that the succession would pass to 'the Lady Fraunceses heires masles, if she haue any such issu befor my death', and then to 'the Lady Jane'.[1] Because Frances, duchess of Suffolk had no male heirs, her eldest daughter, Lady Jane Grey, officially became Edward's successor. No mention was made to either Mary or Elizabeth and, on 21 June, letters patent were issued confirming their illegitimate status.[2]

News of the 'Device' sparked alarm in the Imperial camp. It was feared that 'if the Princess [Mary] and Elizabeth are excluded, the King of France may claim a right to the Crown through Scotland' on the grounds that Mary Stewart was a descendant of Henry VIII's *elder* sister, Margaret.[3] If the terms of the 'Device' were upheld and Lady Jane Grey did succeed Edward as Queen of England, the way was then clear for Henri to advance the superior claims of Mary Stewart to the English throne by right of descent. In 1553, therefore, the realisation of Henri's imperial objectives depended on the success of Lady Jane Grey over Mary Tudor.

Following the death of Edward VI on 6 July 1553, the Imperial Court was inundated with reports detailing the intrigues of France against Mary Tudor in support of Lady Jane. Charles V was repeatedly warned that the French 'were carrying on intrigues for the purpose of stirring up trouble in England and discord between that kingdom and your Majesty', their object being 'to gain a foothold in England for their

---

[1] Inner Temple, Petyt MSS, 538/47, f.317[r].

[2] *CSP Spain*, XI, p.82; Guy, *Tudor England*, p.226.

[3] *CSP Spain*, XI, pp. 54-5, 98. See also *ibid*, XI, pp. 90, 96-7, 99, 101-2, 104, 115-17, 157, 188, 301-2 for additional reports on the intrigues of France concerning the succession and the advancement of Mary Stewart's claim.

own ends and to the advantage of the Queen of Scotland and that of her affianced spouse, the Dauphin of France'.[1] Northumberland's delay in proclaiming Lady Jane as Queen of England, however, would prove disastrous to Henri and any hopes he had for a Franco-British empire at this time.[2] Why Northumberland waited three days before making his announcement is uncertain. Irrespective of whether it was because he was unprepared or simply inept, the fact remained that these three days enabled Mary Tudor to rally enough popular and military support to overthrow Queen Jane, bring an abrupt end to her nine day reign and quash Henri's imperial ambitions in the process.[3]

Needless to say, Mary's accession was viewed ominously by the French. Protocol, however, dictated that publicly a more favourable reception be given to England's new Queen. Both Henri and Marie de Guise sent letters of commendation, congratulating Mary on her accession and reciprocating her professions of friendship, 'good will and disposition to peace'.[4] But beneath this veneer of amity, lay a deep rooted suspicion that emanated from the dynastic alliances forged by both Queens on the Continent. The perceived threat that Mary Stewart's betrothal to François Valois posed to England's national security, for example, was used by Imperial propagandists to foster support in England for a Spanish marriage.[5] For the French, Mary Tudor's

---

[1] *CSP Spain*, XI, p.85.

[2] Northumberland had also failed to secure Parliamentary support for the 'Device', the legitimacy of which was dubious anyway because it was uncertain as to whether a minor could make a will let alone determine the succession, and because it was a privilege granted only to Henry VIII in the first 'Act of Succession'. 1534: 25 Henry VIII, c.22, *Statutes of the Realm*, III, pp. 471-4; Loades, *Mary Tudor*, pp. 15-6.

[3] Lady Jane Grey was executed on 12 February 1553/4.

[4] *CSP Scot.*, I, 398, p.192; *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 12, 66, pp. 6, 23-4.

[5] See, for example, *CSP Spain*, XI, pp. 334-5, 340-1, 409-11. Interestingly, the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance was also used by those opposed to the Spanish marriage to demonstrate the inherent dangers of a queen regnant marrying a foreigner. Grounds for opposition also lay in the possible reaction of France to

determination to wed Philip of Spain was viewed as an inevitable precursor to war. As such, French fears that Scotland would be the obvious target of an Anglo-Imperial invasion prompted Henri to take defensive measures there.

By 7 December 1553, the terms of the marriage treaty between Mary and Philip had been approved by the English Council and the council of state for the Low Countries.[1] While Henri 'expressed his pleasure that her Majesty desired a continuance of the amity', his fears that Mary Tudor's marriage would bring Spanish troops to England for the sole purpose of invading Scotland prompted him to take steps to ensure that Scotland was in a state of readiness.[2] D'Oisel, who had been serving in the French campaigns on the Continent,[3] was immediately despatched back to Scotland on a renewed commission to serve as Henri's Lieutenant-General.[4] The purpose of his return was the source of much speculation among foreign observers, and the rumours that were simultaneously leaked out of the French Court that the Vidâme de Chartres was also being sent with a number of French troops to occupy Scotland's strongholds, heightened suspicions that France was preparing for war against England.[5] Although there was

---

the Spanish marriage. Stephen Gardiner, bishop of Winchester, for instance, feared that the French would intrigue with England's Protestant community, possibly with a view of supplanting Mary with Elizabeth, or in the worst possible scenario, incite them to declare war. *CSP Spain*, XI, pp. 332-7.

[1] *Ibid*, XI, pp. 397-8; *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 193, p.77; Loades, *Mary Tudor*, p.73. The council of state for the Low Countries actually approved the draft treaty on 27 November 1553, two days after it was submitted. For discussions on the marriage negotiations and the Spanish marriage in general, see *ibid*, pp. 57-95, and M.J. Rodríguez-Salgado, *The Changing Face of Empire: Charles V, Philip II and Habsburg Authority, 1551-1559* (Cambridge, 1988), pp. 79-85.

[2] *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 66, 131, 144(i), pp. 23-4, 46-7, 55.

[3] D'Oisel returned to France in February 1551/2. *APS*, II, p.489; *CSP Scot.*, I, 389, p.189; *CSP Spain*, XI, pp. 160, 173; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 60-2^{r}.

[4] *CSP Scot.*, I, 402, 403, p.194; *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 115, p.43; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.112^{r}.

[5] *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 115, 131, 170, pp. 43, 46-7, 55, 58, 66-7; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, f.139^{r}.

nothing behind these rumours, except the hope they would deter Mary Tudor from actively joining the Habsburg-Valois conflict on the side of the Imperialists, one aspect of d'Oisel's commission did concern the militarisation of Scotland. He was to coordinate the mobilisation of troops and to ensure that Scotland, and in particular Edinburgh, were in a state of readiness to implement the King's will if necessary. In this, d'Oisel worked closely with Marie de Guise, who went to Edinburgh in March 1553/4, 'pour faire pourvoir et munir le Chasteau de toutes choses necessaires', and to make provisions for a reduction of French troops on the Border, 'pour estre prestz a semploy er en ce que le Roy commandera'.[1] Despite their efforts, the army was only partially ready when Henri's orders 'pour aller veoir leve lennemye' came on 17 May 1553.[2]

As Lieutenant-General of Scotland, d'Oisel's fundamental concern was with Scotland's military security, but this was not the only reason for his return. He was also to initiate proceedings for the formal transfer of power from Châtelherault to Marie de Guise, perhaps Henri's most significant response to Mary Tudor's dynastic policy. As we have already seen, the decision to begin proceedings for Guise's assumption of the regency was made by 30 November 1553, by which time a draft of the marriage treaty between Mary and Philip had been submitted for approval to the respective councils of England and the Low Countries.[3] Although the Spanish marriage was never cited specifically as the reason, the timing of this decision cannot be regarded as mere

---

[1] 8 March 1553/4, AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.150^{r}.

[2] 16 June 1554, *ibid*, IX, f.208.

[3] *Balcarres Papers*, II, cxxv, pp. 181-2.

coincidence.[1] This view is further substantiated by Henri's declaration of 12 December 1553. Just five days after the English Council approved the terms of the marriage treaty, the French King declared that Mary, Queen of Scots had 'entree en aage pour Joye de ses droictz cy ce present moys decembre Que de mectre cy ses manis [administratioun] et gouuernement'.[2] In addition to giving Châtelherault official notice that his tenure as regent was over, d'Oisel was also commissioned to negotiate the terms of the Governor's resignation on behalf of the French King. Given this chain of events, Marie de Guise's assumption of the regency cannot be viewed purely from a Scottish perspective. By taking the wider context of British and European dynastic politics into consideration, it becomes clear that her own accession was a direct response to that of Mary Tudor and the Anglo-Imperial dynastic alliance.

Other events arising in England also contributed to the sense of urgency surrounding Marie de Guise's assumption of the regency. In October 1553, it was reported that the Earl of Lennox was intriguing to secure the government of Scotland for himself.[3] This was particularly worrying for two reasons: firstly, Lennox's strong claim to the Scottish succession and, secondly, the privileged position his wife enjoyed at the English court as Mary Tudor's best friend and ideal successor to the English throne.[4] Lennox intended to exploit his wife's Scottish connections in order to achieve his political objective. Noailles informed Guise that Lady Margaret Douglas was to

---

[1] *Balcarres Papers*, II, Appendix A, pp. 302-6; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 150-1 and XII, fos. 192, 221, 252-4.

[2] 12 December 1553, NLS, Adv.MSS, 33.1.9, f.1[r].

[3] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, fos. 88-9[r] and IX, f.83.

[4] *CSP Spain*, XI, pp. 393-5.

travel north and make overtures to her father on behalf of her husband, with the hope that the Earl of Angus would then procure support amongst his friends in Scotland for Lennox 'avoir le maniement & gouvernement de vostre Royaulme'.[1] Yet, despite all indications to the contrary, Noailles was certain that Mary I was above suspicion - for although it was widely recognised that the Countess of Lennox was the Queen's principal favourite, such favour did not naturally extend to her husband. Moreover, by supporting an enterprise that would inevitably be regarded as an overture of war, Mary would be endangering her plans to re-establish Catholicism in England, 'a quoy Elle & son Chancellier [Stephen Gardiner] courent de telle affection qu'il semble qu'ilz voynt assez obseur en toutes autres choses'.[2]

Noailles, however, seems to have been naïve in his assumptions. A report to Charles V clearly reveals that Lennox was not only acting with the knowledge, but also on the advice of Mary Tudor and her Council.[3] What is even more striking is the revelation that Marie de Guise provided the English with such an opportunity in the first place. In her quest to weaken Châtelherault's power base prior to her assumption of the regency, Guise had apparently written to Lennox offering to restore his lands in Scotland 'and show him treatment befitting his rank', in return for his political support against Châtelherault. Guise's letter came to the attention of the English Queen and was quickly acted upon. It was decided that, because of his particularly strong claim to the Scottish succession, Lennox should:

---

[1] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, f.88^{v}.

[2] *Ibid*, XII, f.88^{v}.

[3] *CSP Spain*, XII, pp. 204-5.

> ... draw near to the Scottish border and reply that, if they will treat him better there than in the past, he will very willingly return to his country on account of his natural affection for it and because he does not find himself welcome in England. This he will say in order to have a grievance, and if he is encouraged he will cross over to Scotland and secretly enter into communication with the Regent [Châtelherault] against the Dowager, with a view not only to driving her from the country, but to making himself King if possible and throwing Scottish affairs into confusion. If he is able to do this, the Queen will help him with money to the best of her ability.[1]

In this, it was hoped that money would be forthcoming from Spain so that Mary 'would be able to follow up the said intrigue, and would make ready to aid your Majesty [Charles V] and his Highness [Philip] against the French'.[2]

The proposed intrigues of Lennox in Scotland may offer some explanation as to why Henri, the Cardinal de Lorraine and the Duc de Guise were overly anxious to depose Châtelherault and declare Mary, Queen of Scots of age in her eleventh year. Châtelherault's 'mauvaise volunte' towards Marie de Guise was no secret at the French court.[3] His declaration that, 'while he lived there should be no other Regent in Scotland than he', fuelled French fears that he would fortify himself with friends and come to an understanding with the English and/or the Imperialists in order to retain his position in Scotland.[4] Marie de Guise's own suspicions that Châtelherault was intriguing with the English in September 1553 was the deciding factor in the decision to proclaim Mary, Queen of Scots' of age and immediately begin the proceedings to remove Châtelherault from office. It is uncertain, however, whether Châtelherault's suspected intrigues involved Lennox. Although the nature of the Hamilton-Stewart rivalry would render

---

[1] *CSP Spain*, XII, p.204.

[2] *Ibid*, XII, pp. 204-5.

[3] *Balcarres Papers*, II, p.304.

[4] *CSP Spain*, X, p.586; *Balcarres Papers*, II, p.304; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, fos. 108, 123^{r}, 139.

such a prospect highly unlikely, Châtelherault's over-riding personal ambition would not have made an alliance with even his arch-enemy impossible if it provided him with the opportunity to retain his power and position in Scotland. As for the Countess of Lennox, she never made the journey north. After Marie de Guise successfully assumed the regency in April 1554, Mary Tudor 'conveniently' found the Countess' presence at Court indispensable.[1] Lennox, however, was undeterred in his quest to become 'master' of Scotland. Throughout 1554 and 1555, reports continued to flow out of England detailing the movements of Lennox and that of his brother, Robert Stewart, bishop of Caithness.[2]

From a French perspective, these intrigues served only to highlight how important Marie de Guise's control of the government was, not only for the security and welfare of Scotland, but also for the success of the French cause in general. As d'Oisel commented to Noailles on 8 March 1553/4:

> Je demeure tousjours en ma premiere opinion, que plustost vauldroit il mieulx jouer a jeu descouvert, si aultrement ne s'y pouvoir remedier, que de souffrir ny veoir ung si grand mal advenir au bien des affaires de sa Majeste. Car il n'y a doubte que s'estans impatronisee l'angleterre, ilz seroient le semblable de irlande et par ce moyen, demeureroit ce pauvre Royaulme assiege de toutes partz des ennmys de sa Mageste.[3]

In what was fast becoming a game of strike and counter-strike, it is fitting that, just weeks after Marie de Guise became Queen Regent, the marriage treaty between Mary Tudor and Philip of Spain was formally ratified by the English Parliament on 28 April 1554.[4] This, together with Philip's arrival in England the following June, prompted

---

[1] Noailles to Marie de Guise, 24 December 1554, AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, f.108^{v}.

[2] See, for example, *ibid*, XII, f.206^{r} and IX, fos. 184, 239^{v}, 335^{v}-8^{r}.

[3] *Ibid*, IX, f.150.

[4] *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 193, p.77.

Henri, Guise and d'Oisel in turn, to implement more tangible defensive measures in Scotland.

Accompanied by a naval entourage of 100 vessels, Philip of Spain set foot on English soil on 11 June 1554.[1] His arrival inaugurated a period of renewed suspicion and mounting tensions on both sides of the Anglo-Scottish border. The size of Philip's convoy, for example, was not simply a matter of prestige, but a precautionary measure taken in response to Noailles' threats that Philip could expect to be attacked by the French whilst crossing the Channel.[2] But unbeknownst to Philip, Henri had no intention of backing his ambassador's plans. These empty threats served only to augment the number of Spanish troops that Philip brought with him to England and exacerbate an already tense situation. Now that the Habsburg-Valois powers had come *tête à tête* on the Anglo-Scottish border, the major preoccupation for both sides was the fear of invasion.

In August 1554, this was a predominant worry for d'Oisel. All indications suggested that Philip was preparing to launch an attack, and Scotland was ill-prepared to withstand an invasion, let alone be in a position to provide Henri with 'good service' should he require it.[3] D'Oisel attributed this to the lack of justice and inadequate defence on the Border, which provided Philip with not only the opportunity, but also a virtually free passage into Scotland:

> Je ne veoy nos dicte affairers si bien dressez pour le bien du seruice du Roy comme je desirerois de l'ayde duquel nous nauons peu de besoing

---

[1] *CSP Spain*, XII, p.283; Rodríguez-Salgado, *The Changing Face of Empire*, pp. 84-5; Loades, *Mary Tudor*, p.94.

[2] *CSP Spain*, XII, pp. 143, 204, 248.

[3] D'Oisel to Noailles, 22 August 1554, AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.253^{r}.

> vouldra s'asseurer de ce Royaulme a ladvenir comme semble estre temps d'y Commancer, tant pour y establir la justice qui y a este par cy deuant peu honorée et obseruée comme pour nous fortisfier en notre frontieres pour arrester le passaige a nos voisins qui leur est tous ouuert.[1]

Noailles, however, turned a deaf ear to d'Oisel's concerns and was eager for Scotland to enter the Habsburg-Valois conflict officially.[2] The Lieutenant-General strongly disagreed, thinking that Scotland's formal participation would make little difference in the war effort; Scotland could offer Henri little more than those Scots who were already serving in France. Rather, French troops were desperately needed in Scotland to fortify and reduce the Border in fear and good obedience.[3] Fortunately for d'Oisel, the French King had not felt it necessary for the Scots to declare war on Charles V just yet.

***

The Habsburg-Valois conflict had re-erupted on 15 January 1551/2. Having successfully secured an alliance with the German Lutheran Princes of the Holy Roman Empire, Henri felt he was in a position to declare war against Charles V.[4] Not unlike his alliance with the Scots, Henri's treaty with Charles' disgruntled Protestant subjects established a protectoral relationship. The French King was granted the right to possess, govern and protect the Imperial towns of Cambrai, Toul, Metz and Verdun as the

---

[1] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.253[r].

[2] *Ibid*, IX, fos. 342-3[r].

[3] *Ibid*, IX, f.343[r].

[4] Baumgartner, *Henry II*, pp. 146-57; Rodríguez-Salgado, *The Changing Face of Empire*, pp. 41-72; Jean-Daniel Pariset, *Relations entre la France et l'Allemagne au milieu du sezième siècle* (Strasbourg, 1983), pp. 84-114 and 'France et les princes allemands', *Francia*, 10 (1980), pp. 259-81; Cloulas, *Les Guise*, pp. 25-8; R.J. Knecht, *French Renaissance Monarchy: Francis I and Henry II* (London, 1984), pp. 44-5. See also *Balcarres Papers*, II, lxxxi, lxxxiv, lxxxv, xc, xci, xciii, xciv, xcvii, xcviii, cxvii, cxxxix, cliv-vi, clxxvii, pp. 111-3, 115-6, 116-8, 122-4, 124-5, 126-8, 128-9, 131-3, 133-6, 168-70, 203-5, 229-35, 267, for the continuous stream of reports keeping Guise up to date on the progress of the war on the Continent.

defender of German liberties, in return for financial assistance.[1] Henri's declaration of war, however, had potentially serious implications for Scotland and the Scoto-Imperial peace that had been contracted at Binche just weeks before. France's comprehension in this treaty placed the Scots in a very precarious position - did this mean that they, too, were now at war with Charles? Henri clearly thought so, and wrote to the Three Estates shortly after the outbreak of war asking them 'to declair thame selffis and tak his part according to the tennour of the auld treatys'.[2] The Scots, having just endured seven long years of hostile relations with England, were in no position to enter into another conflict and hoped to persuade Henri of this by demonstrating 'quhat incommodite may cum to this realm, gif the peax with Emperour beis brokin; quhat harme may be done thairthrou to the said Emperour, his enemy; and quhat chargeis his Majestie salbe constranit to entere in to on this side in caise the Emperour put ony greit force to thir seyis'.[3] Yet, despite their reluctance, the Scottish political élite still recognised Henri's authority and control over their foreign affairs as the 'protector' of Scotland:

> ... bot gif alwayis his Majestie persistis and abidis at that poynt, that he will haif decaratioun of weir maid to the Emperour in naim and behalf of this realme, in that cais thair salbe send to the Emperour ane sufficient personaig to gif up the samyn peax, and declair unto him that this realme can nocht remane at freyndschip with him, he standand at inmymite with the said maist Cristin King of France, maist anciant and maist speciale freynd unto the Quenis Grace our Soverane Lady, and this hir realme.[4]

---

[1] Baumgartner, *Henry II*, pp. 147-8.

[2] *RPC*, I, p.120. See also *Balcarres Papers*, II, lxxvi, pp. 105-6, for Montmorency's letter to Marie de Guise on 31 December 1551 in which he states: 'vous priant, Madame, donne ordre suivant ce qui vous a este demrnierement escript que voz subjectz et vaisseaulx se mectent en mer pour courir sus et endommaigner ceulx de l'empereur, qui sont et doynent estre vos enemys aussi bien que les nostres'.

[3] *RPC*, I, p.120.

[4] *Ibid*, I, p.120.

The extent to which Henri's protectorate of Scotland was *not* an exercise in absolute power is demonstrated by the fact that he took into consideration the feelings of the Scottish political community and acceded to their request. In June 1552, Marie de Guise was informed that, 'la Roy na este dopinion que pour ceste heure la guerre fust declaree entre les Escossois et lempereur, affin que vous puissiez vivre plus a votre aise'.[1] This is not to say that Scotland was not expected contribute in some way to the war effort.

In November 1552, the Privy Council issued a stent for 'ane certane number of fitmen be resit and upliftit of this realme, to be send in France for the support of the maist Christinet Kyng'.[2] For every 40 merks of land (including crown, temporal and church lands), one footman was to be raised and 'weill furnischit, cled in new hoise, and ane new doublett of canves at the lest, with a jack of plett, steilbonet, splent slevis, of mailyie of plait, withe ane speir of six elne lang'.[3] Similarly, the burghs were to provide 300 hundred hackbutters adequately furnished with 'powldir flask, morsing hornis, and all uthair geir belanging thairto', 400 horsemen were to be raised from the Borders and the Lowlands, and two ensigns of footmen were to be raised from Huntly's lieutenantry in the Highlands.[4] So eager were some Scots to support Henri's military campaign, that a number of those who attended a Convention at Edinburgh on 12 December 1552, volunteered out of their own 'fre will and benevolence' to raise even more horsemen -

---

[1] *Warrender Papers*, xxix, p.22; *Balcarres Papers*, II, lxxxviii, pp. 120-1.

[2] *RPC*, I, pp. 129-31.

[3] *Ibid*, I, pp. 129-30.

[4] The Privy Council re-issued this order on 6 December 1552. Commissioners were also appointed to oversee the 'rolling' of all the Scottish troops who were being sent to France. *Ibid*, I, pp. 131, 132, 134, 136-7.

albeit at the King's expense. For those who did not attend the Convention, they too were given the opportunity to show their 'benevolence' to the French cause. They were 'taxt be the remanent to furnis horsmen like as utheris thair nychbouris hes done'.[1] Cassillis was appointed to command the Scottish army on the Continent as Lieutenant-General, while Patrick, lord Ruthven was made 'Coronet of the futmen'.[2]

Scotland's contribution to Henri's military campaign, therefore, was considerable. Approximately 3,000 Scottish soldiers were sent to the Continent to participate in the Habsburg-Valois conflict.[3] When Philip of Spain arrived in England, however, circumstances and priorities changed. Rumours that Spanish troops were being sent to Berwick precipitated Henri's decision to redeploy men back into Scotland in order to replenish d'Oisel's French companies and to reinforce the Scots.[4] By the end of February 1554/5, six bands of 'Scottishe footemen ... with a force also of dyvers other Frenchemen, bothe fotemen and horssemen', numbering about 3,000-4,000, arrived in Scotland.[5]

For d'Oisel, the arrival of reinforcements could not have come soon enough. His commission to place Scotland in a state of readiness had been seriously undermined

---

[1] *RPC*, I, pp. 134-5.

[2] *Ibid*, I, p.135. See also *ibid*, I, pp. 135-6 for a list of 55 other notables who went to serve in France, including Cassillis' brother, Archibald, Sir Hew Kennedy of Girvanmains, Ruthven's brother, James, and the Laird of Kinnaird, who were exempted from any legal proceedings against them during their absence.

[3] See also BL, Harley MSS, 353.41, fos. 125-6; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.61; *Balcarres Papers*, II, cxvi, pp. 164-8, *CSP Spain*, XI, pp. 2-3, 5, 13, for additional references to Scots serving in the French campaigns.

[4] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 302, 316-8, 320, 329, 332-5, 373; PRO, SP15/7/33; *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 307, 307i, 316, 356, 356i, pp. 146-7, 151-2, 166; *APC*, V, pp. 91, 94, 95, 98; *CSP Venice*, IV, p.12.

[5] *APC*, V, pp. 94, 95; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 325^{v}-6^{r}, 373^{r}.

by the number of men (French and Scottish) committed to the war effort on the Continent. Equally detrimental was the lack of resources needed to maintain the French soldiers serving in Scotland and the irregularity with which these payments came from France, if they came at all. The non-arrival of the banker, Timothy Cagnioli, with the 'frainchemans money', for example, left d'Oisel with no choice but to borrow the necessary sums within Scotland.[1] This was something he complained bitterly about to Noailles: 'j'ay lessé et ennuyé toutes les bourses de mes amys a trouuer finances, tant pour l'entretenement denoz gens de guerre que pour toutes autres choses necessayres'.[2] Fortunately, d'Oisel found many 'friends' in Edinburgh and 'nuchtbouris of this toun', from whom he borrowed £1,000 'for sik effaris as thai haif ado'.[3] But no greater friend had he than Marie de Guise who, once again, was forced to shoulder much of the financial burden involved in the establishment of French (military) power in Scotland while waiting for funds to arrive from France. Although she committed her personal resources to this purpose, such as agreeing to pay the unpaid balance of d'Oisel's loan, she was also now in a position to allocate funds from the public purse as Regent.[4] The French captain, Galliard, for example, received regular payments of £75 from the Lord High Treasurer 'for [the] supporting of certane horsmen Franchmen in Annand'[5] and, on

---

[1] SRO, SP13/76/61.

[2] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.357[r].

[3] *Edinburgh Burgh Recs.*, pp. 206-7, 214-5, 215-6. As Michael Lynch discusses, Edinburgh's merchants acted as moneylenders to the crown. This soon became a source of tension within the burgh, as these voluntary loans soon became forced exactions under the threat of imprisonment. Lynch, *Edinburgh and the Reformation*, pp. 71-2.

[4] Guise, for instance, granted two other obligations on 16 and 17 May 1555. *Edinburgh Burgh Recs.*, pp. 215, 226.

[5] *TA*, X, pp. 241, 263, 265, 268, 270, 272, 275, 277, 281, 284, 287.

two occasions in August and October 1555, a dearth of provisions necessitated that the Government cover the costs of feeding the French troops and supplying them with bread.[1] The Queen Regent also relied on the private sector to victual the French troops serving in Scotland. Throughout 1555, numerous proclamations were issued to the inhabitants of Lasswade, Musselburgh, Fisherrow, Preston, Inveresk, Dalkeith, Newbattle, Jedburgh and Dunbar, ordering them 'to cause provisioun be maid for thair [the Frenchmen] vivers ... and to provide thair lugeingis'.[2] Collectively, however, the Scots' greatest contribution went towards Marie de Guise's fort-building and modernising policy.

As with the redeployment of troops back to Scotland, the urgency surrounding the construction and fortification of Scotland's strongholds came in response to Philip of Spain's perceived indisposition to peace in late 1554 and early 1555.[3] In February 1554/5, Noailles wrote urgently to Marie de Guise and Henri warning them of Scotland's 'impending subservience' at the hands of the Imperialists, if, as the French ambassador suspected, they attacked France and its outposts next season [the summer of 1555].[4] In such an eventuality, the French King's protection of Scotland could not be guaranteed as he would more than likely be preoccupied on the Continent.[5] It was thus imperative that Guise fortify Scotland's strongholds and prepare for war while she still had the time. Edinburgh Castle, 'le coeur & le meilleur endroict dud[ict] Royaulme',

---

[1] *TA*, X, pp. 287, 295.

[2] *Ibid*, X, pp. 281, 291, 297.

[3] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 302, 316-8, 320, 332-5, 347^{r}, 370 and XII, fos. 336-7.

[4] *Ibid*, IX, f. 370 and XII, fos. 336-7.

[5] *Ibid*, IX, f.370^{v}.

Leith and Dunbar Castle, reportedly in a bad state of repair, were all considered by Noailles to be integral to Scotland's defence.[1] More importantly, these places were ideal locations from which Henri could launch an attack or declare war against England if the need arose.[2]

The English were only too well aware of the advantageous position Henri enjoyed within the archipelago as result of the establishment of French military power in Scotland. The English, Noailles wrote:

> ... congoissent quelque grand advantage soit du couste d'Escosse ou de France pour se declairer a la Guerre, Ils ne faudront point de le prendre, mais aussi Je ne fais doubte que silz voyent que les villes de vostre Royaulme qui sont a leur teste & voisines de Calais, soient en bon estat comme Bouloigne, Ardres, Montreuith & Dorlan, Ils se pourront facilement refroidir ayant este aussi Sire pourveu aux affaires d'Escosse, comme il vous a pleu tres bien & prudemment considerer, d'y avoir envoye les souldatz, qui sont comme il s'entend icy desja arrivez & qui ont este cause de mettre ceulx cy en quelque soubcon & jalousie.[3]

Marie de Guise did not need to be told of the importance of fortifying her strongholds and securing Scotland's frontiers at this particular time. Her brother, François, had proffered similar advice even before Philip arrived in England:

> ... je scaiche que estes dame pour governer le royaume et disposer de toutes choses non seullement en paix mais en guerre et y pourveoir ainsi qu'avez bien et saigement faict par le passe, suyvant ce qu'il vous a pleu me commander, que le temps qui est douz et paisable requiert que vostre frontieresoyt plus forte qu'elle n'a este jusques icy, de sorte que vos voysins ne puissent vous venir veoir si a leur ayse et qu'il y ayt quellque place qui les arreste.[4]

---

[1] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, f.337^{r}.

[2] *Ibid*, XII, f.336^{v}. See also, *ibid*, IX, fos. 370, 377-8^{r}, 398-9 and XII, fos. 306-7; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.721; PRO, SP15/7/35.

[3] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, fos. 336^{v}-7^{r}.

[4] 27 May 1554, *Balcarres Papers*, II, cl, pp. 220-2.

Having secured some money in January 1554/5 for this purpose, Marie de Guise set about repairing, fortifying and victualling Scotland's existing strongholds and constructing new ones on the Border - the most notable of which was planned at Kelso.[1] By March 1554/5, however, the Kelso enterprise had suffered a serious setback and seemed doomed to failure. The non-arrival of engineers from France threatened to ruin it even before it began and prevented essential repairs from being carried out at Dunbar and Leith. Progress was further hindered by the short supply of workmen, which d'Oisel contended had been promised but as yet had not arrived.[2]

The greatest problem was, and would continue to be, a lack of money to finance the works. D'Oisel was left with the difficult task of trying to explain to his colleagues why significant advances had not been made to place Scotland in a state of surety and good defence. In his letters to Noailles and the Duc de Guise, d'Oisel stressed that while both he and Marie de Guise knew what needed to be done, it was more a question of means than will:

> ... louant la Royne, ... très grandement vostre conseil de ne laisser perdre une seule heure de temps à bien fortiffier ses places et les munir de vivres, me commandant vous dire, sur ce propos, que selon la puissance et les moyens qu'elle en pourra avoir, elle y fera de toute le'extrême diligence que faire ce pourra avoir. ... Ce que je solliciteray soigneusement et aultant que je congnois en estre besoing; mays nous avons souvent l'argent en ce païs plus à loysir et avec plus de difficulté que on ne pense et que l'occasion d'un tel service, qui est l'advancement des places, ne le requiere. Ce qui procedde enitèrement des moiens qui n'y sont pas et non de faulte de bonne volunté en cest endroict.[3]

---

[1] *RPC*, XIV, p.13; *Edinburgh Burgh Recs.*, II, pp. 214-5; *Aberdeen Council Register*, pp. 209-10, 215-6, 298, 299; PRO, SP15/7/35; *CSP Spain*, XIII, p.145; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.721; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 377-8', 398-9.

[2] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.721.

[3] *Ibid*, I, p.721; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 398-9.

In the meantime, the Queen Regent laboured tirelessly to fortify her daughter's kingdom with what resources she could muster. In March 1555, for instance, Guise was forced to requisition funds for the repair of Inchkeith that d'Oisel hoped would enable him to begin similar work at Dunbar soon after.[1] But with the Three Estates' rejection of Guise's tax reassessment scheme in 1556,[2] the delays at Kelso, and the extraordinary expenses involved with the maintenance of d'Oisel's standing force of light horse on the Border, all building activity became concentrated on the strongholds at Annan and, in particular, Langholm.[3] Yet, despite these efforts, very little progress had been made by January 1556/7. Scotland was still ill-prepared for war and did not have one 'bonne place pour sa defendre et soustenir ung siege'.[4]

But even if the Scots had approved her tax reassessment scheme of May 1556, which would have provided her with emergency funds to finance her defensive policies, Marie de Guise could derive little comfort from the fact that there would not have been enough troops to garrison the forts she would have then been able to build. Following the Franco-Imperial truce of Vaucelles in February 1555/6, the majority of the troops that had been sent to Scotland in 1554/5 were redeployed back to the Continent, leaving Scotland almost destitute of armed forces. Those that did remain were primarily concerned with reducing the Border to obedience and pursuing of thieves and rebels. So

---

[1] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.721; PRO, 3/31/22, f.41; *CSP Spain*, XII, p.43.

[2] This will be the subject of further discussion in Chapter V.

[3] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 7^{r-v}, 10^{v}; *Papal Negotiations*, pp. 428-9; LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, fos. 336-7; *APC*, V, p.280; Colvin, *King's Works*, IV, p.609 *n*.4. In 1556, the work at Langholm cost the crown £453 15s 1d. Up until 1558, this seems to be the only place where a significant amount of money was spent. *TA*, XI, p.409.

[4] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 8^{v}, 10^{v}; *Papal Negotiations*, p.429.

few were the number of Frenchmen serving in Scotland that the Border was actually garrisoned and policed by an itinerant regiment of light horse and a small number of foot soldiers.[1] Even in this respect, the scarcity of armed forces seriously undermined Guise's attempts to fortify, police and implement good rule on the Border.[2]

Nevertheless, the presence of French troops on the Border, the little work that was being done on Scotland's strongholds and the discovery of the Kelso enterprise was enough to raise alarm in England and contribute to the mounting tensions and increased suspicions that prevailed throughout the period 1554-1556.[3] Philip promised the English Council that for every fort Marie de Guise built on the Border he would build three and forever continue the rumours that the Spanish were being sent to Berwick.[4] Verbal threats such as this were backed up by orders for the interception of all communication passing through England between Scotland and France; the fortification and victualling of Berwick, Wark and Norham; and placing the Border on one hour's notice for the defence of the kingdom.[5] The Border, however, was not Mary Tudor's only concern; she was equally worried about Franco-Scottish intrigues in Ireland.

***

Mary Tudor had every reason to be suspicious of French subversive activity. Her accession and choice of husband directly conflicted with the interests of France, whose

---

[1] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 9^{v}, 10^{r}-11^{v}; *Papal Negotiations*, p. 430.

[2] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 7^{v}, 8^{v}, 9^{v}, 10^{v}; *Papal Negotiations*, pp. 428-9.

[3] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.377^{r}; PRO, 3/31/32, f.41; *CSP Spain*, XII, p.43.

[4] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.347^{v}. See *ibid*, IX, fos. 302, 316, 320, 332 and 342 for references to rumours of Spanish activity on the Border.

[5] PRO, SP11/3/31, 12/93/18, LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, fos. 39, 43 47; *APC*, IV, pp. 397, 411 and V, pp. 6, 7, 14, 15.

alliance with Scotland not only provided a conduit through which intrigues could be conducted, but also ready access to Mary's own discontented subjects to whom her dynastic and religious policies were equally anathema. As a traditional hotbed of unrest, Ireland was a logical and susceptible target for foreign intrigues. Unsurprisingly, Mary Tudor's accession did spark a flurry of renewed insurgent activity in Ireland and reports that Henri 'had incited them thereto'.[1]

Although Mary I had little, if any concern for Irish political affairs *per se*, the revolts that had accompanied her accession gave rise to her suspicions of French complicity.[2] These suspicions were fuelled by reports that the Irish revolts had involved a number of Scots and by rumours that France was planning an invasion of Ireland. In October and November 1553, two possibly related rumours were circulating to this effect. One concerned the imminent execution of:

> ... a plan conceived some time ago for making an attack on Ireland to seize two places that might be converted into two roomy harbours, able to hold one thousand ships and more. With these ports in their hands, the French might harm England, aid Scotland, and prevent, or at least render difficult, your Majesty's [Charles V] subjects' fisheries, commerce and carrying trade.[3]

The second was the rumour that the Grand Prior of France (François, duc de Guise) was being sent to Ireland with 60 gentlemen and a great number of soldiers, 'to assist the Wild Irish against the Queen' and foster the troubles in Ireland that they themselves had

---

[1] *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 66, pp. 23-4.

[2] Brady, 'Court, Castle and Country: the framework of government in Tudor Ireland' in Brady & R Gillespie (eds.), *Native and Newcomers: Essays on the making of Irish Colonial Society, 1534-1641*, p.31. Ireland did not even warrant a mention on Mary Tudor's list of political priorities for her administration, but the revolts there, which were being 'kept alive by the French and the Scots', did figure in Simon Renard's list of problems facing the Queen along side matters of religion and crown-magnate relations. *CSP Spain*, XI, p.335.

[3] *Ibid*, XI, p.261.

started.[1] Henri took great pains to dispel these rumours and refute the allegations that he was behind the seditions in Ireland. 'As for the incursions of the Scots in Ireland, and the report spread that he incited them thereto', the English Council was informed that the French King, 'took God to witness that he never thought of such a thing. For knowing her Majesty's desire of peace with her neighbours, he should do all he could to assist her against such as might go about to molest her'.[2] Noailles was also instructed to convey the same assurances with haste to Mary and proffer a possible explanation for the origin of these rumours:

> Quant au bruict qui court par dela du voyaige de mon Cousin le grand Prieur de France en yrlande Je ne voudrois de riens tant prier lad[icte] Dame que de faire tres bien chastier celluy qui dict l'avoir veu audict pays d'yrlande, comme ung Imposteur malhereux qu'il est a tiltre, ainsi quil fault penser, pour essayer d'alterer nostre amitie, laquelle de ma part, Je mettray peyne d'observer de tous poinctz si sincerement, qu'elle ne doibt craindre telz allarmes et tant s'en fault, qu'il ait prins ce chemin la, ne que jamais je y aye pense qu'il est party passe a quinze jours pour aller a Malte en sa Religion faire son debvoir envers le nouveau grand maistre [Claude de la Sangle] Et passera par l'isle de Corsque ou je se fayz conduire par mes gallaires que je luy ny presteés a cest effect, vous priant faire tres bien entendre a lad[icte] Dame que nous sommes si pres l'ung de l'autre que en troys ou quatre Jours l'on peult tousjours sçavoir laverité d'une chose et que Je la prie quand elle sera en doubte de quelque affaire deppendant de moy, qu'elle m'en veuille faire advertir et je l'asseure de luy en esclarcir Incontinant le Cueur.[3]

---

[1] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 96, 97[r], X, fos. 114-5[r], 116[r] and XII, f.98; *CSP Spain*, XI, pp. 358-9, 401; *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 66, pp. 23-4.

[2] *Ibid*, 66, pp. 23-4.

[3] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.96 and X, fos. 114-5[r]. See also *ibid*, XII, f.103[r] and IX, f.97[r] and X, f.116[r], for Constable Montmorency's instructions to Noailles regarding the rumours surrounding Ireland, in which he orders the French ambassador to 'feist promptement responce pour vous donner assurance du contraire, affin den advertir incontinent la royne et les siegneurs de son conseil que peuuent bien croyre que de son couste il ne se dementira jamais de la droicte et sincere amytie quil a conceise delle et desa bonne volunte en son endroict'. For more on Malta and Corsica, see Tytler, *Edward VI and Mary*, II, pp. 250-3, 255.

Publicly, of course, Mary and her Council never *really* thought that the rumours were true or that Henri was *actually* behind the troubles in Ireland.[1] But the fact that some Scots had been cited as participants in the insurgent activity did bring into question whether their involvement had been sanctioned by the Scottish Government or, given her obvious French connections, the subversive work of Marie de Guise.

Although Henri was assured that Mary Tudor 'did not believe that these disturbances were done by the privy maintenance of the Scottish rulers, but reckoned such a report to be untruly spread by those light savage people', the French King was nevertheless compelled to defend Guise publicly. The English Queen was reassured that the 'Queen Dowager of Scotland is as glad of her Majesty's accession as any may be, and equally desirous of peace'.[2] As for the Scots who participated in the revolts, blame was specifically attributed to 'les Sauvages', presumably a reference to the redshanks and gallowglasses of the Western Isles who, as Jane Dawson notes, 'provided the backbone of the fighting forces of the Gaelic chieftains and were the basis of their successful resistance to the English'.[3] But was the activity of these mercenaries an exercise in intrigue and, if so, at whose instigation?

The answer to the first question is more than likely no. The government in Edinburgh had very little control over the mercenary trade to Ireland and even less control over the activities of the MacDonalds there - a situation which the English found completely foreign and incomprehensible. This is not to say that intrigues in Ireland

---

[1] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, fos. 108^{r}, 114^{r}.

[2] *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 66, pp. 23-4.

[3] Dawson, 'Two Kingdoms or Three?', p.115.

had not been considered. Noailles, for one, strongly advocated a policy of intrigue in Ireland as part of an overall attempt to sway English public opinion against the Tudor-Habsburg dynastic alliance. In October 1553, he suggested to Marie de Guise that, owing to the discontent brewing in certain sectors of English society over Mary Tudor's marital intentions, the time was right to fan the flames of discord in Ireland.[1] There is no evidence to suggest, however, that Guise heeded the French ambassador's advice; then again, did she really need to when the Scots were already causing the English Queen so much aggravation? All that could be done to allay English fears was to ply Mary with fair words. Reassuring her that the Scots who had travelled to Ireland to participate in the revolts were 'les Sauvages' and exiled Scots of bad lives, it was actually claimed that Marie de Guise wanted them placed in the English Queen's hands so that they would then receive the punishment they deserved.[2]

Similarly, in 1555/6, Scottish insurgent activity in Ireland was the source of contention between the 'auld enemies'. In November 1555, Archibald Campbell, Master of Argyll and Lord Lorne, led his first independent military expedition to Ireland in order to assist Calvagh O'Donnell in his quest to overthrow his father, Manus O'Donnell of Tyrconnell.[3] On 1 November 1555, Calvagh, Lorne and his expeditionary

---

[1] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, f.89^{r}. In December 1553, Sir James Croft, former deputy of Ireland (1551-1552) and one of the conspirators behind Wyatt's rebellion, offered to 'susciter infinis Troubles en Angleterre et Irlande' on behalf of the French King. Nothing, however, came of this offer. *Ibid*, XI, f.111^{r}.

[2] *Ibid*, XII, fos. 108^{r}, 114^{r-v}.

[3] BL, Lansdowne MSS, 155.153, f.374^{r}; NLS, Adv.MSS, 34.1.11, f.110^{v}; *CSP Scot.*, I, 410, p.196. The 4th Earl of Argyll promised O'Donnell military support in a contract dated 13 July 1555. See J. Mackechnie, 'Treaty Between Argyll and O'Donnell', *Scottish Gaelic Studies*, vii (1953), pp. 94-102; *Highland Papers*, IV, pp. 212-6. I am extremely grateful to Jane Dawson for her advice on this matter and for providing me with some background information on Lord Lorne, who is the subject of her forthcoming work on the 5th Earl of Argyll.

force of Highland troops invaded Donegal and, together with the MacDonalds, succeeded in capturing Manus O'Donnell, while also taking possession of several castles, killing and imprisoning many Irish subjects, and generally laying waste to an area of approximately 60 square miles.[1] Needless to say, the insurgent activity of such a large number of Scots evoked a rapid response from Mary Tudor. Sir Thomas Challoner was immediately sent to Scotland in February 1555/6 to seek redress from the Queen Regent. But during this diplomatic mission, Challoner was also commissioned to engage in some covert activity – namely, to discover by whatever means possible, 'what practises they [the Scots] haue with France, and ... what their meaninge is in the matter of Ireland'.[2]

Challoner's instructions clearly reveal the English government's incredulity that Lord Lorne's expedition was staged without the involvement of the Scottish government. Their suspicions were raised by the fact that Lorne had 'sondrie good vessells well furnished for the warres' *and* 'divers great peeces of ordennce of brasse', which did not seem to be 'the furniture of a comon subiect', but ordnance that was 'more than like to have comen from some greater power than themselues'.[3] Although Marie de Guise was aware of the naval preparations being made by Argyll, she did not authorise, sanction or furnish Lord Lorne's expedition to Ireland.[4] On the contrary,

---

[1] BL, Lansdowne MSS, 155.153, f.373^{r-v}; NLS, Adv.MSS, 34.1.11, f.110^{v}; *CSP Scot.*, I, 410, p.196; *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 486, p.213.

[2] See BL, Lansdowne MSS, 155.153, fos. 373-5^{r}; NLS, Adv.MSS, 34.1.11, fos. 110-1; and *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 410, p.196, for Challoner's complete set of instructions.

[3] BL, Lansdowne MSS, 155.153, f.374^{r}; NLS, Adv.MSS, 34.1.11, f.100^{v}.

[4] *TA*, X, p. 287; *RPC*, XIV, p.14. Marie de Guise had commissioned the Earls of Argyll and Atholl to pass into the Western Isles on 27 June 1555.

Guise tried to stop the expedition by sending explicit instructions to Argyll on 8 October 1555, 'nocht to pas in Irland'.[1] Whether Argyll received Guise's instructions too late to prevent his son's departure or whether he simply chose to ignore them is unknown. What this episode does reveal, however, is the lack of control the Scottish government had over the activities of certain Scots in Ireland and Scotland, who more often than not and despite appearances to the contrary, acted independently of the crown. As we shall see in the next chapter, this was a particular problem that Marie de Guise sought to rectify in her domestic policy, which aimed to strengthen the authority of the crown and assert royal power in the localities.

***

Mary Tudor had every reason to be suspicious of Franco-Scottish intrigues in England and Ireland. The complicity of the French in Wyatt's ill-fated rebellion in January-February 1553/4 was no secret. Both Noailles and d'Oisel had been in communication with the leaders of the conspirators, who planned to oppose their Queen's dynastic policy through a series of revolts in Devon, Leicestershire, Kent and the Welsh borders in March 1554.[2] Part of d'Oisel's commission upon returning to Scotland in January 1553/4, was to reiterate Henri's willingness to back the conspiracy on condition that the rebellion received enough public support that its success could be guaranteed.[3] By the

---

[1] *TA*, X, p. 298.

[2] Edward Courtenay, earl of Devonshire, Sir James Croft, Sir Peter Carew, Sir Edward Rogers and Sir Thomas Wyatt. E.H. Harbison, *Rival Ambassadors at the Court of Queen Mary* (Princeton, 1940), pp. 109-36, especially pp. 120-5; Loades, *Two Tudor Conspiracies* (Cambridge, 1965), pp. 12-88; Wernham, *Before the Armada*, pp. 208-20.

[3] On 23 November 1553, Henri instructed d'Oisel that, 'si vous voyez that ce soit a bon essient que leschoses s'eschauffassent et que la dicte Royne se resolvent a prendre pour mary le deict Prince d'Espaigne, aussi qu'il y ait apparence que ledict de Courntenay soit despose et ait moyen de brouiller les cartes vour pourrez encoures plus asseurement dire que vous estes [sure] que pour ung si grand bien audit

time d'Oisel had returned to the archipelago, all indications were that public opinion was decidedly against the marriage. As early as December 1553, Noailles had written optimistically to Marie de Guise that, 'ie la [Mary] pense plus espagnolle que Angloise et qu'elle porte une hayne conceue de long temps a sa propre nation de quoy elle n'est rien deceue car ses subjetz ne luy portent pas meilleure volunté'.[1] While the Queen Regent sincerely hoped that the Anglo-Scottish peace would continue, she nevertheless shared the belief that Mary Tudor's marriage to Philip of Spain would prove disastrous. Writing to Noailles in December 1553, Guise commented that, 'Quant au mariage de vostre Royne, je ne puis penser que le pays ne soit fort mal content si elle se marie hors d'iceluy et il en fauldra voir la fin'.[2] In this, Guise was of the same mind as d'Oisel, the Duc de Guise and the Cardinal de Lorraine, who believed that the Habsburg threat emanating out of England could only be countered by a pro-active policy.[3] The aggressive stance that Henri was willing to take in England in November 1553 can be attributed to the influence of 'les Guises', who took advantage of Montmorency's sick leave from court to promote their interventionist policy over the Constable's favoured and precautionary course of action - diplomacy.[4]

It was during his week's sojourn in London, that d'Oisel became directly involved in the anti-Marian conspiracy. In an attempt to translate public sentiment into

---

Royaulme [England], Je ne voudrois pas luy desnier ma faveur, ny-aux aultres seigneurs qui cognoissant le mal que cell peult amener a leur Royaulme si vouldroient opposer'. AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.99; Harbison, *Rival Ambassadors*, pp. 115-6.

[1] 24 December 1553, AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.106; Harbison, *Rival Ambassadors*, p.119.

[2] 7 December 1553, AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, f.123[r].

[3] *Ibid*, IX, fos. 142, 143, 148, 21, 185.

[4] *Ibid*, IX, f. 90; Harbison, *Rival Ambassadors*, pp. 115-20.

effective action, d'Oisel worked closely with the conspirators and all but promised them that if the enterprise was to go ahead as planned, men, money and munition would be forthcoming from France.[1] But by the time Henri had finally made the decision to support the English rebels on 26 January 1553/4, it was too late.[2] When his messenger reached London with the news, the rebellion had already come and gone. Details of the conspiracy had been leaked and had reached the ears of Mary. Reports that she and her council were working to break up the enterprise forced the conspirators to act prematurely and, as it would turn out, unsuccessfully.[3]

The collapse of Wyatt's rebellion on 7 February 1553/4, however, did nothing to quell anti-Marian sentiment, reduce opposition to the Anglo-Imperial alliance or put an end to French intrigues in England.[4] The English exiles who fled to France to escape persecution continued to plot against Mary and to look to Henri for support in their quest to overthrow the English government by armed insurrection.[5] Fears of armed insurrection and foreign invasion were also kept alive by French intrigues emanating from Scotland.

---

[1] Neither d'Oisel nor Noailles had been authorised to give an official promise of aid at this time. They were simply to encourage the conspirators with the prospect of French military and financial assistance. But according to Croft and Wyatt's confession, d'Oisel had promised them men, money and munition. AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, IX, fos. 114-5, 273^{v}-4; Tytler, *Edward VI and Mary*, II, p.306; Harbison, *Rival Ambassadors*, pp. 122-4.

[2] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, fos. 156-7^{r}.

[3] For details of the rebellion see *ibid*, IX, f.118 and XII, fos. 167^{v}-9; Loades, *Mary Tudor*, pp. 81-2; Harbison, *Rival Ambassadors*, pp. 125-36; Wernham, *Before the Armada*, pp. 215-6.

[4] See, for example, Noailles' comments to d'Oisel on 21 February 1553/4 in AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, fos. 172-3^{r}. Nothing substantial came of these plots. Henry Dudley's plan to lead a revolt in England and later, to take Calais, was abandoned because details of the plot had been leaked, while Thomas Stafford's invasion of England led only to a brief occupation of Scarborough Castle. Loades, *Two Tudor Conspiracies*, pp. 151-75; Wernham, *Before the Armada*, p.231.

[5] Loades, *Two Tudor Conspiracies*, pp. 151-75.

Throughout 1554, various plots were concocted to cause problems for Mary Tudor on the Anglo-Scottish Border. One such conspirator was Mark Antony (Mario Antonio Erzio), a servant of Courtenay, who 'fled' to Scotland in January 1553/4 on the pretence that he was dissatisfied in his patron's employ.[1] On the surface, Scotland was a logical place for Antony to flit to because he was married to a Scot, but the fact that he was also one of Noailles' agents and an acquaintance of d'Oisel caused more than one eyebrow to be raised in London.[2] It did not take long before the English Council's suspicions proved correct and reports filtered through that Antony was indeed plotting at Berwick.[3] Contemporaneous with these reports were d'Oisel's own communiqués to Noailles in which he described the practices of a gentleman, 'qui en fou mon amy et grandement alleé en ladicte frontiere' to enlist the services of various English officials, such as Lords Wharton and Dacre.[4] It is quite possible that this particular gentleman was Antony, who was sent by Noailles and used by d'Oisel to rally the support of the gentlemen of the north against the Spanish marriage and 'pour s'ayder de leur part a maintenir et conserver leur liberté et se garder de tumber en ceste servitude miserable ou l'Empereur et ledict Prince [Philip] desirent les mettre'.[5] Orders for Antony's arrest were consequently issued and, by 10 March, he had been captured and scheduled to be interrogated by Dacre.[6] The Council's request that a transcript of Antony's

---

[1] *CSP Spain*, XII, p.17.

[2] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, fos. 98^{v}-9^{r}.

[3] *CSP Spain*, XII, p.17.

[4] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 142, 148; Tytler, *Edward VI and Mary*, II, p.307.

[5] Noailles to d'Oisel, 22 January 1553/4, AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.121.

[6] *APC*, IV, pp. 382, 408.

interrogation be returned to them 'with speede' is perhaps indicative of the seriousness with which they perceived the threat that French intrigues posed to Mary's administration on the Anglo-Scottish Border.

Philip's anticipated arrival in England sparked a renewed attempt to stir up trouble on the Border by soliciting the Percys of Northumberland to 'raise ane commotioun and insurrectioun of the leigis of England' against Mary Tudor and her authority.[1] This plot is of particular significance not simply because Scotland served as a conduit for French intrigues in England, but because it was instigated by and directly involved the Scots.[2] The principal agent in this enterprise was a servant of Bothwell, John Pringle. While travelling through England as part of the Bishop of Ross' retinue, Pringle made contact with Henry, 8th earl of Percy, a staunch opponent of the Spanish marriage, and offered him 'great pensions, rewards, prerogatives and armed support to start trouble near the Scottish border'.[3] But before anything could come of this association, Pringle was arrested and detained in English custody on 16 April 1554.[4] When it came to pointing the finger and assigning blame, Pringle left no holds barred. In his confession, the French King, the Queen Regent, d'Oisel, Bothwell and the Bishop of Ross were all named as the chief devisers of the plot, upon whose instructions Pringle claimed he was acting.[5]

---

[1] *RPC*, XIV, p.126.

[2] *CSP Spain*, XII, pp. 221-2; *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 199, pp. 80-1; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.185^{v}.

[3] *CSP Spain*, XII, p.221; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.185^{v}.

[4] *Ibid*, IX, f.165.

[5] *CSP Spain*, XII, pp. 221-2; *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 199, pp. 80-1; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, IX, Angleterre, f.185^{v}.

For their part, Guise and d'Oisel denied that they 'motionit tresown or conspirasy aganis ony Prince', and implored Mary Tudor to 'haif na sic conssait of ws that we suld haif committit sic chargis to sic as James Hoppringill ... for he had nowther lettre nor credit of ws to nane within hir realme, and, gif we had bene evill myndit, we culd haif gottin mony hiear consalis to haif set furth the samin nor be this Hoppringill'.[1] Privately they shifted the blame onto Bothwell. According to d'Oisel, Bothwell was the one who had devised this plot and proposed it to the Queen Regent in the hope that he could weasel his way back into her favour. If he was allowed to return to either Scotland or France, Bothwell assured Guise that he would then have the means to do her service, as he was a man who had many friends in the north of England. Naturally Guise's interest was raised by such talk, but she was determined not to show it in front of Bothwell. Instead, she chose to let him know her long held opinion of him – that he was an 'homme vain et mol et ne pas pour manier quelque bonne praticque'.[2] It was presumably at this point that Guise took charge of the affair and began working out the finer details of the conspiracy. As for Pringle, he remained in English custody until 14 February 1554/5, when he was 'delyvered out of the Kinges Benche, and was ordered by the Lords within tenne dayes after his delyverie to tary no lenger within the realme, but to departe the same at his further peril'.[3]

---

[1] *RPC*, XIV, pp. 126-7. Quinten Kennedy, the abbot of Crossraguel and Cassillis' brother, was sent to convey Guise's denial to the English Queen. *Ibid*, XIV, pp.126-7; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 184, 197, 198-9.

[2] *Ibid*, IX, f.185^{v}.

[3] *APC*, V, p.97; PRO, 3/31/33. Despite the fact that Pringle had also implicated Bishop of Ross in the conspiracy, the latter escaped with only a warning, 'although such dishonourable dealing might by law have justified the detention of the Bishop'. *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 199, pp. 80-1; *CSP Spain*, XII, p.222.

Ultimately failing in their objective to prevent the Spanish marriage, and, later, to prevent the arrival and coronation of Philip as King of England, Franco-Scottish intrigues succeeded only in heightening the tensions within the archipelago that climaxed in the summer of 1555. Never before during Mary Tudor's reign had Scotland and England been so close to becoming directly involved in the Habsburg-Valois conflict as enemies. What threatened to tip the balance between war and peace, however, had nothing directly to do with either of the Habsburg-Valois powers. Rather, the potential catalyst came from a somewhat surprising source, Christian III of Denmark.

In June and July 1555, reports that great naval and military preparations were being made by the King of Denmark for a descent on Scotland sent shock waves throughout the archipelago. The reason for the widespread alarm was the uncertainty surrounding the purpose of Christian III's naval expedition and, more importantly, whether Scotland or England was the Danish King's ultimate destination. Rumours and supposition gave both sides cause for worry. For the Scots, rumours that Charles V had furnished the Danish King's naval expedition with munition seemed to confirm reports that Scotland was the intended target.[1] The lack of intelligence coming out of France on the matter also served to substantiate and fuel Scottish fears. The failure of Henri and Montmorency to respond to d'Oisel and Noailles' repeated requests for news, particularly with respect to the state of Franco-Danish relations, left them only to presume that Christian was no longer observing the peace with France and that Scotland

[1] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 468-72.

was, indeed, the focus of his attention.[1] As to the purpose of Christian's expedition, Marie de Guise and d'Oisel first thought that he intended to reclaim the Orkney and Shetland Isles as Danish territory. If this was indeed the case, the remoteness of these isles and the absence of any armed forces there, made them extremely vulnerable and ready for the taking. If, however, the Danish made their descent at St. Andrews or Leith, as later reports suggested they would,[2] the chances of fending them off with the combined forces of France and Scotland were greatly improved.[3] Although Christian had written to the Queen Regent assuring her that the only purpose of his naval expedition was to suppress piracy round his shores, alarming reports continued to flow in that the Danish army was planning to make a descent on Scotland, and neither Guise nor d'Oisel were prepared to take any chances.[4] A force of 12,000 men was assembled and deployed to Shetland and Orkney, where several ships were stationed to act as a hopeful deterrent.[5] Steps were also taken to secure and reinforce the Border. Marie de Guise ordered two musters to meet at Dumfries in July and August for the purpose of 'repressing the West Bordouris'.[6] So well fortified was Dumfries in the summer of

---

[1] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 468-72, 476[r], 480-1, 482[r], 488[r], 489, 490, 493.

[2] *Ibid*, IX, fos. 482[r], 486, 490, 492, 501-2, 503[r]; St. Andrews University Library, Special Collections, msDA784.7, ms4347.

[3] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.471[r].

[4] 12 July 1555, SRO, SP13/77. Noailles wrote to Montmorency that the rumours of a Danish invasion were 'si chaud en Escosse que mesmes la royne regente et ledict Sr DOisel auoient pourveu acequils auoient cognu estre necessaire ne scachant qu penser pour vn temps comme ils ne necessaire ne font encores ainsy que le roy et vous pourrez reoir par la lettre que ledict Sr DOisel men a escrite'. AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.493[r].

[5] *Ibid*, IX, fos. 480-1; LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, f.75[r].

[6] *RPC*, XIV, pp. 13-4, 162-3; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, IX, fos. 501-2, 503[r]; St. Andrews University Library, Special Collections, msDA784.7, ms4347; LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, f.107; *TA*, X, pp. 259-61; *RSS*, IV, 3038-9, 3155, pp. 534, 557.

1555 that even Lord Conyers felt compelled to comment that 'the Danishe fleete shold moch inquier of the state and streneth of this towne'.[1]

The English were similarly unenlightened as to Christian III's real intentions, and just as worried.[2] Another rumour circulating at the time and one personally favoured by d'Oisel, was that the Danish King intended to use Scotland as a back door to England in order to provide Princess Elizabeth and England's Protestants with military support against Mary and Philip.[3] Once again, the conspicuous absence of any news from France left room for speculation. Could Henri's silence be interpreted as a sign of his complicity?[4] The nature and extent of French intrigues in England left no doubt as to Henri's true feelings for Mary Tudor, and as no word had come from France intimating that the Franco-Danish peace had broken down, Christian's expedition could be seen as yet another Valois attempt to stir up trouble in England. As a result, orders were issued by the English Council to the Wardens of the Marches 'to learne by thier best espialles what tyme the shippes of Denmarke cam into scotland, and to what port they intend, and what is said to be their meanyng', while the Earl of Shrewsbury, the newly appointed Lord President of the Council of the North, was sent north with orders to place the Borders in readiness to fight at one hour's notice.[5]

---

[1] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, f.107.

[2] *APC*, V, p.160; LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, fos. 75^{r}, 125^{r}.

[3] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 465, 480-1.

[4] *Ibid*, IX, fos. 480-1.

[5] *APC*, V, p.160; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 465, 490, 493. For Shrewsbury's appointment see *RPC*, XIV, pp. 159-62.

In the end, the Danish threat came to nothing and Scotland and England were spared formal entry into the Habsburg-Valois conflict. No descent was made at St. Andrews or Leith, nor was there an attempt to take the Shetland and Orkney Isles. In fact, there was not even a single sighting of the King of Denmark's navy anywhere along Scotland's north or east coastlines.[1] On 21 August 1555, a Danish envoy arrived in Scotland with letters of explanation from Christian III to Marie de Guise. According to these, naval and military preparations were made in response to a rumour that Henri was plotting, with the support of the Scots, to oust Christian from his throne in favour of Charles III, duc de Lorraine and Marie de Guise's second cousin.[2] As this rumour was circulating at a time when several thousand of his subjects were already revolting against him, the Danish King felt it necessary to assemble his forces and deal with a particular gentleman named 'Pillard', who had apparently already made several naval descents on Denmark in the name of France and Scotland.[3] Upon hearing these explanations, the Danish envoy was assured by Guise that, 'il n'ya a *aujourd'huy* un seul navire de Guerre Escossoys a la mer' - the naval fleet sent to the Orkney and Shetland Isles in July, presumably having been recalled. The Dane then made the

---

[1] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 501-2, 503[r].

[2] Although technically an independent duchy, Lorraine had been governed by a French regent, Nicolas de Vaudémont, duc de Mercoeur, since 1552. Vaudémont was the Duc de Lorraine's uncle and Marie de Guise's first cousin. He supplanted his pro-Habsburg sister-in-law, Christina, Duchesse de Lorraine and Charles V's niece, as regent after Henri persuaded her to resign her post, send her son to reside at the French Court and consent to the latter's marriage with the French King's daughter, Claude. This, in addition to Henri's successful capture of the Three Bishoprics of Lorraine, helped to establish and maintain the permanent influence France would have in Lorraine up until its formal annexation in 1766. See Baumgarter, *Henry II*, pp. 150-3, and pp. 146-57, for his discussion on Henri's treaty with the German Princes and his subsequent 'Promenade on the Rhine' in 1551-2.

[3] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, fos. 417[v]-8.

curious observation that neither the Scots nor the French[1] had had an ambassador resident in Denmark for about two years, whereas the Emperor had sent one about the same time Christian began to raise his army.[2] Was he suggesting that the Habsburgs were behind these intrigues with the purpose of turning allies into enemies? This was certainly not implausible, but the extent or nature of Imperial involvement is unclear and d'Oisel did not elaborate on this point when relating it to Noailles. Nevertheless, the uncharacteristic ignorance of d'Oisel and Noailles on French affairs, especially as they pertained to Scotland, together with the Danish envoy's attestations that Christian III 'continue en bonne & seure amitié avecques le Roy nostre Masitre, & la Royne & Royaulme d'Escosse & ne nous faict ... aucune querelle des Isles Dorquenay & de Chitland', suggests that both parties were the victims of some sort of foreign intrigue.[3]

Amicable relations having been restored, or rather reconfirmed between France, Scotland and Denmark, the immediate crisis was over. For the time being, Scotland and England had avoided being drawn into the Habsburg-Valois conflict despite all indications to the contrary. In February 1555/6, the five year truce of Vaucelles brought a short respite to the Continental wars, taking away at least some of the pressure from the Habsburg and Valois allies within the archipelago. As we shall see in Chapter VII,

---

[1] It is unclear from d'Oisel's statement, 'Ledit Gentilhomme m'asseure que **nous** n'avons poinct d'Ambassadeur Resident comme de coustume par dela, Il y a plus d'ung an & demy ou deux, & au contraire que l'Empereur ye en a tousjours tenu ung depuis le commencement de la levée de ladit armee', whether 'nous' refers to the Scots, the French or both. For convenience, I have taken it to mean the latter, implying that the French and the Scots were united in their opposition to the Imperialists. AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XII, f.418^{v}.

[2] *Ibid*, XII, f.418^{v}.

[3] *Ibid*, XII, f.418^{v}.

however, England's formal declaration of war against France in June 1557 meant that Scotland's days of non-involvement were fast coming to a close.

***

For Marie de Guise, the tensions that arose from Mary Tudor's accession and marriage to Philip of Spain served only to highlight the importance and the need for law and order in Scotland. It has already been mentioned on several occasions how the Queen Regent regarded the lack of justice on the Borders not only as an impediment to the peace, but also, and perhaps more importantly, as a threat to national security. The next two chapters seek to examine the ways by which Marie de Guise attempted to fulfil her commission for the 'execution of justice and ordouring of the cuntre' during her regency.[1] Chapter V will set out the general aims of the Queen Regent's policy in Scotland, while Chapter VI will focus specifically on the Borders and the Highlands and Isles, examining the various methods Guise employed to impose order and provide for the effective administration and execution of justice. As we shall see, Marie de Guise's quest to restore law and order was inextricably connected with her determination to assert her own authority, and extend royal authority into the localities.

[1] *RPC*, I, p.90.

CHAPTER V

Marie de Guise's Administration and Policy in Scotland

Although the extremely volatile international situation was her predominant concern, domestic affairs were also of prime importance for Marie de Guise during her regency. The debilitating effects of seven years of 'rough wooing', coupled with a decade of plague and famine had resulted in widespread dearth, prolific violence and a general state of lawlessness and disorder. Mary Tudor's accession and marriage to Philip of Spain served only to highlight the underlying need for law and order and, in consequence, the importance of restoring stability to the realm through a powerful monarchy and strong central government. The general aims of Marie de Guise's administration and policy in Scotland, therefore, were overwhelmingly concerned with asserting the authority of the crown and pursuing royal justice.

Adhering to the tradition established by her Stewart predecessors, Marie de Guise turned to Parliament to respond to the events that had disrupted Scottish society. On the whole, the legislation enacted during Guise's regency aimed to advance the interests of the crown at the expense of local jurisdictions. By extending royal authority into the localities, Guise was not only shifting the balance of power to the advantage of the crown, but was also making a clear statement as to the role the Second Estate was expected to play in her administration. Magnates such as Châtelherault, Huntly, Argyll, Sutherland and Maxwell were required to enforce, execute and administer the Queen's laws as extensions of royal power, not as autonomous agents of the crown. As we shall see in Chapter VI, this was particularly true with respect to the Highlands, Western Isles

and Borders, where the assertion of royal power was seen to be of paramount importance for the defence and stability of the realm, and where failure to execute the Queen's will met with fierce recrimination. But Guise also recognised her own role in asserting and enforcing the authority of the crown. From the time she returned to Scotland in 1551, Guise took an active interest in affairs of state and was determined to establish a strong, yet personal royal presence. Her progresses to the Border and Highlands, for instance, were deliberate attempts to impose law, order and royal power through a visible display of force.

But these were not Marie de Guise's only objectives. War had also emptied Scotland's coffers, and the complete absence of any sound fiscal policy during Châtelherault's administration (a problem which was exacerbated by his own personal greed) made the augmentation of crown revenue another priority for the Queen Regent. Again, the pressing matter of finance was inextricably associated with Euro-British dynastic politics. Guise needed money not only to subsidise her defensive policies against the Anglo-Imperial threat emanating from England, but also to finance the establishment and maintenance of her daughter's household in France. Upon becoming regent, therefore, Marie de Guise faced many obstacles before she could fulfil her commission for the 'ordouring of the cuntre' and putting the 'realme to ane quyateness'.[1] To help her in this task, Guise relied on the support and advice of the Frenchmen and Scotsmen who served officially and unofficially on her council.

***

[1] *RPC*, I, p.90; *Scottish Correspondence*, ccliii, p.379.

Much of the negative imagery surrounding Marie de Guise and her regency in Scotland is based on the allegedly dominant role Frenchmen played in her administration, and, in particular, the key offices of state they held to the exclusion of the Scottish nobility – the natural born councillors of the realm. This is largely due to the fact that Marie de Guise's régime is conventionally used to establish the context of the Reformation Rebellion. The fact that modern scholarship also tends to be written from the perspective of the Lords of the Congregation (the victors of the conflict) and based on sources such as John Knox's *History of the Reformation in Scotland* serves only to reinforce and perpetuate this negative image. The composition of Guise's council is one area in which historians have done very little to test the extent to which the Congregation's propaganda bore any relation to the facts. The presence of Frenchmen and, in particular, the 'officiers francois qui avoient este constituez aux plus grandz offices du royaulme comme garde des sceaulx', was one argument used by the Congregation to show that Guise's true objective was the 'interpysed destructioun of thair ... commoun-weall, and overthrow of the libertie of thair native cuntree, be the meanes of the Quene Regente and certane strangearis her Prevey Counsallouris'.[1] But, as we shall see, only three Frenchmen had any formal position of power in Scotland during Guise's regency, and only two of them were actually on the council, which continued to be dominated by the Scots.

As with any new administration, changes in the composition of the council inevitably followed Marie de Guise's assumption of the regency. However, this did not

[1] *Brosse Missions*, p.150; Knox, *History*, I, p.140 and *Works*, I, pp. 292-3, 444.

entail a complete 'cabinet re-shuffle'. Many of those who comprised Guise's inner circle were veterans of Châtelherault's administration.[1] Huntly, for example, retained his Chancellorship,[2] while James, 4th lord Fleming, and David Paniter, bishop of Ross, both carried on in their respective posts as Royal Chamberlain and Secretary until their deaths in 1558.[3] Sir John Bellenden of Auchnoul also continued to serve as Justice Clerk, as did Alexander Livingston of Donypace as Director of the Chancery. Yet, there were inevitable changes. Donald Campbell, Abbot of Cupar, for example, replaced George Durie, Commendator of Dunfermline, as Keeper of the Privy Seal, while James Makgill of Nether Rankeillour replaced Thomas Marjoribanks of Ratho as Clerk Register.[4] The most significant change was the appointment of Gilbert Kennedy, earl of Cassillis, as Lord High Treasurer.[5] Cassillis' appointment is but one example of how Guise continued to use patronage as a means of consolidating political support, and accommodating those who had Protestant and/or anglophile inclinations. A noted reformer and ex-'assured Scot', Cassillis had already profited by supporting Guise and

---

[1] For the composition of both Châtelherault and Marie de Guise's councils, see the sederunt and witness lists contained in *RPC*, I, and *RMS*, IV.

[2] Appointed on 5 June 1546, Huntly retained this office until his death on 28 October 1562. Annie Cameron suggests that the only reason Huntly retained the Chancellorship was because Guise was not strong enough to oust him. But, as we shall see in Chapter VI, it seems that Guise was making an example of Huntly in order to assert her authority over the rest of the nobility. *HBC*, p.183; *Scottish Correspondence*, pp. 374-5; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.722.

[3] Fleming was appointed Chamberlain on 12 November 1553. After his death in December 1558, the office was left vacant until his successor, John, 5th lord Fleming filled the post on 30 June 1565. David Paniter was appointed Secretary on 20 January 1543. Serving in both Arran and Guise's administrations, he held this post until his death on 1 October 1558 – save for four months in 1543, when Henry Balnaves of Halhill held the office. He was succeeded by William Maitland of Lethington on 4 December 1558. *HBC*, pp. 186, 193.

[4] *Ibid*, p.197.

[5] *Ibid*, p.188.

the proposed Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance.[1] His appointment as Lord High Treasurer in 1554 was no doubt an attempt by Guise to consolidate this support. Of greater importance, perhaps, was the message she simultaneously sent to her Protestant subjects. By including them in her administration, they were reassured that they would not be marginalised or made to suffer, personally or politically, simply on account of their faith. As we shall see in Chapter VII, Guise's accommodating position was never more apparent than in her choice of negotiating commissioners for her daughter's marriage treaty. The prominent role played by Lord James Stewart and Erskine of Dun in forging the dynastic union of the French and Scottish *Catholic* crowns sent the clear and reassuring message that Guise's dynastic policies were not necessarily incompatible with the reform movement in Scotland.

The composition of Marie de Guise's council seems to have changed very little during her regency. The witness lists contained in the *Registrum Magni Sigilli Regum Scotorum* for this period show the regular attendance of those listed above, in addition to the noted reformer, Archibald Campbell, 4th earl of Argyll (until his death in 1558), and John Hamilton, archbishop of St. Andrews. From late 1557 onwards, James Douglas, 4th earl of Morton, a signatory of the First Band of the Congregation, and James Hepburn, 4th earl of Bothwell were in regular attendance, the latter in his capacity as Lord High Admiral of Scotland. James Beaton, archbishop of Glasgow, William Chisholm, bishop of Dunblane, and Robert Reid, bishop of Orkney and Lord President

[1] NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, fos. 143, 146 and MSS, 2991, f.67^{v}; *Fourquevaux Mission*, p.18.

of the Court of Session, conversely, are recorded as having appeared only once.[1] As with her distribution of patronage, therefore, Scots of all religious and political persuasions had representation in Marie de Guise's council. What these witness lists do not contain, however, are the names of the two Frenchmen who were also members of the Privy Council – Bartholomew de Villemore, Comptroller, and Yves du Rubay, vice-Chancellor.

Appointed on 1 May 1555, Villemore was the receiver general of all crown revenue.[2] This consisted of the fruits, rents and ordinary revenue from duchies, earldoms and crown lands, plus all the customs duties from burghs and ports.[3] But it was not a Frenchman at the helm of the exchequer that became a bone of contention for the Scots – it was du Rubay's possession of the Great Seal as vice-Chancellor that was particularly disliked. The Congregation's complaint of 12 May 1560 concerning the Frenchmen who held the key offices of state was directly aimed at du Rubay. However, the conspicuous absence of du Rubay's name from sederunts and witness lists, particularly during Huntly's period of disgrace (1554-5), raises certain questions.[4] By 20 November 1554, Huntly's name disappears completely from the witness lists and does not reappear until 19 October 1555, by which time he had been restored to favour and reinstated as Chancellor.[5] If du Rubay was acting vice-Chancellor, why is his name

---

[1] Robert Reid died in 1558. *HBC*, p.198; *RMS*, IV, 1221, 1258, 1261, 1269, 1272, 1280-2, 1305, 1315, 1334, 1350, 1356, 1358, 1371-2, 1376-81, 1384-7, pp. 271, 280-1, 283-5, 287-8, 291-2, 293, 296-7, 300, 302, 306-12.

[2] *HBC*, p.191.

[3] P.G.B. McNeill (ed.), 'Discours Particulier d'Escosse, 1559/60', *The Stair Society Miscellany*, II (1984), pp. 100-1.

[4] Huntly's disgrace is discussed in Chapter VI, pp. 227-8.

[5] RMS, IV, 962-1006, pp. 217-26.

absent from the sederunts during this period? Marie de Guise's response to the Lords of the Congregation in 1560 may offer a possible explanation.

Dismissing the Congregation's complaint that French officers had been appointed to the most important offices of state, Guise reminded her accusers that du Rubay's position as 'garde des sceaulx' had received the consent of Parliament. But what Guise was in fact referring to was the Three Estates' ratification of Mary, Queen of Scots' marriage contract in April 1558, wherein it had been written that Guise had invested du Rubay with some of Huntly's powers as Chancellor.[1] The same treaty also naturalised the Scots as French citizens, which, in the words of Guise, enabled 'tous escossoys pourroient tenir offices e benefices en france comme les naturels subiectz'.[2] So, if neither the act of naturalisation nor du Rubay's powers as vice-Chancellor received Parliamentary consent until 1558, there is the possibility that he was acting in a purely 'unofficial' capacity and, therefore, ineligible to deputise for Huntly in every capacity of his Chancellorship. There is also the possibility that Guise, aware of the Scots' sensitivity to all forms of foreign domination, real or perceived, wished to play down the activities of her French ministers and advisers in Scottish affairs of state. The lack of source material for Guise's domestic administration, however, makes it difficult to come to grips with the machinations of her council or even, for example, to determine how often it met. This is, perhaps, an indication that council meetings were just a formality and the real business at hand was conducted within the Queen Regent's household, which was predominantly French and included such figures as de Villemore

---

[1] *APS*, II, p.513a.

[2] *Ibid*, II, p.507; *Brosse Missions*, pp. 150, 152.

and du Rubay.[1] But the most powerful Frenchman in Scotland was not a member either of Guise's council or her household; he was Henri's ambassador resident in Scotland, Henri Cleutin, seigneur d'Oisel et de Villeparisis.[2] The extraordinary role he played in Scottish affairs of state suggests that this is where the real power lay. Interestingly enough, moreover, it was a role that generally went uncriticised by the Scots.

D'Oisel's diplomatic post assumed far greater significance as a result of the Franco-Scottish protectoral alliance and the establishment of French power in Scotland. His appointment as the French King's Lieutenant-General of Scotland, which was made at the behest of Marie de Guise in the spring of 1552, essentially placed matters of national security, including Scotland's military affairs, within his jurisdiction.[3] More importantly, d'Oisel was also Marie de Guise's principal adviser and right-hand man. As such, he enjoyed a rather unique and powerful position within Scotland, enabling him to exert a considerable amount of influence and control over Scottish affairs of state - arguably more than Châtelherault did during the closing years of his regency. This can be evidenced by Henri's decision to leave d'Oisel in charge during Marie de Guise's trip to France in 1550-1551.[4] During the Queen Dowager's absence, he was reported to

---

[1] See Marie de Guise's household accounts in NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.5; SRO, E33/4, 5 and E34/12, 14, 17, 18, 20, 21, 25, 26, 27; *TA*, XI, pp. 24-7. On 13 January 1556/7, the Queen Regent asked Henri to provide du Rubay with some honourable estate in Scotland as a reward for his good service in her household, which he had apparently done at his own expense, and as means of inducing him to stay in Scotland. AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 9^{v}-10^{r}; *Papal Negotiations*, p.430.

[2] D'Oisel was the French King's ambassador resident in Scotland from 1546 to 1560.

[3] In the spring of 1552, Claude de l'Aubespine informed the Queen Dowager that, 'M. d'Oisel s'en est alle satisfaict ainsi que vous desirez, pourveu d'estat gentilhomme de la chambre, establi lieutenant general du Roy par dela, present deux mille excuz et de six cens francz par moys pour son estat, oultre sa pension et, qui est myeulx, avecques la tres bonne grace du Roy comme aussi en est-il tres digne'. *Balcarres Papers*, II, lxxxiv, lxxxi, pp. 111-3, 115-6.

[4] 19 May 1550, *Scottish Correspondence*, xlix, pp. 65-7.

have 'wielded almost sovereign authority in matters of state and justice'.[1] But it is the overall acceptance of d'Oisel by the Scottish political community that is of greater significance. At no time was d'Oisel the subject of criticism or the target of collective opposition like his compatriot and colleague, du Rubay. Rather, the French Ambassador was a well liked and well respected figure amongst the Scots.[2] When, for example, he was recalled by Henri to do service on the Continent during the Habsburg-Valois conflict in 1552, the Three Estates ordained that a remembrance of d'Oisel's 'guid seruice done in thir partis baith in tyme of peax and weir sould be writtin to the said maist Christin King not allanerlie thankand his grace of the samin bot alswa suppleand to thank and reward the said Monsieure Dosell'.[3]

D'Oisel's direct access to both Marie de Guise and Henri also contributed to his importance and boosted his 'popularity' amongst the Scots. During Huntly's disgrace and imprisonment in Edinburgh Castle, it was d'Oisel to whom he turned for help. 'My lord', he wrote, 'I man mast hartie dyssyir your lordship be say gud as to contenew in your lawbris for me, and that your lordship wyll tak one yow my part and serwyce to the quenyis grace'.[4] Even the Lords of the Congregation pleaded with the French Ambassador to act on their behalf during the Reformation Rebellion in May 1559, 'requiring of him, that by his wisdome he wold mitigate the Quenis raige, and the raige

---

[1] *CSP Spain*, X, pp. 339, 340.

[2] See, for example, Cassillis' remarks upon hearing of d'Oisel's appointment as Lieutenant-General and of his imminent return to Scotland in May 1552: 'I am glaid of the gwd treitment and awansement of monsieur DOisel, and also glaid of his retwirning bayth for the Kengis serwis and weil of this contre'. *Balcarres Papers*, II, ccxlii, p.360.

[3] *APS*, II, p.489.

[4] 4 January 1554/5, *Scottish Correspondence*, cclxiii, pp. 395-6.

of the Preastis'.[1] As with Marie de Guise, Knox's opinion of d'Oisel changed drastically after the latter refused to do as the Congregation had asked, but rather chose to suppress their letters 'to the uttermost of thair [the French] power'.[2]

Together, Marie de Guise and d'Oisel were a formidable political team. They not only 'wrolet' [ruled], but were also fortunate that 'allin Scotland obey and lyketh them'.[3] As such, d'Oisel commonly received presents alongside the Queen Regent. On 16 December 1555, for instance, the 'prouest baillies and counsale' of Edinburgh thought it expedient 'to propine the Quenis grace with four scoir pundis worth of wyne walx and spycery ... and xx *li* worth to Monsieur Dosell', while in August 1556, their Aberdeen counterparts ordained that a propine of 'two tonnis of wyne, with spycerie and wax, extending to the sowme of tuenty poundis' be given to the Queen Regent and 'half ane twn of wyne, ane dossain of torchis, and two dossund bustis of scorchettis' be given to d'Oisel.[4] As with any double act, the death of Marie de Guise in June 1560 marked the end of d'Oisel's diplomatic and military career in Scotland. However, throughout the 1550s, he was not only the most influential and, arguably, the most powerful Frenchman in Scotland, but also Marie de Guise's closest ally.

The power and position of Frenchmen in Scotland did not assume any great significance for the Scots themselves until after the marriage of their Queen to the Dauphin in 1558 and the death of Henri II in July 1559. The formal union of the French

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, p.327 and *History*, I, p.166.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, p.329 and *History*, I, p.166.

[3] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, f.173[r]. This observation is all the more poignant having come from an Englishman, Sir Thomas Wharton, on 30 October 1555.

[4] *Edinburgh Burgh Recs.*, II, pp. 227, 257; *Aberdeen Council Register*, pp. 300, 298.

and Scottish crowns brought into question the traditional role of the Scottish nobles in governing the kingdom. In this respect, Huntly's fall from grace assumed great importance. Although he nominally retained his chancellorship and theoretically remained the most important Scottish minister of state, Huntly's loss of power in favour of a Frenchman had serious ramifications. It symbolised what could *legitimately* happen to the entire Scottish nobility in the Franco-Scottish union of the crowns – loss of their political authority and control as the natural born councillors of the realm. Irrespective of their number or how much power they really exercised, the mere presence of Frenchmen on Guise's council was taken and used by the Congregation as a sign of things to come. This worst case scenario of French usurpation became a central theme of the Lords of the Congregation's propaganda that was designed to play on the xenophobia of the Scots and, hopefully, attract widespread political support for their rebellion against the Queen Regent in 1559-60. Yet, while several Frenchmen did hold important posts in Marie de Guise's administration, the Congregation's propaganda cannot be taken at face value. We must not forget the important offices and positions the Scots themselves occupied. Nor for that matter should the influence native Scots had over their Queen Regent be ignored – after all, the realisation of Guise's political and dynastic objectives ultimately depended on their support and official sanction.

Marie de Guise's immediate concern upon becoming regent, however, was not the realisation of her dynastic objectives, but responding to the events of the past decade that had disrupted Scottish society. Years of warfare and famine had resulted in prolific dearth, lawlessness and violence. To impose some degree of stability, Guise followed in the footsteps of James I, James IV and James V, by attempting to restore a powerful

monarchy in Scotland.[1] Her administration and policy in Scotland aimed to advance the interests of the crown at the expense of local jurisdictions, pursue royal justice and, ultimately, to assert the authority of the crown throughout the entire kingdom. In the Stewart tradition, Guise relied heavily on parliamentary legislation to convey and impose royal power.

***

Marie de Guise held her first Parliament at Edinburgh on 20 June 1555.[2] This meeting of the Three Estates was extremely productive. A total of forty-one statutes were passed, many of which were re-enactments of statutes from previous reigns. The nature of this legislation gives us a clear insight into the Queen Regent's agenda for the governance of Scotland and the nature of her longer term programme to impose law and order, extend royal government into the localities and, generally, keep society together. Society, however, had been, and was continuing to be severely disrupted by the dearth that had come as a direct result of war and famine, and Guise sought to rectify this problem primarily through parliamentary legislation.

Dearth was a particular and immediate concern for Marie de Guise even before she assumed the regency. During Châtelherault's administration, Guise made a concerted effort to respond to the subsistence crisis and rampant inflation. With the advice and consent of the Queen Dowager, the Parliaments of May 1551 and February

---

[1] For more on these monarchs see M. Brown, *James I* (Edinburgh, 1994); Macdougall, *James IV* (Edinburgh, 1997); Cameron, *James V*; J.M. Brown, 'The exercise of power' in J.M. Brown (ed.), *Scottish Society in the Fifteenth Century* (London, 1977), pp. 33-65; Wormald, *Court, Kirk, and Community*, pp. 3-26.

[2] *APS*, II, pp. 492-501.

1551/2 passed a wide range of statutes imposing price scales, hunting restrictions, trading regulations and sumptuary laws. The prices for Bordeaux and Rochelle wines, malt, and wild and tame fowl were all stipulated, while the slaughter of lambs and young fowl was completely banned for three years, 'except in Nobillis and greit Barronis housis to thair meit'.[1] Similarly, the dearth of wild meat prompted the (re)enactment of legislation against the slaying of hares, 'Dais or Rais thair calfis or kiddis', sheep and 'cuningis' [rabbits].[2] In response to the exorbitant prices charged by craftsmen in the burghs, which had doubled and in some cases tripled, the Parliament of 1551/2 passed legislation restricting the powers of deans of craft.[3] Instead, 'reasonable' prices were to be determined in each burgh by a joint committee of the provost, bailie, the deacons of every craft and all the craftsmen, and then submitted to the Lords of the Articles in Parliament for approval. If these revised prices were deemed reasonable, they would be authorised; if not, the process would begin all over again.[4] But perhaps the most interesting response to the 'greit and exhorbitant derth ryssin in this Realme of victuallis and vther stuffe for the sustentatioun of mankynde', was the enactment of a sumptuary law. 'Because of the superfluous cheir vsit commounlie in this Realme alsweill amangis small as greit men to the greit hurt of commoun weill of the samin and dampnage to the bodie quhilk makis ane man vnhabill to exerce all leifull and gude

---

[1] *APS*, II, pp. 483-4, 486.

[2] *Ibid*, II, pp. 487-8. See also *ibid*, II, pp. 52, 107, 344, for similar pieces of legislation enacted during the reigns of James II, James III and James V.

[3] Lynch, *Edinburgh and the Reformation*, pp. 70-2 and *Scotland: A New History*, p.208; M. Verschuur, 'Merchants and craftsmen in 16th-century Perth' in Lynch (ed.), *The Early Modern Town in Scotland* (London, 1987), pp. 45-8, 60-1.

[4] *APS*, II, p.487.

warkis necessare,' meat was rationed according to rank and status. Archbishops and Earls, for example, could enjoy eight dishes of meat, Abbots and Lords were permitted only six, and burgesses 'bot iij dischеis and bot ane kynd of meit in euerie dische'.[1]

By the time Marie de Guise assumed the regency, the dual problems of dearth and inflation had not subsided. Instead, it had continued to increase on a daily basis. Scotland's new Queen Regent duly responded by enacting and, in many cases, re-enacting statutes from previous reigns in the hope of resolving the crisis. In the Parliament of June 1555, therefore, one sees the reappearance of acts for 'the stanching and slaying of wylde foulis and wylde beistis and shuting at thame with culueringis half hag and pistolate',[2] the slaughter of lambs (for three years), and the stealing of 'Halkis Hundis Pertriks Dukis', rabbits and fowl.[3] James V's statute demanding set and reasonable prices for imports of wine,[4] timber and salt was similarly re-enacted, as were the statutes from James I and James III's reign imposing a universal system of weights and measures.[5] But Guise did not rely solely on legislation enacted by her predecessors. In many cases, she added to past legislation, such as in the act prohibiting the slaughter

---

[1] *APS*, II, p.487.

[2] On 28 January 1556/7, seven persons were charged for breaking the acts of Parliament forbidding the slaying of game with 'culveringis' and 'pistolettis' from May 1552 to November 1556 inclusive. Pitcairn, *Trials*, I.i, p.395.

[3] *APS*, II, pp. 497, 498, 499. See also *ibid*, II, pp. 483, 107, 343, 344, for similar pieces of legislation from previous reigns.

[4] Guise had made a declaration to this effect on 7 December 1554. On 4 May 1555, George Hume, Walter Cant and thirteen other residents of Leith were charged with selling French wines at higher prices than those prescribed by the Queen Regent. Pitcairn, *Trials*, I.i, p.377. See also *ibid*, I.i, pp. 389-90, for the prices Guise set for 'all maner of victuallis, sic as flesche, fische, meitt, fowale, and vther necessaris, be brocht to the mercat and sauld for reddie money'. The timing of this proclamation to coincide with her royal progress to the Highlands and, in particular, her visit to Elgin to attend a justice ayre, suggests that Guise was trying to prevent the inevitable price rise that occurred during royal visits.

[5] *APS*, II, pp. 10, 90, 373-4, 496, 499.

of wild fowl and beasts, which contained additional clauses prohibiting, amongst other things, hunting during particular times of the year, or enacted statutes that were entirely of her own making.[1] Guise's acts prohibiting the carriage of all victuals, flesh and 'woll skin hydis or vther stapill gudis customabill furth of this Realme be land in the Realme of Ingland', are two such examples.[2] The effectiveness of these measures is difficult to gauge. The fact that many of these statutes were re-enactments from previous reigns *and* from Parliaments held just three years before suggests that there were problems executing and enforcing this type of legislation.[3] As for Marie de Guise, international considerations meant that her subsequent Parliaments were concerned with national security and the marriage of her daughter, shedding little light on the progress of her campaign against dearth.

Another feature of the legislation enacted in the Parliament of 1555 reflects Marie de Guise's determination to strengthen the role of the central government, particularly with respect to the administration of the realm. Procedures for the reversion of lands and reversions involving the transfer of gold and silver, the appointment of curators, the granting of resignations by vassals to their superiors, the warning of tenants to flit, and the nullification of contracts and infeftments were all stringently detailed and

---

[1] *APS*, II, p.497.

[2] *Ibid*, II, pp. 495, 496.

[3] The ban imposed on the slaughter and sale of lambs in 1551/2, for instance, was extended for another three years in 1555, while the statute against the shooting of wild beast and fowl 'with culueringis half hag and pistolate', was similarly passed in both the parliaments of May 1551 and June 1555, and was itself a re-enactment of legislation from the reigns of James I, II, III and V. By 1556/7, however, the shooting of wild beast and fowl with culverings still seems to have been a problem as Patrick, lord Ruthven was issued with a justiciary commission to punish those malefactors who continued to do so. *Ibid*, II, pp. 483, 486, 497, 498; *ER*, VIII, p.614.

outlined.[1] As in her reaction to dearth, Guise looked to the legislation of her late husband to advance the interests of the crown at the expense of local jurisdictions and extend royal government into the localities. Thus, the 'greit and mony falsettis daylie done ... be Notaris' prompted Guise to re-enact James V's statute summoning all notaries, spiritual and temporal, to appear before the Lords of Council for an examination of their protocol books.[2] Years of war with England had allowed the activities of notaries to go unchecked and resulted in lapses in procedure. This was not always a deliberate attempt by the notaries to abuse the system - political necessity often required that protocol be abandoned. One particular phenomenon that was the source of great trouble, and the result of war, was the granting of sasines by some notaries upon precepts not issued by the Chancery, and the reluctance of others to do so. The controversy surrounding the legitimacy of these non-royal precepts needed to be resolved, and Guise duly responded by using and amending legislation of her late husband. James V's act outlining the procedures for the giving of sasines upon precepts issued from the Chancery was accompanied by Guise's declaration that sasines were also to be issued upon precepts 'past furth the Chancellerie', the validity of which was confirmed in a separate statute.[3] Realising, however, that there would be a continued reluctance by some notaries to accept the legality of non-royal precepts, Guise interestingly chose not to punish them, but placed the onus of responsibility on the precept holder to find a bailie who was prepared to issue them with an instrument of

[1] *APS*, II, pp. 492, 493, 494, 495.

[2] *Ibid*, II, p.496, 359-60.

[3] *Ibid*, II, pp. 493, 497.

sasine. While this may be viewed as being inconsistent with Guise's quest to increase the efficiency of the administration of the realm, it does reveal her ability to compromise and adapt when circumstances dictated.

In other areas, Marie de Guise was less inclined to compromise. This was particularly true in the case of the burghs, where the effects of war had resulted in great disorder and the 'infinit skaith baith of thair landis and gudis'.[1] In an attempt to address this problem and keep Scotland's Third Estate sweet, the Queen Regent confirmed with the greatest emphasis, 'all [the] priuilegeis and actis of Parliament grantit and maid in fauouris of Burrowis Burgessis and Merchandis' by Mary, Queen of Scots' 'maist Nobill progenitouris'.[2] But the problem of disorder within the Burghs ran far deeper than this. The choosing of craft deacons, in particular, was a 'rycht dangerous' process that had caused 'greit troubill in Burrowis commotioun and rysing of the Quenis lieges', and the 'making of liggis and bandis amangis tham selfis and betuix Burgh and Burgh'.[3] In order to prevent such outbreaks from occurring in the future, Guise attempted, firstly, to regulate the appointment of craft deacons, by ordaining it as the exclusive responsibility of the provost, bailies and burgh council; and secondly, they were to ensure that their chosen candidate was 'the mais honest mand of craft of gude conscience', who 'laubour[ed] sufficientlie' and produced 'sufficient stuffe and wark'.[4] Guise had effectively abolished the office of craft deacon and all the privileges

---

[1] *APS*, II, p.497.

[2] *Ibid*, II, p.497.

[3] *Ibid*, II, p.497.

[4] *Ibid*, II, pp. 497-8.

craftsmen enjoyed within the burgh. Within a year, however, financial pressures proved too much and the Queen Regent reversed her position by granting a charter nullifying the act of 1555. As Michael Lynch has shown, this was 'a manoeuvre by the regent to extract more revenue out of the burgh rather than, as some have argued, a last stand for catholicism and the French alliance'.[1] At a time when money was desperately needed for the defence of the realm, Guise received an offer of four thousand merks from the craftsmen in return for her *volte-face* in policy.[2]

For Guise, the more disturbing matter was the making of leagues and the giving and taking of bonds of manrent and maintenance in the burghs and throughout the entire kingdom.[3] This, she thought, was 'aganis all Law and obedience of subiectis towart thair Princis' and, therefore, deserving of 'greit punischment'.[4] In a sweeping piece of legislation, Guise took the drastic and rather ambitious step of nullifying all leagues, bonds of manrent and bonds of maintenance, including those made in the future. Equally ambitious was her decree that 'ony proffeit be lyferent of landis takkis teindis baillieries or zeirlie payment grantit or geuin for the saidis bandis of manrent to returne to the gifaris'.[5] Those who dared to continue in such practices faced imprisonment, 'thair to remane during the Quenis grace will'. Intentional or not, this was a direct attack on the very infrastructure of Scottish society - the localised kin groups and the

---

[1] Lynch, *Edinburgh and the Reformation*, p.71.

[2] *Ibid*, pp. 70-2; *Edinburgh Burgh Recs.*, II, pp. 188-9, 230-2, 234-6, 236.

[3] See Wormald, *Lords and Men*, Appendix A, pp. 168-373, for a list of bonds of manrent and maintenance made *c.*1442-1603. According to this list, approximately 164 bonds were entered into from December 1542 to January 1554/5, while only 23 were contracted following the Parliament of 1555 until the Queen Regent's death in June 1560.

[4] *APS*, II, pp. 495, 497.

[5] *Ibid*, II, pp. 495-6.

complex network of alliances that were traditionally forged between these groups and between lords and their dependants. For Guise, the problem of disorder in Scotland was, therefore, inextricably linked with its localised organisation. To rectify both these 'problems', she sought to eradicate the mechanisms, such as bonds of manrent, that kept power in the localities and prevented the effective exercise of central authority. Needless to say, legislation such as this was difficult to enforce and had little effect in abolishing what was a customary practice and defining characteristic of Scottish society as a whole.[1] However, it is indicative of Guise's desire to assert the crown's authority at the expense of local and regional structures of power.

But what of the royal bonds of manrent that Guise herself had entered into with numerous Scots during 1548-1551? Are we to presume that these were also rendered null and void, or did the statute only apply to those made between lieges? The preamble, 'it is thocht aganis all Law and obedience of subiectis towart thair Princis in the making of particulare liggis ... and geuing and taking of bandis of manrent and mantanance', tends to favour the latter scenario, but the wording of the statute itself makes no such distinction. *All* leagues and *all* bonds of manrent and maintenance were null, and the cited exceptions (heritable bonds and bonds for the asythement of murder) did not include those of the Queen Regent. There are arguments either way for Guise wanting to nullify all leagues and bonds. If Guise was trying to break the traditional ties between lords and men in the localities, there is no reason why she would want to sever the ties that kept individual lords exclusively bound to her service. But as we saw in the

[1] Wormald, *Lords and Men*, p.95 and *Court, Kirk, and Community*, pp. 27-40; K.M. Brown, *Bloodfeud in Scotland, 1573-1625* (Edinburgh, 1986), pp. 108-43.

last chapter, and as Marie de Guise herself realised, unwavering loyalty came at a price. By 1555, however, circumstances had changed. Guise had secured sufficient political support not only for the proposed Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance, but also for her own regency. A semblance of stability coupled with her financial difficulties may have prompted Guise to 'cut corners' and get out of paying the annual pensions she so often granted in her bonds of manrent with members of the Scottish political élite.

Upon becoming regent, Marie de Guise inherited a financially strapped kingdom. Châtelherault had taken full advantage of the terms of his resignation that absolved him of all financial expenses incurred during his regency, and he left his successor with a deficit of £31,184 12s 6d.[1] As we have already seen, Guise was particularly anxious for ready cash at this time, owing to Mary Tudor's marriage to Philip of Spain and the threat this posed to security on the Scottish Border. At no time since Somerset's occupation of Scotland had the need to construct and fortify strongholds on the Border been more urgent, and the deficit inherited from Châtelherault's administration had deprived Guise of adequate funds to finance this project - thus intensifying the urgency. Added to this were Guise's personal financial problems. In June 1552, the Cardinal de Lorraine had to send Gilbert de Beaucaire, Seigneur de Puiguillon to Scotland 'pour

---

[1] *TA*, X, p.216. One need only refer to the *Accounts of the Lord High Treasurer of Scotland* (X) to see the inordinate amount of money Châtelherault spent on himself, his family and friends during the latter years of his governorship - expenses which, significantly, disappear during Marie de Guise's administration. Regular features of the accounts were the monthly 'expensis debursit upoun my lord governour, his graces lady and barnis awne personis'. While these accounts are mainly for clothing, they also contain entries for other extravagances such as the purchase of 'gold to cord ane dosane of napkynnis', (p.18) and 'vj pair of gilt knyffis quhilk Ladye Jene [Châtelherault's daughter] send to gentillwemen of the Courte of France' (p.205). So full are these accounts with payments made to Châtelherault's immediate and extended family and his dependents, that it is impossible just to cite a few examples. As James Balfour Paul notes in his introduction to this particular volume, the greed of Châtelherault is evidenced simply by the fact that out of 200 pages relating to the closing years of his regency, approximately 50 pages are discharges for clothes alone (p.xli).

satisfaire a vos [Marie de Guise's] debtes et pour vous envoyer argent ainsi quil vous a pleu mescripre'.[1] War with England had not only been costly for Henri II, but also for Guise, who had to dip regularly into her own purse to pay the wages of French soldiers serving in Scotland in addition to the French pensions awarded to many Scots.[2] This had clearly been a drain on the Queen Regent's resources. The accounts of her treasurer in France, Jacques Girard, reveal that her charges exceeded her yearly household allowance of 10,000 *livres* by 4,000 *livres* turnois in 1549, and peace did not lessen Guise's financial obligations.[3] The establishment of Mary, Queen of Scots' household in France in 1553/4 would prove to be yet another financial burden.

Proposals for the establishment of a separate household for Mary Stewart first came from the Cardinal de Lorraine in February 1552/3. In a letter to his sister, the Cardinal expressed the opinion that since Henri 'faict un estat a part a M. le Daulphin', the time was now also right for Mary Stewart to have the same.[4] Even at this embryonic stage, it was clear that establishing a household was going to be an expensive enterprise. The Cardinal estimated that it would cost at least 55,000 *francs* to set up and 60,000 *francs* if it was to be done well. Added to this was the devastating news that Guise

---

[1] *Warrender Papers*, xxix, p.22.

[2] See, for example, NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, fos. 40, 63-4, 68, 71, for military related expenses included in Marie de Guise's household accounts. As has already been discussed in Chapter IV, these payments were over and above those she made to Scots in the form of patronage during 1548-51.

[3] NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, fos. 27, 28, 35-7; SRO, E34/26, 27; *Balcarres Papers*, I, pp. xxvi-xxix. See also NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, fos. 26, 45-8, 67, 84, 85, 153-4, 157-61; SRO, E33/4-5 and E34/12, 14, 17, 18, 20, 21, 23, 25; *TA*, X, pp. 225, 228, 294, for additional accounts of Marie de Guise's household expenditure rendered by Lieger Chesnieu, Jean Bougouin, Astier, and Lady Livingstone, who was often employed for the 'outtredding of the Quenis grace effaris'.

[4] *Balcarres Papers*, II, ciii, pp. 141-2. See also, ibid, II, ci, pp. 138-9, and A. de Ruble, *La première jeunesse de Marie Stuart, 1542-61* (Paris, 1891), pp. 267-80, for the establishment of the Dauhpin's household.

could not expect any assistance from Henri, 'par ce que le Roy dict que le revenu du royaulme est bien petit s'il ne la peut entretenir' – putting even more financial pressure on the Queen Regent.[1] The major problem facing Guise, therefore, was how she was going to come up with the necessary funds not just to establish her daughter's household, but also maintain it in years to come.

Marie de Guise's dowry from the Longueville estate was one source of income that was used to finance Mary Stewart's household. The untimely death of François, duc de Longueville, without an heir in 1551 sparked a lengthy dispute over the division of his estate, primarily between his mother, Marie de Guise, his uncle through marriage, Philip of Savoy, duc de Nemours, and Françoise d'Alençon, duchesse de Vendôme, his father's first wife.[2] The terms of the settlement took years to hammer out, and it was not until October 1553 that Jacques Girard wrote to Guise with an estimate of her portion. Although she could expect to receive approximately 32,000 *livres* and another large, unspecified sum from Normandy, the size of the Queen Regent's debts left her with very little to work with, if anything at all. Even if Guise accepted Jacques Girard's generous offer to forego the 7,000 *livres* owing to him, 'ce n'est pas somme pour commancer a embrasser telle affaire'.[3] Despite these financial setbacks, Mary, Queen of Scots 'began hir hous' on 1 January 1553/4, two weeks after having been officially

---

[1] *Balcarres Papers*, II, ciii, p.143.

[2] Philip of Savoy was the husband of the late Charlotte d'Orléans, sister of François d'Orléans, duc de Longueville, Guise's first husband. See *ibid*, II, ciii, cxix, cxxxv, pp. 143-4, 171-4, 195-7, for details of this dispute and the division of the Longueville estate.

[3] *Ibid*, II, cxix, cciii, cxxxv, pp. 171-4, 143-4, 195-7.

declared of age by the French King.[1] The accounts for her household in 1556 reveal that Guise not only relinquished her personal pension of 20,000 *livres* from Henri to finance her daughter's household, but also her dowry of 13,000 *livres* from her son's estate.[2] A sum of 25,000 *livres* was also to be provided from the crown revenues of Scotland for the same purpose.

Marie de Guise's public and private financial obligations during her regency were, therefore, considerable. Given the sizeable deficit she inherited from Châtelherault's administration and the size of the Scottish government's financial commitment to Mary, Queen of Scots' household, it comes as no surprise that a major concern for Marie de Guise during her regency was the augmentation of crown revenue. This concern is effectively demonstrated by the act of revocation of 1555, which revoked 'all maner of infeftmentis and dispositiounis' made by Châtelherault during his regency and returned them to the crown.[3] Of greater significance, perhaps, was the act's scathing criticism of Châtelherault's conduct, that made an act of revocation necessary in the first place. Thus one reads of the 'hurt and detriment' Châtelherault had caused by the granting of 'Crowne landis rentis possessiounis patronageis of benficis and

---

[1] SRO, E34/25; *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 131, pp. 46-7; NLS, Adv.MSS, 33.1.9, f.1^{r}. See also SRO, E34/26-27 and *Balcarres Papers*, II, cxxxv, cli, clii, clvii, clviii, clxxx, pp. 195-7, 222-6, 226-7, 235-7, 238-241, 270-5, for additional details of the establishment and maintenance of Mary Stewart's household in France.

[2] SRO, E34/26; *Balcarres Papers*, II, pp. li-liii. Marie de Guise received an annual payment of 7,000 *livres* from the Marquise de Rothelin, who served as a guardian to her son, 1,000 *livres* as rent from the estate of Estrepagny, and an annual income of approximately 5,000 *livres* from the estate of Moustenbellay, her dowry and inheritance from her son, the late Duc de Longueville.

[3] *APS*, II, pp. 500-1. As with any revocation, those who had benefited from the distribution of crown lands during a minority government were bound to be unhappy about having to give it back. On 9 August 1555, for instance, Henry Balnaves of Halhill wrote to the Queen Regent from Paris to put her 'heighnes in remebrance of sick thingis as ather mycht hurt, or proffeit, hir grace [Mary, Queen of Scots'] patrimonie and privilege of hir majesties crown, or the office quhilk you heighnes presently bearis in hir grace name and authorite'. *Scottish Correspondence*, cclxx, pp. 404-5.

offices', most of which went to Hamiltons and their adherents. But the most controversial attempt by Guise to augment the crown's revenue came in 1556 when a new tax assessment scheme was proposed and subsequently rejected.

On 2 May 1556, the Lords of the Articles submitted to Parliament for approval a proposal for the 'better vplifting of the present taxatioun'.[1] On the surface, this was a standard piece of bureaucratic legislation, outlining, for example, the procedures for the submission of tax rolls to the Treasurer and prescribing the information that these rolls should contain. It is with respect to the latter that the Lords of the Articles' proposal was so controversial. For, in addition to a list of 'all landis within the realm', the tax rolls were also to contain the names of every freeholder, feuar, tenant, craftsman, cottar and parishoner 'togidder with the ... qunatitie of their substance & gudis mouable & Inmovabill', so that the 'qualitie of their personis & quantitie of their guidis & landis may be knawn & put In roll'.[2] In essence, the Lords of the Articles were proposing that the rate of taxation should be assessed on the value of one's possessions over and above the 'auld extent', which was assessed exclusively on one's lands.[3] This new 'goods tax' met with great opposition in Parliament. For some members of the Three Estates, the prospect of having to inventory their 'estate and substance', as if 'to make their last willes and testamentes', was anathema. For others, the idea that this was to become a perpetual annual tax was grounds for opposition and rejection in itself.[4]

---

[1] *APS*, II, Appendix 10, pp. 604-5; *RPC*, XIV, p.14.

[2] *APS*, II, pp. 604-5.

[3] J. Goodare, 'Parliamentary Taxation in Scotland, 1560-1603', *SHR*, lxviii (1989), pp. 23-52; T. Thomson, *Memorial on Old Extent*, J.D. Mackie (ed.), (The Stair Society, 1946).

[4] *CSP Scot.*, I, 411, pp. 196-7.

There is some question as to whether the Lords of the Articles were actually proposing a perpetual tax. Their failure to stipulate the duration of this new tax assessment scheme does give that impression, yet there is some evidence to suggest that it was actually an attempt by Marie de Guise to raise emergency funds for the construction and fortification of strongholds. In a letter to the Cardinal de Lorraine dated 13 January 1556/7,[1] Guise wrote despairingly of her ill-preparedness for war, stating that she had not 'une seulle bonne place pour sa defendre et soustenir ung seige'.[2] This, she claimed, was due to the 'extraordinary expenses' involved in maintaining a standing force on the Border to quell 'ung grand nombre de larrons et rebelles qui destruirent tous la pais'.[3] Guise cited another reason why funds were not readily available to finance her fort-building policy: Parliament's rejection of the 'goods tax' proposed by the Lords of the Articles.[4] Even though she had the money ready for the construction of new forts for the security of the realm, Guise complained that, 'Jaurya esperance que laffaires qui auroit este mis cy aucun au dernier parlement pourrois pour y satisfaire voyans que les grans l'avonts trouvé le meilleur du monde,

---

[1] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 7-10[r]; *Papal Negotiations*, pp. 427-33. See also AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 10-11 for a similar letter written by Guise to Constable Montmorency on 13 January 1556/7.

[2] *Ibid*, XV, f.7[v]; *Papal Negotiations*, p.428.

[3] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 7[v]-8[r]; *Papal Negotiations*, p.428. Contrary to Lesley's contention, the 'perpetual tax' was not for the maintenance of a standing army on the Border; this had already been paid for. Lesley, *History*, p.254.

[4] This tax was introduced in Parliament on 6 May 1556. On 9 May, Wharton reported to Shrewsbury that '... the noble men was togwetheris at Edinburgh the vjth and was thought then that their parlyament wold contynew vj or vij daies more. The dowager demandyth a grete soume to hir borne of the Realme, which at the fyrst the Lords denied'. On 13 May a second report followed: 'The Scots mayd end of their parliament the ix The Dowager in hir own person gave thanks to all their bodys of hir parlyament. And comendyd their consyderacion for the Surety of hyr Realme which she ... answered was nathir of her self nor of the french And understandyng hir wyse oppynyons did commend them. And upon Wedynsday befor them breakynd up she in fayr maner tho not well pleased departed'. LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, fos. 237[r], 249[r].

Mais la commune noblesse et le peuple sous entrez cy vne tels Jalousie que est pour ... une perpetuelle taille.'[1]

It would appear, then, that the new tax reassessment scheme was not intended to be permanent. If it had been, why would Guise feel the need to state otherwise to her own brother and confidante? On the other hand, if this extra revenue was going be used to finance Guise's fort-building policy, why was this not cited as the reason for the introduction of a goods tax? Marie de Guise's supplications to Rome in 1555, 1556 and 1557, for example, explained that a subsidy of two-tenths of all ecclesiastical revenue was needed for 'the fortification of castles and border strongholds ... and for the repair of them' against England.[2] Similarly, the Privy Council had no problem approving a tax of £20,000 on 22 January 1554/5, so that 'ane forth [could] be bigged besyde Kelso'.[3] Of this 'grete extent', £10,000 was to be subdivided between 'the Barronis, Landed Men, Temporall Estait, and Burrowis', while the other half was to be paid by the clergy, who seem to have been remiss in their payments. Instead of enforcing the law and putting the offenders to the horn as rebels, Marie de Guise changed tactics and adopted a far more lenient position. In an attempt to induce the clergy to pay their taxes by means of gentle persuasion, the punishment for non-payment was rescinded by Parliament in 1555.[4] Yet beneath Guise's accommodating veneer was a steely determination to

---

[1] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 8^{v}-9^{r}; *Papal Negotiations*, p.429.

[2] *Ibid*, pp. 3-4, 522-5; Mahoney, 'The Scottish Hierarchy', p.74; Donaldson, *James V-James VII*, p.87.

[3] *RPC*, XIV, p.13; *Edinburgh Burgh Recs.*, II, pp. 209-10, 214-5, 215-6; *Aberdeen Council Register*, pp. 298, 299. It was not until 8 June 1556 that the burgh of Aberdeen paid off 'thair haill taxt that the said toune was sett to ... for the bigging certane forthis vpoun our souerane ladyis bordouris', which amounted to £66.5.0. For additional references to the Kelso enterprise, see AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 377-8^{r}, 398-9 and XX, f.222.

[4] *APS*, II, p.498.

collect the revenue owing to her from the First Estate for the Kelso enterprise. It was made perfectly clear that this act was to remain in effect only as long as 'the Lordis of the spiritualitie prouyde and find sum vther sure and ressonabill maner how the samin salbe inbrocht to our Souerane Lady and hir grace payit thairof'.[1]

Money for the defence of the kingdom, therefore, was clearly a priority for Marie de Guise during her regency.[2] This is hardly surprising given the 'cool' relations between Scotland and England during the reign of Mary Tudor. Guise's financial burdens were already weighty enough without the added pressure of war and/or an Anglo-Imperial invasion. The deficit she inherited from Châtelherault's administration left her with little or nothing for emergency defensive policies, let alone long-term financial commitments such as the establishment and maintenance of Mary, Queen of Scots' household in France. But the augmentation of crown revenue and matters of defence were not the only concerns for Guise – the pursuit of royal justice and the imposition of law and order were equally important.

***

Marie de Guise's regency is, perhaps, best characterised by her overwhelming concern for law and order. Central to this was her quest to provide for the effective administration and execution of justice throughout the entire kingdom. In order to achieve this, Guise naturally turned to Parliament, where legislation was passed to standardise and regulate legal procedures as they pertained to criminal cases. In the

---

[1] *APS*, II, p.498.

[2] Schemes to extract money from the church and laity were also submitted to the Queen Regent for her consideration. These included 'Suggestions for augmenting the queen dowagers revenue without grudge, hurt or feiling of the people'. NLS, Adv.MSS, 34.2.17, f.124.

Parliament of June 1555, for example, statutes were enacted stipulating the procedures for the issuing of summonses and the time allotted for charges of murder to be processed.[1] Legislation regulating court protocol was also enacted. Those called to underlie the law were required to show up on the day appointed, defendants were asked to bring the testimonies of only their most honest, wise and substantial friends and, of course, their advocates, while the pursuers of the action were allowed the testimonies of four of their friends.[2] The Parliament of 1555 also passed legislation against specific crimes such as fraud and perjury. In particular, Guise sought to eradicate the problem of perjurious witnesses by imposing stiff penalties. Persons who bore false witness or induced witnesses to perjure themselves were to be punished 'be [the] peirsing of thair toungis and escheting of all thair gudis to our Souerane Ladyis vse and declairit neuer to be habill to bruke honour office or dignitite'.[3] They were to receive further punishment at the discretion of the Lords according to the extent of their crime.[4] Another prevalent problem that Guise sought to address was that of retributory justice. Because of the odious crimes of slaughter daily committed within the realm, and in particular, the slaying of parties pursuing and defending their actions, a statute was enacted that outlined the legal procedures if the defendant in a murder case slayed the pursuer of the action and *vice versa*.[5] In accordance with her programme to strengthen royal power by advancing the interests of the crown at the expense of local jurisdictions and extending

---

[1] *APS*, II, pp. 492-3.

[2] *Ibid*, II, p.495.

[3] *Ibid*, II, p.497.

[4] *Ibid*, II, p.497.

[5] *Ibid*, II, pp. 494-5.

royal government into the localities, Guise's attacks on the 'private' justice of the feud was, ultimately, an attempt to promote the 'public' justice of royal courts.

The nature of this legislation clearly reflects Marie de Guise's determination to provide for the effective execution of royal justice through the centralisation of Scotland's legal system and standardisation of procedure. But for Guise, it was the administration of justice that was in the greatest need of reform. This, she claimed, and not necessarily Scots law itself, was the greatest source of injustice in Scotland.[1] Upon becoming regent, Guise was determined to rectify this problem by looking to the French legal system as a model for reform. Her request that two French lawyers be sent immediately to Scotland was granted on 24 October 1554, when Montmorency informed her that, 'les deux hommes de robbe longue que avez pour le faict et administration de votre justice affin de le vous envoyer incontinent'.[2] Unfortunately, it is not known what advice these legal envoys gave the Queen Regent, nor are there any sources detailing their activities in Scotland. Nevertheless, their very presence may offer some explanation as to why the administration of justice eventually became a source of discord between Guise and the Scots.

In January 1556/7, Guise wrote a very revealing letter to the Cardinal de Lorraine in which she confessed that for the first time in her political career she actually felt estranged from her Scottish subjects.[3] According to the Regent, the primary reason for this deterioration in crown-magnate relations was her determination to 'voir la

---

[1] *Papal Negotiations*, p.430; AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.9^{v}.

[2] *Balcarres Papers*, II, clxvi, pp. 251-2.

[3] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.9^{r}; *Papal Negotiations*, p.430.

Justice aller par ledroict chemin'.[1] The Scots, she complained, and in particular the great lords, are:

> ... si peu desirent de la Justice quilz sont plustost aise de veoir tousiours quelque chose a desmettre qui lempescher, Et ne peult on parla demander lay Justice quils ne disent Incontinant veult lon ladicte veult changer leur loix. ... Dieu scait Monsieur mon frere quelle vie Jay, ce nest peu de chose que damener ung peuple nouveau a parfection et nouuelle servuitude a eulx qui ont enuy a de voir regnir Justice.[2]

But in her desire to see justice reign, Guise confessed that she had been a 'peu austere' - the end result being that the Scots will not endure it:

> ... et disent que ce sont les loix dela francais et que leur vieilles loix sont bonnes, la pluspart desquelles sont les plus Injustes du monde, non dicelles mesmes mais cy la manier quilz cy vsent, la qui est cause de tous nostre discord, que le passe toustesfois la plus doulcement que je puis sans biens gaster attendans meilleure saison, et que Je voye au quil plaira adieu de disclose [sic].[3]

Guise's request for French judicial intervention, coupled with her desire to reform Scotland's legal system, gave the appearance, rightly or wrongly, that she wanted to replace Scotland's ancient laws with those of the French. For the Scots, any alteration to their ancient laws and liberties, the cornerstones of their cultural and institutional independence, was a form of sacrilege. We have already seen in Chapter I how the Scots went to great pains to ensure that their ancient laws and liberties were safeguarded in the treaties of Birgham, Greenwich and Haddington. This was also a stipulation of Marie de Guise's assumption of the regency. The Scots insisted that Guise procure a bond from Henri guaranteeing that 'this realme with all dominiounis and possessiounis tharof or subject tharto and lieges of the samin sall brouke and jois the awld liberteis and

---

[1] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.9^{r}; *Papal Negotiations*, p.430.

[2] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.8^{r}; *Papal Negotiations*, p.428.

[3] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.9^{v}; *Papal Negotiations*, p.430.

privilegeis tharof, and salbe onlie governit ... be the lawis ... and consuetudis of this said realme ... without ony alteratioun or innovatioun'.[1] Any attempt on the part of Guise to reform Scottish law, therefore, was bound to meet with fierce resistance – not least if it was aimed at the élite's own exercise of power in the localities.

Unsurprisingly, this deterioration in crown-magnate relations was picked up on by the Lords of the Congregation during their rebellion, and Guise was accused of attempting to 'changer leur loix'.[2] The Scots' opposition to the Queen Regent's legal reforms in 1556-7, however, prevented their implementation and ironically enabled Guise to deny this charge outright. The Congregation was subsequently told that, 'au regard des lois quelle ne savait quil eust Jamais este contrevenu a pas une. Et si ainsi estoit qui lon y eust Innové uilque chose Ilz sen debvoient plaindre et le remonstrer'.[3]

Marie de Guise's pursuit of royal justice and quest for law and order, however, consisted of far more than the mere formulation of policy. It also involved putting these policies into practice. Justice not only needed to be legislated for, but also duly executed - nowhere more so than on the Borders and in the Highlands and Western Isles of Scotland, the traditional hotspots of lawlessness, violence and disorder. Yet, as we shall see in Chapter VI, this was no easy task and the international situation that prevailed throughout most of Guise's regency served only to frustrate matters further. The Habsburg-Valois conflict and, more directly, Mary Tudor's marriage to Philip of

---

[1] *ADCP*, p.630. In the treaty of Haddington, for example, Henri promised that he would 'obseruand and keipand this Relame and liegis thairof in the samin fredome liberteis and Lawis and hes bene in all kingis of Scotlandis tymes bypast'. *APS*, II, p.481.

[2] *Brosse Missions*, pp. 150, 151.

[3] *Ibid*, pp. 152, 153.

Spain necessitated that Guise focus almost all of her time, energy and resources on matters of national security. This was particularly true of the Anglo-Scottish Border, where the Continental superpowers now met *tête à tête* as a result of the dynastic alliances each had forged within the archipelago. Yet, it was precisely because of the international situation that the need for law and order on the Border was the greatest, not only for the security of the realm, but also to maintain what was already a precarious peace between the 'auld enemies'. Moreover, the undue attention Guise was forced to pay to the Borders also frustrated her attempts to deal with the so-called 'Highland problem' - violent insurgent activity that had returned with a vengeance during Mary, Queen of Scots' minority. Both of these areas were earmarked for special recognition in Marie de Guise's quest for law and order, and it is to the Borders and the Highlands and Western Isles that we now turn.

CHAPTER VI

The Borders, Highlands and Western Isles

Shortly after her assumption of the regency, Marie de Guise received some advice for the punishment of crime.[1] Written in response to 'the mone slawchtiris commettit with in this realme', and for 'the ordour of the bordour quhilk is the maist prencipall thing to put the realme to ane quyatenes', this memorandum outlined the social ills that Marie de Guise had been commissioned to cure - disorder, lawlessness and violence.[2] At no other place were these problems more prevalent than on the Anglo-Scottish Border, where:

> ... the aquentenc at is betwen Scotland and Ingland amangis the theifis one bayth the bordouris, to gether with the deidli feidis quhilk, ... beyng nocht weill luket apone, sall ever hald your grace in ane bessenes: for your grace man tak respeik to ther thingis be your grace self, for your grace knawis the natour of the pepell and effectione at is amangis thame, throw the quhilk effectione your grace hes knawyng the cowmon weill perreche dywiris tymes.[3]

It was generally perceived that the key to a quiet, peaceful and law abiding kingdom was the Borders, and 'withowt your grace haif ane respeik to it, consederane the partecularaty and effection at your grace knawis in Scotland, it is unabill to be weill'.[4]

One major factor contributing to the prevalent lawlessness and disorder on the Border was the continued existence of the Debatable Land in the West March. As we have seen, according to the terms of the treaty of Norham, the Debatable Land was to

---

[1] *Scottish Correspondence*, ccliii, pp. 379-80. It is not known who wrote this letter, or when.

[2] *Ibid*, ccliii, p.379.

[3] *Ibid*, ccliii, p.380.

[4] *Ibid*, ccliii, p.380.

return to the *status quo ante bellum*.[1] As long as the boundaries and sovereignty of the Debatable Land remained in dispute, the chances of imposing order there were drastically reduced. Added to this was the refusal of the inhabitants of the Debatable Land to evacuate their premises - another stipulation of the treaty of Norham.[2] As a no man's land, the Debatable Land was a safe haven for the less desirable elements of Scottish and English society. As a first step in tackling the problem of disorder on the Border, therefore, the Scottish and English governments resolved to evict the inhabitants of the Debatable Land by force - specifically, by burning them out of their homes.[3]

The joint incursion was planned for 10 December 1551 and was to be led by both the Wardens of the West March, Lords Maxwell and Conyers.[4] On 26 November, proclamations were despatched to Selkirk and Roxburgh charging the inhabitants of those shires to convene at Hawick on 8 December, 'to pas upoune the thevis of the Debatable ground with lord Maxwell'.[5] But by 7 December, the English had suddenly withdrawn their support for the enterprise. Lord Conyers not only 'refusit to keip the dyat, bot wold haiff the samyn stayit'.[6] The reason behind the English Council's decision to pull out of the exercise, and their order for Conyers to suspend all communication with the Scots, was the murder of a member of the house of Armstrong.

---

[1] *Foedera*, XV, pp. 265-6; Nicolson, *Leges Marchiarum*, pp. 58-9.

[2] *Foedera*, XV, p.266; Nicolson, *Leges Marchiarum*, pp. 58-9.

[3] *TA*, X, pp. 34, 39-40.

[4] *RPC*, I, p.117; *TA*, X, p.34. In November 1551, the logistics of the raid for 'the recovery of the Debaitabill land' were hammered out between Maxwell and a special depute acting for Conyers at Dumfries, where Châtelherault was holding a justice ayre. *RSS*, IV, 1416-1428, pp. 225-7; *TA*, X, p.31.

[5] *Ibid*, X, p.34.

[6] *RPC*, I, p.117

The possible repercussions of a military expedition directed against the illegal inhabitants of the Debatable Land, among whom the Armstrongs were prevalent, sparked fears in the English camp that 'somme greater inconvenience might growe, and thereby the peace and amitie empayred'.[1] Marie de Guise, Châtelherault and the Privy Council, conversely, had no such qualms and remained fully committed to the enterprise. Maxwell was ordered to proceed as planned, 'provyding alwayis that the said Lord do, nor procure to be done, upoun the severall ground of Ingland that may tend to the ruptor of the peace and violatioun thairof'.[2] On 10 December he set out on his course of destruction, intent not only on the 'birnyng of the Debatable ground', but also the demolition of the inhabitants' homesteads.[3]

Maxwell's raid, however, failed to reduce the Debatable Land to a state of uninhabited neutrality. The Grahams and the Armstrongs, the primary targets of the raid, stood their ground and remained a permanent fixture within the disputed territory. If anything, Maxwell's raid worsened the situation by inaugurating a particularly violent feud between his house and that of the Grahams, several of whom were slaughtered during the Warden's expedition.[4] As a result, lawlessness and disorder continued to plague the Borders and it became patently clear that in order to rectify the situation, the Debatable Land had to be divided and its boundaries settled once and for all.

---

[1] *APC*, III, pp. 363-4, 430, 443.

[2] *RPC*, I, pp. 117-8.

[3] Maxwell was accompanied by hackbutters, masons, quarrymen and 'peonaris' who were armed with 'pikkis and mattokkis'. *TA*, X, pp. 39-40.

[4] *RPC*, I, pp. 117-8, 118-9, 144-6; R.B. Armstrong, *The History of Liddesdale, Eskdale, Ewesdale, Wauchopedale, and the Debateable Land*, (Edinburgh, 1833), Appendix liii, pp. xciii-xciv.

Just weeks after Maxwell's raid, the Privy Council described in detail the degenerate state of the Borders on account of the existence of the Debatable Land. It was reported that:

> ...the greit and hevy attemptatis committit upoun our Soverane Ladys pur liegis be thevis and uthairis malefactouris, brokin men, and the diverse murthuris and slauchteris committit be thaim in tyme bigane, and specialie be the inhabitantis [of] the Debatabill land, quha nychtlie, day, and continualie rydis and makis quotidiane reiffis and oppressionis upon the pur; and in likmaner, all evill doaris and faltouris resortis to the said Dabatabill land, and quhatsumever falt thai commit thai ar welcum and ressett be the inhabitantis thairof, and assistis and takis plane part with theif and tratour in thair evill deidis, and na trew man offendit to can get rameid, nor na trespassour can be put to dew punischment; and als understandand that the said Debatabill land and inhabitantis thairof hes bene thir mony yeris the occasioun of weris, and ay hes beine the principall brekaris of the pece, and as yit daylie intendis to do that is in thaim to do the samyn.[1]

They concluded that the only viable solution was that the 'Debatabill land be dividit ... for the commoun weill of this realme, rest and quitenes of the lieges thairof, and interteneyng of the peax in all tymes to cum'.[2] The English had reached the same conclusion at approximately the same time and approached the French ambassador then in London, Claude de Laval, Seigneur de Boisdauphin, to set the wheels in motion.[3] On 20 March 1551/2, Cassillis, Maxwell, Sir James Douglas of Drumlanrig and John Bellenden of Auchnoul were appointed to meet with the negotiating commissioners for England, the Earl of Westmorland, Sir Thomas Palmer and Sir Thomas Challoner, for the equitable division of the Debatable Land.[4]

---

[1] 27 January 1551/2, *RPC*, I, pp. 118-9.

[2] *Ibid*, I, p.119.

[3] BL, Cotton MSS, Caligula B.vii, f.490.

[4] Richard Maitland of Lethington also became involved in the negotiations and was one of the signatories of the final agreement on 24 September 1552. *RPC*, I, pp. 120-1; *APC*, III, pp. 492-3; *Foedera*, XV, pp. 315, 318-9.

It had been decided early on that the negotiations would take place at Dumfries and Carlisle as opposed to somewhere in the Debatable Land, because it was feared that the inhabitants there, 'being affectyoned to their owne pryvate purpose', would prevent the realisation of its division. Cassillis' advice to Marie de Guise, that 'it is best that nain knaw qwhow thir materis standis', was echoed in the English Council's declaration that 'the lesse pryvey the Borderers be made to the devision hereof, the more likely it is the thing shall take place'.[1] In the end, it was not the reaction of the Grahams or the Armstrongs that threatened to jeopardise the negotiations, but the terms of the settlement itself.

The fate of Cannobie Priory and, in particular, two stone houses belonging to Sandy Armstrong and Thomas Graham were the major points of contention that eventually broke up the negotiations just weeks after they had begun in May 1551.[2] The Scottish government issued explicit instructions to the negotiating commissioners that 'ye enter nocht to na divisoun of the landis of the Priorye of Cannoby as debatabill'.[3] They were, however, willing to adopt a far more compromising position on the matter of the Graham and Armstrong residences. Ideally, they would have preferred the 'downputting of baith the stane houssis', but the Scottish commissioners were instructed to abandon this point if it proved to be a stumbling block for the division of the

---

[1] *Scottish Correspondence*, cclxii, pp. 359-60; *APC*, III, pp. 491-4.

[2] On 22 April 1552, the Scottish Commissioners were ordered to make their way towards the West March to begin the negotiations, but the English Commissioners' initial reluctance to deal with Lord Maxwell and the dispute over whether the first meeting should be held in Scotland or England, meant that the actual division of the Debatable Land was not discussed until early May. *RPC*, I, pp. 124-5; *Scottish Correspondence*, cclxii, pp. 357-60; BL, Cotton MSS, Caligula B.vii, fos. 461-5; Boscher, 'English provincial government', pp. 137-8.

[3] *RPC*, I, p.122. See *ibid*, I, pp. 121-2, for the Scottish commissioners' complete set of instructions.

Debatable Land as a whole.[1] The English commissioners, conversely, had been issued with far more stringent instructions.[2] In addition to Black Bank, a strategic location 'by the which there is a strayte and yet a good passage for the entrye or convoye of ordynance owt of Skotland over the water of Esk into England', they were to secure both houses, especially Sandy Armstrong's, and the areas of the Debatable Land in which they stood.[3] The negotiating commissioners had come to the table, therefore, with a clear conflict of interest.

Cassillis reported as much when he detailed the events of their meeting to Marie de Guise:

> ... we dessyirrit them [the English commissioners] to mark in the plat, as they wald answ[e]r afoir ther Consel, [qwhat] war ane ressonabil dewision and we swld do the lyik. Sa, madame, they maid ane merk and passit throw ane part of Cannabe and maid al the best land to them and bayth Sande Armestaringis hows and Thome Gramis. Than we dessyirrit to geif them it that they offerit to ws and to tak the toder, qwilk they [cu]ld nocht aggre to, as they said. Than we dewydit it in twa maners and offerit them ther chois, qwhilk they said they mycht nocht accord to, ... Madame, the caws of wr defference presantly is that [they] exteim Cannabe debatabil, qwhilk we cwld nocht accord onto. Nocht theles, madame, the mater is brocht to ane neir poinct.[4]

Despite the impasse over Cannobie Priory and the English Commissioners' rejection of the Scots' proposal that both sides take one house each, the Queen Dowager was nevertheless heartened by the way the negotiations seemed to be progressing. So optimistic was she that on 25 May 1552 the Duc de Guise was informed that a

---

[1] *RPC*, I, p.122.

[2] BL, Harley MSS, 289.26, fos. 36-8.

[3] *Ibid*, 289.26, f.38.

[4] 8 May [1552], *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxlii, pp. 358-9.

settlement was imminent.[1] Marie de Guise had either been misinformed or grossly misled. By the time she wrote to her brother, the negotiations had effectively broken down. Once again, it would take the intervention of Boisdauphin to get the negotiations up and running.[2]

Recommencing in June, the second round of negotiations made little headway and dragged on through the summer of 1552. While the English had agreed to concede the lands of Cannobie Priory, they had become more resolute in their determination to gain possession of both the Armstrong and Graham homesteads. It was not until 16 August that some definite progress was made. Frustrated by the proceedings, Boisdauphin presented 'the Scotes last offer towching the particion of the Debatable' to the English Council, for which Edward VI's assent was finally received.[3] Interestingly, the treaty dividing the Debatable Land, which was formally concluded on 24 September 1552, greatly resembled the terms initially proposed by the Scots' in April-May 1552.[4] The lands of the Priory of Cannobie *and* the house of Sandy Armstrong fell to Scotland, while the English gained possession of the area dominated by the Grahams. Once again, an Anglo-Scottish treaty had largely been effected by French diplomatic intervention. As P.G. Boscher comments, 'it would be wrong to view the division of the Debatable as

---

[1] *Balcarres Papers*, II, lxxxii, pp. 118-9; Boscher, 'English provincial government', pp. 138-9.

[2] *APC*, IV, p.69; PRO, SP10/14/36.

[3] *APC*, IV, pp. 113, 118.

[4] *Foedera*, XV, pp. 315-9; *CSP Scot.*, I, 394, p.191, Nicolson, *Leges Marchiarum*, pp. 316-9; *RPC*, I, pp. 121-2; *Scottish Correspondence*, cclxii, pp. 358-9; Boscher, 'English provincial government', p.141. See *Foedera*, XV, pp. 319-20 and 325-6, for Mary, Queen of Scots' ratification of the treaty and Sir John Maxwell of Terregles and John Johnstone's commission to exchange this confirmation with Sir Thomas Dacre and Sir Richard Musgrave, which took place on 15 December 1552.

a product of Anglo-Scottish cooperation; it came about chiefly as a result of French pressure to resolve the controversy once and for all'.[1]

The existence of the Debatable Land, however, was but one factor contributing to the prevalent lawlessness and disorder on the Borders. A more serious problem was the general disregard for Border Law and the ineffective administration and execution of justice by warden officials on both sides of the Anglo-Scottish divide. The rectification of these problems became an over-riding concern for Marie de Guise during her regency. Her extensive involvement in every aspect of Border affairs, from the most trivial task to those more befitting her rank, reflected her determination to fulfil her commission and provide for the 'executioun of justice and ordouring of the cuntre'.[2] The methods she employed to combat disorder and reduce the Border to obedience, moreover, are representative of the methods she employed throughout all of Scotland.

Mary Tudor's accession, and her expressed desire for peace and the maintenance of law and order, provided Marie de Guise with an ideal opportunity to seek redress for the numerous outrages committed by the English on the Border against the Scots.[3] Antoine de Noailles, the new French ambassador resident in London, was ordered to present letters from Marie de Guise congratulating the English Queen on her accession and reciprocating her good will to peace.[4] More importantly, he was to describe in detail the nature of the outrages committed by the English on the Border, and to

---

[1] Boscher, 'English provincial government', p.141.

[2] *RPC*, I, p.90.

[3] Noailles informed Marie de Guise of Mary Tudor's inclination to peace on 6 September 1553. AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.68; *CSP Scot.*, I, 398, p.192.

[4] *Ibid.*, I, 398, p.192. Châtelherault also sent a letter to Mary Tudor on 25 September 1553, which simply reiterated Guise's message. *Ibid*, I, 398.i, p.192.

'perswaid the Queen and Counsale to direct Commissioneris ... to meit ane lyke nomer Commissioneris for Scotland, ... for redressing of sic attemptatis, stancheing of malefactouris, and ordorying of the Bourdouris, manteinance of the peax and quiet of the liegis of baith the realmes'.[1] If Mary refused to comply, Noailles was further instructed to 'mak the Kyng [Henri] advertisment thairof'. Marie de Guise was fully prepared to use Henri's protectorate of Scotland, and the latent threat of his intervention, to force the English Queen into compliance.[2]

Noailles presented the Queen Dowager's letter on 8 October 1553.[3] From him, the English Queen heard numerous complaints and charges against her Border subjects in great detail. They were accused, for example, of making daily incursions into Scotland for the purpose of 'takand heirschippis of gudis, committand slauchteris and utheris gret crymes and rangis upon the liegis of this realme'.[4] The more serious charge, however, lay in the fact that for these crimes the Scottish Wardens 'can get na redress, quhilk apperis manifestlie to move occasioun of weir betwix the realme, gif hiasty remeid be nocht providit and ordour put thair to'.[5] This also applied to the infraction of Lord Home's fishing rights of the Tweed by the Captain of Norham, a matter that the Deputy Warden of the East March for England, Mr. Gray of Chillingham, refused to settle. This may be because he was allegedly involved in criminal activity himself. Chillingham had been accused of making cattle and sheep raids into Scotland with

---

[1] *RPC*, I, p.149.

[2] *Ibid*, I, p.149.

[3] *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 53, pp. 17-8; *RPC*, I, pp. 148-51.

[4] *Ibid*, I, p.148.

[5] *Ibid*, I, p.148.

Cuthbert Musgrave, Captain of Harbottle. The Captain of Wark was similarly accused, but with the murder of two Scots 'nocht half ane Scottis myle fra the said metynge place of Roddane burne, and scant tua houris afore the meting of the Wardanis'.[1] These charges reveal the truly lawless state of the Borders. Not only was justice failing to be executed, but there was also the more serious problem of the responsible officials having a complete disregard for Border Law themselves. How could one expect Border Law to be observed when the very people who were employed to enforce it, and dispense impartial justice, were themselves engaged in criminal activity?

In response to these allegations, Mary Tudor adopted a non-committal position. She neither admitted nor refuted the charges made against her subjects, but simply acceded to Marie de Guise's request for a meeting of commissioners on the Anglo-Scottish Border.[2] Sir Thomas Cornwallis and Sir Robert Bowes were appointed to meet with the Scottish commissioners, Sir Robert Carnegy of Kinnaird and Sir John Bellenden of Auchnoul, 'to determine all past quarrels, and give order to avoid the like in future'.[3] In late October 1553, the English Commissioners proceeded to Berwick armed with their instructions and a similar list of outrages committed by the Scots against the English.[4]

The result of this meeting of commissioners was an indenture dated 4 December 1553. A reassertion and redefinition of Border Law and practices, the 'Indenture' aimed

---

[1] *RPC*, I, pp. 148-9; *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 53, pp. 17-8.

[2] Mary Tudor to Marie de Guise, 13 October 1553, *CSP Scot.*, I, 400, p.193. See also *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 53, pp. 17-8, for the English Council's account of Noailles' audience with Mary and their thoughts on the charges levied by the Scots.

[3] *CSP Scot.*, I, 400, p.193; *APC*, IV, p.357; *RPC*, I, p.150.

[4] BL, Harley MSS, 289, f.160 and 1757, f.314.

to provide for the effective administration and execution of justice.[1] It dealt with a wide range of issues, from individual disputes, such as Lord Home's fishing rights, to the general backlog of unredressed bills at Days of Truce, and outlined the correct procedures for the punishment of crime. In cases of murder, for example, Wardens were ordered to observe all points of the law and exact the full penalties because the 'negligent omission of offences in executioun and performing the said treatie and lawis in that poynt hes bene the occasioun of sic greit enormiteis and discordes upone the bordouris of baith the saidis realme'.[2] While the payment of damages remained the customary penalty for arson and assault, the commissioners added a further stipulation that the perpetrators of these crimes were to be delivered to the Warden opposite and 'punissit be him in strait presoun be the space of sex monethis'.[3] The 'Indenture' of 1553, therefore, served as the legal foundation upon which Marie de Guise sought to implement good rule on the Borders as Queen Regent.

During the first three years of her regency, Marie de Guise worked laboriously to see that Border laws were being observed and enforced. In May 1554, d'Oisel reported to Noailles that, since her advancement to the regency, Guise has been 'continuellement empeschee tant a reuire noz frontieres en meilleur repos qu'elles n'ont este par cy devant comme aussy a donner provision a toutes autres choses concernans le bien police et Justice de ce Royaume qui en a tres grand besoing en quoy ladicte Dame a desja tres bien commence'.[4] One way she sought to remedy these problems was to take a direct

---

[1] *RPC*, XIV, pp. 115-22; Nicolson, *Leges Marchiarum*, pp. 71-83.

[2] *RPC*, XIV, pp. 119-20.

[3] *Ibid*, XIV, p.120.

[4] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 185, 232[r].

hand in all aspects of Border affairs. The *Register of the Privy Council for Scotland* (XIV) reveals the extraordinary lengths Guise went to ensure that Border Law was being administered and executed properly.[1] As one would expect, she corresponded with Mary Tudor or used the French Ambassador resident in England to voice her complaints and seek redress at the English Court. But she also took the unusual step of regularly writing directly to England's Wardens on routine matters of business that one can only describe as trivial, and certainly not what one would expect a Queen Regent to have concerned herself with. In her correspondence with Lord Conyers and Lord Dacre, for example, she discussed the return of fugitives and the delivery of pledges, fought for the release of Scottish subjects who had been illegally detained in England and sought redress for crimes committed against individual Scots. By keeping in constant communication with Dacre and Conyers, Marie de Guise placed a great deal of pressure on the Wardens to enforce and execute Border Law. She reinforced this policy by maintaining a high profile in the area.

In the summer of 1554, Scotland's new Queen Regent made an extensive and prolonged visit to the Border. Her progress was intended to be a visible display of royal power, whereby her authority and that of the crown was asserted on a personal level. It also provided her with an opportunity to ensure first hand that justice was being served on both sides of the Anglo-Scottish divide. Informing Dacre of her upcoming visit, Guise declared that the purpose of her progress was 'nocht only for our pastyme, bot to put ordour amangis sic misreulie peple as wald tend to raise ony truble or disquiet

[1] *RPC*, XIV, pp. 122-64.

betuix the trew subjectis of thir twa realmes'.[1] She then made the extraordinary move of summoning him to a meeting with Lord Yester, Warden of the Middle March for Scotland, at Hexpethgate on 20 June to dispense the justice that should have been disponed at an earlier meeting in May.[2] The Queen Regent's scheduled appearance at this conference was to ensure that it was. By her shrewd manipulation of events, Dacre was in no position to ignore the Queen Regent's summons or decline her 'invitation' to administer justice without adding to the friction that already existed between the two sides.[3]

The precarious nature of Anglo-Scottish relations in 1554 led the English to view Marie de Guise's visit to the Border with great suspicion. Although she had clearly stated the purpose of her journey to Dacre, an ulterior motive was nevertheless suspected.[4] Conyers was particularly worried. On 6 June 1554, he wrote to Shrewsbury expressing his concern: 'to what purpose hir commyng is, I am not (as yet) suer ... But whatsoever hir intent is, I thinke (by the grace of god) with the small powre I have to put my self in such arreadyness as for the suddyn (if her purpose so were) that she and hir force sholde be resisted'.[5] As a precautionary measure, Shrewsbury subsequently ordered that all the English Wardens place themselves at one hour's notice for the

---

[1] *RPC*, XIV, p.129; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.232[r].

[2] *RPC*, XIV, pp. 128-9.

[3] *Ibid*, XIV, pp. 130-1.

[4] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, fos. 43[r], 47[r].

[5] *Ibid*, 3194, f.47[r].

defence of the Border, 'if nede shall so require'.[1] In the meantime, the Queen Regent's movements were to be watched and reported scrupulously.[2]

The highlight and, arguably, main purpose of Guise's trip to the Borders was to attend a justice ayre at Jedburgh in mid-July.[3] The fortnight she spent in the burgh satisfied her suspicious English observers that she was genuinely concerned with justice, having 'travelled verie ornestlie to bring hir subiectes unto amytie and love on with an other'.[4] Leaving Jedburgh on 23 July, the royal party, which was escorted by a company of French light horse under the command of d'Oisel, made its way to Kelso, arriving there that same evening. From Kelso, the Queen Regent and her military entourage then proceeded to Home Castle, Langton, Eyemouth, Dunbar and Haddington respectively.[5] Clearly, Guise was determined to cover as much ground as possible during her progress in order to 'puttand reull vpoun the Bordouris' through a visible display of royal power. She also sought to achieve this by taking hostages as pledges for good behaviour and obedience to the crown.

In accordance with the advice she received for the punishment of crime and for 'the handillyng of the bourdour men',[6] Marie de Guise used her royal progress, and the justice ayre at Jedburgh in particular, as an opportunity to take 'plegeis of the clannis

---

[1] Conyers to Shrewsbury, 1 July 1554, LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, f.43[r].

[2] *Ibid*, 3194, f.43[r].

[3] *RSS*, IV, 2783-90, pp. 481-3; *TA*, X, p.264; LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, fos. 43[r], 51, 57, 59[r]; *RPC*, XIV, p.137.

[4] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, fos. 51, 59.

[5] *Ibid*, 3194, f.59[r].

[6] *Scottish Correspondence*, ccliii, pp. 379-80.

and vtheris quhilkis mycht be maist noysum to the peax'.[1] The Scotts and the Kerrs were two such clans that fell into this category. The Queen Regent regarded their longstanding feud in the Scottish Middle March, which climaxed on 4 October 1552 with the murder of Sir Walter Scott of Buccleuch, as a 'grit impediment [to the peace] this lang tyme bygaine'.[2] One of her first acts was to summon the principal members of both houses to Edinburgh and enter them into a bond of assurance binding them to the peace.[3] In an attempt to ensure that this and other such bonds were upheld, Guise took 'dyverse surnames [as] pledges, for the observing and keping of good rule, as the Carres, the Scotte with dyverse others, wherefore there may be kuytt frendshipp one with other'.[4] As we shall see, this policy failed to pacify the Middle March or bind the Kerrs of Cessford permanently to the authority of the crown.

Indeed, Marie de Guise's progress as a whole did little to quell the endemic lawlessness and violence of the Borders. International considerations and, more immediately, the Scots' contribution to the Habsburg-Valois conflict undermined Guise's efforts and deprived her of valuable resources needed to reduce the frontier to obedience. In January 1554/5, d'Oisel complained of this bitterly to Noailles and pleaded that French troops be sent to Scotland 'pour la besongne qui nous avons en main qui est de reduyre nos frontieres en craincte et bonne obeyssance'.[5] By the summer of 1555, the rapid deterioration of conditions on the Border led d'Oisel to

---

[1] Fraser, *Wemyss*, III, pp. 9-10.

[2] *RPC*, XIV, p.122.

[3] *Ibid*, XIV, pp. 122-3 and I, pp. 152-3.

[4] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, f.59; *RPC*, I, pp. 153-4.

[5] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, f.343^{r}.

surmise that it was the worst the area had seen for 50 years. The French Lieutenant-General attributed this specifically to the failure of England's Wardens to observe and enforce Border Law, and warned that if they did not do something about it soon, Marie de Guise would.[1] The heightened tensions between England and Scotland in 1555 did little to improve the situation and, as d'Oisel predicted, left the Queen Regent with no choice but to implement a decidedly more aggressive Border policy.

Throughout 1555, Guise attempted to reduce the Borders to obedience through force. In May 1555, she called a muster to support Huntly, Cassillis and Morton in their commission 'to punish and repress certain crimes and Slaughters committed upon the Borders'.[2] The military objective of this expedition was to invade Lauder and force the Laird of Cessford 'and utheris of this cuntre men his freyndis' to follow the Queen Regent's 'direction anent the ordowring and putting of gude rewll in the cuntre'.[3] In July and August, two additional musters were called at Dumfries, where Guise and d'Oisel sought to effect the same on the West Border.[4] But even these military campaigns failed to produce the desired results. The same was also true in 1556, even though changes in the international situation had allowed the Queen Regent to focus her attention exclusively on domestic concerns.

---

[1] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 468-72.

[2] Pitcairn, *Trials*, I.i, p.384; *TA*, X, p.264; *Scottish Correspondence*, cclxvi, pp. 400-1. Those who failed to observe the muster and assist Huntly, Cassillis and Morton in their commission were subsequently charged. Pitcairn, *Trials*, I.i, p.384.

[3] *Ibid*, I.i, p.384.

[4] *TA*, X, pp. 259-61; *RSS*, IV, 3038-9, p.534; *RPC*, XIV, pp. 13-4; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 501-2, 503[r]; LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, f.107; St. Andrews University Library, Special Collections, msDA784.7, ms4347.

The Habsburg-Valois truce of Vaucelles (contracted in February 1555/6) provided a welcome respite in the Continental wars and enabled Marie de Guise to step up her efforts to impose good rule on the Border. In May, she successfully levied a police tax of £4,000 'for [the] furnessing of certane horsemen vpoun the west bordouris', and commissioned Bothwell, her newly appointed Lieutenant-General of the Marches, to lead a military expedition there for the repressing of thieves and traitors - starting at Sandy Armstrong's house.[1] Yet, despite being accompanied by a large number of French and Scottish troops,[2] Bothwell's campaign against the Scottish rebels in July 1556 was disastrous.[3] During the raid, approximately eighteen of the Queen Regent's forces were killed and an additional forty taken prisoner – including Bothwell himself.[4] Even when combatted with force, the endemic lawlessness and violence of the Border prevailed and would continue to do so for the remainder of Marie de Guise's regency. But this problem was not exclusive to the Borders. It was also true of the Highlands and Western Isles, where Guise was equally determined to restore law and order after the failure of Châtelherault's Highland policy.

***

[1] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, f.31^{r}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.269 and *Relations*, I, p.279; *RPC*, XIV, p.14; *Aberdeen Council Register*, pp. 296-7.

[2] 400 Scottish light horse and 'quelque nombre de gens de cheval et de pied de ceulx que le Roy entretient par deçà' comprised the Queen Regent's forces 'pour réduire en l'obéissance quelques rebelles habitants en icelle frontière'. AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, f.31^{r}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 269-70 and *Relations*, I, p.281.

[3] See AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 665-8 and XIII, fos. 30^{v}-33, 45, 47-9; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 267-77 and *Relations*, I, pp. 279-88; and LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, fos. 262, 266, for specific details of Bothwell's ill-fated expedition.

[4] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, fos. 31-2^{r}, 49^{v}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 270-1, 276-7 and *Relations*, I, pp. 282-3, 287-8; LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, f.266.

The untimely death of James V in 1542 inaugurated a period of renewed lawlessness and violence in the Highlands and Western Isles. The semblance of order that the king had managed to impose there prior to his death quickly evaporated under Arran's administration. The factionalism that accompanied Mary Stewart's accession, together with Donald Dubh's attempt to restore the Lordship of the Isles and the intrigues of England during their 'rough wooing' of Scotland, all contributed to the revival of the 'Highland problem', which manifested itself in virulent disorder, lawlessness and violence. As in the Borders, Marie de Guise attempted to deal with this problem by providing for the execution of justice, making royal progresses as a visible demonstration of royal power and, ultimately, by extending and asserting the authority of the crown through force. But, as we shall see, much of the 'Highland problem' that Guise was faced with upon becoming regent was a direct result of Châtelherault's ineptitude.

In 1543, Scotland's new regent, James Hamilton, earl of Arran, chose to release the clan chiefs and hostages that James V had captured and imprisoned during his naval expedition and royal progress to the Highlands and Western Isles in May 1540.[1] Arran's power struggle with Cardinal Beaton, who vehemently opposed his position on reform and dynastic union with England, prompted him to release these prisoners in a deliberate attempt to revive the 'Highland problem' and deprive Beaton of the active support of Huntly and Argyll, the respective Lieutenants of the North and Western Isles. In this, Arran had been unwittingly helped by Donald Dubh, who had escaped from

[1] For an overview of James' Highland policy, see Cameron's 'Daunting the Isles' in *James V*, pp. 228-54.

Edinburgh Castle in 1543 and returned to the Isles to claim his patrimony. The resuscitation of Donald's campaign to regain possession of the Lordship of the Isles and the earldom of Ross, while ousting Argyll and Huntly in the process, was hindered by the absence of many of his supporters.[1] Indicative of how effective James V's policy of imprisoning clan chiefs was in maintaining law and order in the Highlands and Isles, Arran's release of these prisoners was a deliberate and open invitation to rebellion.

On an immediate and practical level, Arran's policy produced the desired results. In the summer of 1543, Donald Dubh and his insurgent cohorts launched an attack against Argyll, who was compelled to stay and defend his lands. But in the end, it was Arran himself who suffered the devastating effects of this policy. On 3 September 1543, Arran recovered from his so-called 'godly fit'. Abandoning the reforming and anglophile cause, the Regent reversed his position and aligned himself with Cardinal Beaton and Marie de Guise. Having done so, Arran then had to try and put an end to the chaos he had unleashed in the Highlands and Isles - a task which was made all the more difficult by the intrigues of his arch-rival, Matthew Stewart, earl of Lennox, during Henry VIII's 'rough wooing' of Scotland.

In 1544, shortly after the Earl of Hertford began his campaign to 'burn Edinburgh town', sack Leith and ravage the Borders and Lowlands of Scotland, Lennox embarked on an equally savage naval expedition to the Western Isles.[2] With a fleet of 18 galleys, Lennox invaded the Isles of Arran and Bute before proceeding to Dumbarton, where he planned to deliver its castle to Henry VIII and render it a key

---

[1] D. Gregory, *The History of the Western Highlands and Isles of Scotland* (London, 1881), pp. 154-5.

[2] *Hamilton Papers*, II, pp. 325-7; Gregory, *History*, pp. 361-9, 371-2, 379-80.

English stronghold in Scotland.[1] In order to achieve his military objective, Lennox was relying on the support of Glencairn, whom he had urged to 'ramayn with in the castal qwel I com haym ... and kep yowr lordschip self and trest with na man bot with in the sayd plays'.[2] Lennox's fears of disaffection were justified. Glencairn had been secretly reconciled with Marie de Guise, and a plot was subsequently devised to capture Lennox upon his return to Dumbarton and foil his attempt to deliver the castle to the English King.[3] In his letter of 25 September 1544, Glencairn informed Guise of the 'guid wordes ... gifand me' by the wife[4] and friends of Lennox's retainer, George Stirling of Glorat, captain of Dumbarton Castle, which were made on behalf of Lennox and 'my lord of Lennax freindis'. Despite these efforts to keep him onside, Glencairn accurately predicted that they 'sall failzie [in] thare entent'.[5] Upon arriving at Dumbarton Castle, Lennox sensed something was wrong and hastily departed for the safety of his ships. When Sir George Douglas of Pittendreich arrived in Dumbarton with a force of 4,000 Scots soon after, Lennox decided to make a hasty retreat to the Isle of Bute only to be attacked by the Earl of Argyll en route.[6]

---

[1] *L &P of Henry VIII*, XIX, ii, p.312.

[2] *Scottish Correspondence*, lxxvii, pp. 99-100; *L & P of Henry VIII*, XIX, i, p.809.

[3] Gregory, *History*, p.165.

[4] Annabel, daughter of Sir William Edmonstone of Duntreath, captain of Doune.

[5] *Scottish Correspondence*, lxxxiv, pp. 106-8. On 19 March 1546, the Government issued an act of indemnity to George Stirling and discharged him of all the 'diverse and sindrie attemptatis, reiffis, spulyeis, slauchteris, depredationis and uthairis, committit and done be the personis bein the said Castell' when in the possession of Lennox, on the grounds that there were 'utharis that wes principale committeris of the saidis reiffis, spulzeis, and heirschippis' and that, after the flit of Lennox to England, he 'randerit the said Castell to my said Lord Governour'. *RPC*, I, p.66.

[6] In September 1544, Marie de Guise offered Sir George Douglas of Pittendreich a pension of 1,000 crowns in return for his support and service. As has already been mentioned, Sir George and his brother, the Earl of Angus, were the nominal leaders of the English faction in Scotland until they became disgruntled with Henry VIII and Somerset's overly aggressive Scottish policy. *Scottish Correspondence*, lxxxv-lxxxvii, pp. 108-33; Gregory, *History*, pp. 163-7.

It was during this conflict with Argyll that Lennox first entered into communication with Donald Dubh, whose own vendetta against Argyll made him a logical choice of ally. On his part, Donald was in favour of any alliance that would help him in his own quest to reclaim his patrimony, for which he had the active support of many clan chiefs and prominent Islemen, several of whom had been released from prison by Arran. A military alliance was thus formed. Lennox immediately returned to England to report on these developments and plan for future events, while Donald and his insurgent cohorts were left to continue their attacks against Argyll and Huntly, the bastions of central government in the Highlands and Western Isles.[1] Once again, Arran was to suffer the consequences of his ill-conceived decision to release the clan chiefs and hostages that James V had imprisoned in 1540. By 1545, the 'Highland problem' had taken on a distinctly British dimension. The 'gret invasions and persute maid be Donald allegesand him of the Ilis and utheris hieland men his part takaris', was 'nocht alanerly throw thair awine pissance bot also throw the suppli myance and favour of the King of Ingland, talkand gude deid of him and his thairfore, tending to do that is in thame to bring the hale Ilis and ane grete part of the ferme land of this relame to the obesance of the King of Ingland'.[2]

Arran's attempt to counter the effects of this alliance was feeble at best. In June 1545, a proclamation was issued by the Privy Council ordering Donald and his followers to 'desist and ces fra all maner of persewing or invading of our Soverane Ladyis liegis als wele duelland in the Ilis as in the ferme land of this realm, or invading

---

[1] Gregory, *History*, pp. 167-8.

[2] *RPC*, I, p.4.

of our Soverane Ladyis liegis to byrn hery slay or distroy ony of thame, or mak ony oppressionis upoun thame, ... under the pane of treasoun'.[1] Given the events that followed the issuing of this ordinance, the Government's threats of legal action and 'thair utir rewyne and distructioun' by 'the hale body of the realm of Scotland with the succour laitly cumin fourth of France', had absolutely no effect in daunting Donald into submission. Rather, they seem to have had the opposite effect and strengthened Donald's alliance with Lennox.

In July 1545, Donald commissioned two plenipotentaries to negotiate with Lennox the terms of his submission to the English King. These negotiations ultimately proved successful. On 5 August 1545, Donald and the Lords and Barons of his Council, which included such notables at Hector MacLean of Dowart, Rory MacLeod of Lewis and Alexander MacLeod of Dunvegan, swore an oath of allegiance to Henry VIII *and* recognised Lennox as the true Regent of Scotland and second person in the realm.[2] More importantly, Donald would have the backing of the English in his quest to reclaim the Lordship of the Isles and the earldom of Ross. In return for his military and political support, Henry VIII confirmed Donald's annual pension of 2,000 crowns and agreed to pay the wages of 3,000 Islemen for two months.[3]

By the time Arran had finally decided to initiate legal proceedings against Lennox and other 'certane genillmen of the Ilis', it was too little, too late.[4] In

---

[1] *RPC*, I, pp. 4-5.

[2] Gregory, *History*, pp. 170-1.

[3] *Ibid*, pp. 170-4.

[4] *APS*, II, pp. 452-4, 456, 459, 464, 468-9.

September 1545, preparations for a large-scale invasion of Scotland from Ireland had already been made.[1] Lennox was to command the expeditionary force of 2,000 Irish soldiers provided by the Earl of Ormond, who was also to participate in the invasion, and 8,000 of Donald's men. However, delay and a certain amount of disorganisation prevented this invasion from becoming a reality. Lennox had been called away to assist Hertford in his military campaign on the Borders, and during his prolonged absence, dissension within the Highland contingency grew over the payment of wages and eventually led to its disbandment.[2] The death of Donald Dubh shortly thereafter, and the selection of John MacDonald of Islay as his successor, served only to intensify the dissension within the Highlands and Western Isles. Lennox's plans for the invasion of Scotland were severely undermined by the disaffection of many clan chiefs, such as the MacLeods of Lewis and Harris, who refused to recognise John of Islay as Lord of the Isles and sought to reconcile themselves with Arran. Lennox and the English party suffered a further blow when, on 18 June 1546, Arran successfully negotiated a truce between Argyll and John of Islay, who renounced his title as Lord of the Isles.[3] But, as we have already seen, this was not the last the Scottish government would hear of Lennox or of his intrigues to become 'master' of Scotland.

Reconciliation did not necessarily imply active support for the government. While many Highlanders and Islemen fought at the battle of Pinkie during the second phase of England's 'rough wooing' under Protector Somerset, many still ignored

---

[1] *Scottish Correspondence*, cvii, p.146; *Diurnal of Occurents*, p.39.

[2] Gregory, *History*, p.174.

[3] *RPC*, I, p.30; *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxix, p.353.

Arran's summonses to muster out of indifference or fear of arrest. The MacLeods of Lewis, for example, were noticeably absent even though they had been reconciled with the government. The absence of John Moydart, chief of the clan Ranald, and Ewan Allanson of Lochiel, clan chief of Cameron, however, was far more understandable. In his proclamation against 'the grete slauchteris, murthouris, reiffis, and commoun oppressionis, with convocatiounis of our Soverane Ladyis liegis, committit and done be diverse personis', Arran promised that he 'sall newther giff respect nor remissioun, supersedere nor relaxatioun, to an maner of persoun nor personis that sal happin to committit slauchter or mutilatioun, reiff and commoun oppressioun' or those 'personis resttaris and manteinaris of sik rebellis, oppressouris, and malefactouris, bot sall use his Graces authorite aganis thame'.[1] The insurrection of the Clanranald and the Clancameron against Huntly and the Frasers of Lovat made them prime targets for prosecution.[2] Needless to say, it was in their best interest to stay out of Arran's way in the comparatively safe haven of the Highlands and remain conspicuously absent from any national campaign that could result in their own internment.

By the time the Anglo-Scottish conflict ended in 1549-50, there was thus a great need to restore order to the chaos that war and Arran's policies had created in the Highlands and Western Isles. Upon returning to Scotland from France in November 1551, Marie de Guise immediately set out to fulfil her commission to 'put the realme to

---

[1] *RPC*, I, pp. 59-60, 71. Argyll's name in the sederunt for this meeting of the Privy Council suggests that 'sik rebellis, oppressouris and malefactouris' included the insurgents of the Highlands and Isles, such as the Clanranald and Clancameron.

[2] Culminating in 1544 at the battle of Lochy, this insurrection resulted in many deaths including those of Hugh, lord Fraser and his son and heir, Simon. W. MacKay (ed.), *Chronicles of the Frasers: The Wardlaw Manuscript entitled 'Polichronicon Seu Policratica Temporum, or, The True Genealogy of the Frasers. 916-1674. By Master James Fraser.* (SHS, 1905), pp. 134-40; Gregory, *History*, pp. 157-63.

ane quyatenes' even though she had yet to assume power in an official capacity. In what would be the first indication that she would emulate her late husband's Highland policy, Guise and Arran, now styled Châtelherault, embarked on a progress throughout the Highlands in the summer of 1552.[1] Guise's influence on this expedition did not escape the notice of contemporary observers. In his *History*, for example, Lesley wrote that 'the Governour be advyse of the Quene and nobilitie, determinit to hald justic aris throuch all the partis of the realme, and that rather for staying of trubles in tymis, nor for rigorous punishment of anye offences by past; and to that effect, he being accumpaneit with the Quene and syndre uther nobill men, past in the north partis of Scotland'.[2] Many commentators have also viewed this expedition as a self-serving enterprise on the part of the Queen Dowager, who used this progress to secure support for her own political ambitions against Châtelherault.[3] This no doubt played a part, but it must ultimately be regarded as an attempt to deal with the 'Highland problem' by asserting the authority and will of the crown through a visible display of royal power and the pursuit of royal justice.

Upon becoming Queen Regent, Marie de Guise determined to take an aggressive stance with respect to the 'Highland problem' and resolved to follow in the footsteps of her Stewart predecessors by daunting the Isles into submission. In order to achieve this, Guise relied on the work of crown agents such as Huntly, Argyll, Sutherland and Sir Hew Kennedy of Girvanmains. In June 1554, Guise commissioned Huntly and Argyll

---

[1] Cameron, *James V*, pp. 245-8.

[2] Lesley, *History*, p.243.

[3] Marshall, for instance, claims that 'Mary was not solely interested in the punishment of the disturbers of the peace. She used the expedition to further her own cause'. Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, p.195.

to raise armies and by land and sea, 'to pas with fyre and sword to the utter extermination of the Clarannald, Donald Gorme [of Sleat], Macloyde of the Lews, and thair complices, that sends not and enters thair pledges as they ar chairged'.[1] Guise's vehemence stemmed from the failure of the Clanranald and Clancameron to render themselves before the crown at the justice ayre held at Inverness in 1552, despite having been summoned to do so.[2] Huntly and Argyll had immediately been instructed to pursue the Clanranald and Clancameron at the time, but only Argyll succeeded in extracting an explanation for John Moydart of Clanranald's absence - namely, 'that he wald haif cumin to the Quenis lawis, and done obeysance, giff my Lord Governouris lettres and chargeis had cumin to his knawledge befoire his passing to the Irland'.[3] The Council, having accepted Moydart's explanation, then gave Argyll until December 1552 to bring John Moydart before the Governor and Council so that he could formally offer his submission and obedience to the crown.[4] By September 1553, Huntly had managed to secure the Clanranald's submission. At Ruthven in Badenoch, he entered into a contract with John Moydart of Clanranald, his son, Alan, and 'thair kyne, freindis, allys, and pertakaris', whereby the latter agreed to submit to the authority of the crown in return for a general pardon of all their past crimes.[5] Guise's commission of June 1554, however, reveals that John Moydart's submission was not worth the paper it was written on.

---

[1] *RPC*, XIV, p.12.

[2] *Ibid*, I, pp. 125-6.

[3] *Ibid*, I, p.126.

[4] *Ibid*, I, p.126.

[5] *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxlviii, pp. 366-7.

Argyll set off on his military expedition for the 'surprissing of the Rebellis of the Ilis' on 12 August 1554. He informed Guise that his army was to pass to Mull, 'quhar James McConnill and McClane wyth ther haill folkis ar convenit and remanis upoun my cuming. And quhen we ar all convenit thaire, sall tak purpos to pas forthwarttis upoun the saidis rebellis'.[1] What happened during Argyll's expedition to the Isles is unknown, but we are to presume that, like Huntly, he failed. Unlike Huntly, however, Argyll was fortunate to have escaped the wrath of Marie de Guise.

The personal price paid by Huntly for failing in his commission to establish order in the Highlands was high. The reason for this is not entirely clear. According to Lesley, the Lowland contingent of Huntly's army refused to serve on foot, and Huntly refused to 'merche with the hieland men onlie, for the lait hattrent that thai had conceaved aganis him for the deithe of McIntoche, and thairfore he returned'.[2] Huntly's failure to carry out his commission resulted in his being summoned before the Queen Regent on 11 October 1554 to explain his actions. It was subsequently 'descerned that he had not used his commission according to his acceptation and dewtie, bot had failzied thairin, and thairfore wes ordaned to be punissed at the Quenis pleasour'.[3] Guise's 'ewyll opponzeone' to Huntly was made manifestly clear by the extent to which she chose to punish the 'Cock o' the North' - she was not going to tolerate such self-

---

[1] *Scottish Correspondence*, cclix, pp. 388-9; *TA*, X, pp. 229, 287.

[2] Lesley, *History*, p.251; *Scottish Correspondence*, cclxiii, p.395 *n.*2. Huntly had many enemies in the north, one of which was the Clan MacKintosh. At a lieutenant court in Aberdeen in August 1550, Huntly had arbitrarily charged Mackintosh with conspiracy against his life. Although the burgh council overturned this verdict, Mackintosh was nevertheless executed by the Countess of Huntly, allegedly at the instigation her husband. The Huntly-Mackintosh feud was exacerbated further by the murder of Huntly's sheriff-depute on 30 September 1551. *Ibid*, ccliv, p.381 *n.*1; Lesley, *History*, p.381; Mackintosh, *The Mackintoshes and Clan Chattan*, pp. 128-40.

[3] *RPC*, XIV, p.13.

serving disregard for her authority from any of her nobles.[1] Huntly was subsequently imprisoned and sentenced to be banished to France (although this was later remitted), imposed with a heavy fine and suffered the revocation of his interests in Orkney and Moray. Perhaps the most severe punishment, or at least the one with the greatest repercussions, was the passing of the Great Seal to Huntly's vice-Chancellor, du Rubay, which effectively stripped him of any real power as Chancellor.[2]

There is, however, some question as to the real motive behind Marie de Guise's extremely harsh treatment of Huntly. Was this a genuine attempt by Guise to assert her authority or does the nature of Huntly's punishment reveal an ulterior motive? Frenchmen certainly benefited from Huntly's disgrace. Du Rubay exercised a considerable amount of power as keeper of the Great Seal and M. de Bonot benefited from the revocation of Huntly's interests in Orkney by being appointed bailie there in March 1555.[3] Guise was also able to satisfy Sutherland's claims the same way, appointing him bailie of Moray on 2 August 1555.[4] Yet, the fact that Huntly was restored to favour within a year of his disgrace suggests that Huntly was, as d'Oisel had intimated, being used as an example to the rest of the nobility.[5] It was impossible for Guise to effect a strong monarchy and extend royal government into the localities if powerful nobles disregarded her authority when it served their own interests.

---

[1] *Scottish Correspondence*, cclxiii, p.395.

[2] Huntly entered into his contract with the Queen Regent at Stirling Castle on 30 March 1555. *Ibid*, cclxiv, cclxiii, pp. 396-8, 395-6; Lesley, *History*, p.252; *Diurnel of Occurents*, p.52.

[3] *Scottish Correspondence*, cclxv, pp. 389-9; Lesley, *History*, pp. 256-7.

[4] Fraser, *Sutherland*, I, pp. 106-7; *Scottish Correspondence*, p.374.

[5] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.722.

Unlike Huntly and Argyll, Marie de Guise did have some success with the Earl of Sutherland. He managed to capture and imprison Iye du MacKay, lord Reay, who had been wreaking havoc on his lands since 1550, when Sutherland had been away in France with Marie de Guise.[1] By 1554, MacKay's 'mischeif' had not abated. He continued to spoil and molest the lands of Sutherland and, on a recent occasion, had taken 'away certane wemen and gudes'.[2] In July 1554, therefore, Sutherland received a commission to arrest MacKay and reduce the country to obedience. In this, he was to be assisted by his stepfather, Sir Hugh Kennedy of Girvanmains, who sailed from Leith with a naval force on a command of the Justiciary dated 11 August 1554.[3] Sutherland invaded Strathnavar, successfully captured and demolished the principal MacKay stronghold at Borve and forced Lord Reay's capitulation. By 14 October 1554, Girvanmains informed the Queen Regent that his submission was imminent. On 11 November, MacKay formally submitted to the crown and sailed with Girvanmains to Dumbarton Castle, where he was subsequently imprisoned.[4]

In 1555, Marie de Guise renewed her efforts to combat the 'Highland problem'. A process of treason was issued against Rory MacLeod of Lewis, and in June, the earls of Argyll and Atholl were commissioned to pursue rebels, including MacLeod and the Clanranald, and to reduce the Isles to obedience.[5] These expeditions met with limited

---

[1] As an 'assured Scot', MacKay had assisted the English in their capture of Haddington in 1548. *Scottish Correspondence*, cclviii, pp. 386-8.

[2] *Ibid*, cclviii, pp. 387.

[3] *Ibid*, cclxi, pp. 390-3; *ER*, XVIII, p.584; *TA*, X, p.281.

[4] MacKay, *Chronicles of the Frasers*, pp. 142-3.

[5] *RPC*, XIV, p.14; *TA*, X, pp. 229, 277, 278, 286, 287; Pitcairn, *Trials*, I.i, p.392.

success. Through Argyll, MacLeod made certain offers to the Privy Council for his submission and was granted a respite, while Atholl succeeded in bringing John Moydart of Clanranald and two of his sons before Marie de Guise to offer their obedience to the crown. In a serious lapse of judgement, however, Guise pardoned the Clanranald of all their past offences and incarcerated them at Perth and Methven Castle, where they escaped only to resume their insurgent activity in Highlands.[1] It was presumably because of this that Guise decided to embark on another royal progress of the Highlands and Isles to pursue royal justice and to daunt the area into submission. Accompanied by such notables as Huntly, Argyll, Atholl, Marischal and the Bishops of Ross and Orkney, Guise's progress of 1556 took her to Inverness, the earldom of Ross, Elgin, Banff and Aberdeen.[2] She held justice ayres in all these places and disponed 'the most extreme and rigorous punishment'.[3] Emulating her late husband's policy, she 'charged everie ane of the capitanis of the hie landis to bring in the offendaris of thair awin kin, according to the ordour prescribit in King James the Fiftis tyme onder gret panis; quhairthrow mony was entered'.[4] But just when she was starting to make her authority felt and having some success in her pursuit of royal justice, changes in the international situation quickly undermined her efforts, and prevent us from knowing how effective Marie de Guise's Highland policy would have been in the long term.

---

[1] Gregory, *History*, p.185.

[2] Lesley, *History*, pp. 256-7; *RMS*, IV, 1095, 1097, 1110, pp. 243, 247; *TA*, X, pp. 308-9, 311-13, 317-9; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, fos. 47-9.

[3], Lesley, *History*, pp. 256-7; Pitcairn, *Trials*, I.i, pp. 390-2; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, fos. 49^{r-v}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.275 and *Relations*, I, pp. 286-7.

[4] Lesley, *History*, p.256.

The renewal of the Habsburg-Valois conflict in January 1556/7 and the outbreak of war between England and France the following June, dictated that Marie de Guise focus her attention, once again, on matters of national security and the Border. The Congregation's rebellion of 1559-60 served only to distract her attention further, expending all of her time and energy during the final years of her administration. It was during periods of neglect such as these that the 'Highland problem' was allowed to fester virtually unfettered. Continuity, time and adequate resources were the essential ingredients for an effective Highland policy. During the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, however, these ingredients were in short supply. A string of minority governments and the disruptions of war constantly undermined any efforts to pacify the Highlands and impose royal authority. In this respect, the reign of Mary, Queen of Scots and the regency of Marie de Guise were no exception.

***

The first years of Marie de Guise's regency were dominated by international considerations. The tensions that arose out of the Habsburg-Valois conflict and, in particular, Mary Tudor's accession and marriage to Philip of Spain, forced Guise to focus her attention almost exclusively on matters of defence and national security. These tensions also highlighted the need for Guise to assert her authority and reduce the kingdom to obedience if law and order had any chance of being imposed and, more importantly, if peaceful relations with England had any chance of being maintained. Ironically, these very same tensions undermined the execution of Guise's domestic policy as a whole, which aimed to put the realme 'to ane quyatenes' through a powerful monarchy and strong central government.

Yet, despite these frustrations, Marie de Guise's commitment to the pursuit of royal justice and the ordering of the country did not falter. She even began to make some headway in the Highlands and in her attempts to advance the interests of the crown at the expense of local jurisdictions. The frustrations of 1554-1556, however, were just a glimpse of things to come. The Franco-English war of 1557 soon brought dynastic issues to the fore. The Scots were faced with the prospect of entering into a war they did not necessarily want or feel they had to fight and, as we shall see, this invariably brought into question the marriage of their own queen. For many of Scotland's magnates, the Franco-Scottish protectoral alliance had run its course and now needed to be placed on a more permanent footing that only dynastic union could bring about.

CHAPTER VII

War and Marriage

Just eleven months after it had been contracted, the five year Habsburg-Valois truce of Vaucelles had completely broken down. By the end of January 1556/7, Henri and Philip, now the King of Spain and ruler of the Netherlands, were at war.[1] Henri's military alliance with Pope Paul IV, however, presented Philip with some serious problems rendering him a less than willing participant in the conflict. The religious ramifications of waging war against the papacy, for instance, would give credence to Pope Paul IV's diatribes accusing both Philip and his father of being heretics and oppressors of the Holy See.[2] Added to this was the more immediate problem of financing the war and Philip naturally turned to his wife for support, travelling to England in March 1557 in the hope of procuring financial and military assistance. As before, the English government remained hostile to the idea of fighting Philip's war and refused to commit resources to the Continental campaign. Yet within a matter of months, the English government had dramatically reversed its position by issuing a formal declaration of war against France on 7 June 1557. Years of French intrigue against the Marian régime had taken their toll and had the adverse effect of making the English more disposed to war than to peace. Reports that the French had facilitated Thomas Stafford's invasion and subsequent capture of Scarborough Castle on 28 April

---

[1] For Charles V's abdication and the formal transfer of power to Philip in October 1555, see Rodríguez-Salgado, *The Changing Face of Empire*, pp. 126-32, and pp. 137-252 for the war that was formally declared between France and Spain on 31 January 1556/7.

[2] Pope Paul IV deeply resented Spain's domination of Italy and, in particular, his native Naples.

1557, was the straw that broke the camel's back, giving Mary the perfect excuse to push her government into supporting Philip in the Habsburg-Valois conflict.[1]

England's declaration of war against France, however, had far wider implications than simply the English joining the Continental wars. The Habsburg-Valois conflict had now officially come to the British Isles, and it would be only a matter of time before Scotland also became involved, directly or indirectly, on behalf of the French. Scotland's inevitable participation was something that Marie de Guise had predicted with a great sense of foreboding when she learnt of the Duc de Guise's military expedition to assist Pope Paul IV against the Duke of Alva in Naples in January 1556/7. Foreseeing that this would lead to a breach of the truce of Vaucelles, Guise wrote to the Cardinal de Lorraine that, 'Je supplie et suppliray tout les Jours nostre seigneur ... quil luy plaisir enuoy dun paix, Ne doubtans luy que si jai lon dun ny nest la main, et qune si les choses un fois aromper du ceste de deca [France], Il est malaise que n'en ayons aussi nostre [Scotland] part'.[2]

War was the last thing Marie de Guise wanted at this particular time. Scotland was in no position to fight a war let alone defend itself against a foreign invasion.[3] This was primarily due to the Scots' reluctance to finance Guise's defensive policies. For many members of the Scottish political élite, the question of Mary Stewart's marriage

---

[1] Two French galleys reportedly convoyed Stafford and his expeditionary force from France to England. Noailles, however, knew nothing of this enterprise and recognised the damage it had done with respect to England's neutrality. LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, f.31; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, XIII, fos. 195^{v}-7; PRO, SP31/3/23, fos. 161-2, 172, 179; *APC*, VI, p.80; Loades, *Two Tudor Conspiracies*, pp. 151-75.

[2] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.7^{v}; *Papal Negotiations*, p.428.

[3] See AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 7-11, for Marie de Guise's comments to the Cardinal de Lorraine and Constable Montmorency on the substandard condition of Scotland's defences.

needed to be settled before they committed any more money for the defence of the realm on account of France's foreign policy.[1] As Guise would later learn, this was one reason why the Three Estates' rejected the proposed tax re-assessment scheme in May 1556. With the Habsburg-Valois truce now on the verge of collapse, the Scots' refusal to finance her defensive policies made the question of Franco-Scottish dynastic union a matter of political necessity and national security. Explaining this to the powers that be in France, however, was no easy matter. The only way she could account for Scotland's ill-preparedness for war and the substandard condition of its defences was to explain the Scots' position, but in order to do this, Guise had to broach the subject of dynastic union.

Raising the sensitive matter of marriage to the French King without seeming to do so from self-interested motives was a very delicate operation, so Guise first turned to her family in France for a more sympathetic audience. Referring to the Three Estates' rejection of the tax-reassessment scheme, the Queen Regent confided to the Cardinal de Lorraine that:

> ... aucuns m'ont dict cy lesdicts cy parlans que Je ne vous refer pour vouloir accelera et haster les choses, Mais pour vous faire cognoister les oppinions de ceste nation, Qui fin quils mectoys la charrue deuans les boeufs Et me trompoys de pense riens aspirer de deca si ... le mariage nestans accomply, Car Ils estents tousiours cy doubte soubz quil seigneur Ilz debuonts tomber.[2]

Guise conjectured that another factor contributing to the Scots' reluctance to finance her defensive policies was the reported ill health of Mary, Queen of Scots. Throughout the

---

[1] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 7-11.

[2] *Ibid*, XV, f.9[r]; *Papal Negotiations*, p.429. Marie de Guise does not elaborate on the identity of these Scots who wanted the marriage question settled.

summer and autumn of 1556, Mary had been afflicted by a string of fevers that the Queen Regent claimed 'a rendu beaucoup des choses doubteuse' in the minds of the Scots.[1] If she were married, such doubts would be irrelevant. The impetus behind Franco-Scottish dynastic union, therefore, came mainly from the Scottish political élite, whose desire to see their Queen married sprang from a greater desire for political stability in the extremely volatile arena of European dynastic politics. While it is true that for Scots with Protestant sympathies, the union of the French and Scottish Catholic crowns may have been seen as a direct threat to the reform movement in Scotland and grounds for opposition to the Valois-Stewart marriage, this was a domestic issue and not a dynastic one. The sources give no indication that there was any opposition to Guise's dynastic policies or, for that matter, that religion was a particular concern for the Queen Regent at this time.

The desire for political stability was also true for Marie de Guise, whose relationship with her magnates had reached an all time low by January 1556/7. For the very first time in her adoptive kingdom, Guise felt estranged from her subjects. 'Les esprits des hommes', she complained, 'ont este de tous desorte doppinioun et tellement cy suspends que Jay trouve eulz ausquilz jesparoys le plus, estes cy a que Jay desire les plus estranges que Je ne les avons Jamais venu, Non seulement depuis que Je ladictes commande, Mais depuis quil Je cognoy descosse'.[2] This feeling of political alienation was no doubt enhanced by the Three Estates' rejection of the tax reassessment scheme,

---

[1] Fraser, *Mary, Queen of Scots*, pp. 89-90; AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 9[r], 10[r]; *Papal Negotiations*, pp. 419-21, 429.

[2] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.9[r]; *Papal Negotiations*, p.430.

and gave new meaning to the random acts of violence that continued against the French soldiers serving on the Border, despite Parliament's act of June 1555 against those 'that rasis murmuris sclanders and seditioun betuix the liegis of this realme and the maist Christin Kingis lieges'.[1] But in Guise's opinion, the real cause of the discord was her determination to see justice take a straightforward course.[2] Her attempts to implement legal reform met with fierce opposition from the Scottish political community who, as we have already seen in Chapter V, claimed that she was really trying to replace their old laws with those of the French.[3] By January 1556/7, therefore, Guise's political position in Scotland had weakened considerably and, as a result, she was finding it increasingly difficult to impose her will and authority. 'Les grandes charges', she would lament, 'sont ayses aprandre, mais malaisees a s'y luy acquister vrais dieu'.[4]

Marie de Guise's growing sense of estrangement from her subjects indicates the extent to which the marriage of Mary, Queen of Scots was just as necessary for her own political stability as it was for Scotland's magnates. As long as the Franco-Scottish alliance remained in a state of limbo, the implementation of her defensive and legal policies would continue to be frustrated. The Franco-Scottish protectoral alliance had run its course and now needed to take on a more definite and concrete form that only dynastic union could bring about.

---

[1] PRO, SP 31/3/22, f.19; *APS*, II, pp. 499-500.

[2] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.9^{r}; *Papal Negotiations*, p.430.

[3] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 8^{r}, 9^{r-v}; *Papal Negotiations*, pp. 428, 430.

[4] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.8^{r}; *Papal Negotiations*, p.428.

Yet, at this stage, Marie de Guise was reluctant to broach the subject of dynastic union directly with Henri for fear that he 'pouvroit estimer que Je le disse pour mon affection particullier'.[1] While this was true to a certain extent, the nature of Henri's protectorate dictated that the decision to proceed with the marriage was ultimately his to make, and in order for this to happen, it was imperative that he consider the marriage to be politically expedient.[2] There was, for example, a faction opposed to the Valois-Stewart marriage at the French Court led by Constable Montmorency, the steadfast rival of 'les Guises'. He was of the opinion that the Queen of Scots should wed a French duke or prince instead of the Dauphin, so that she could return to Scotland with her husband 'to hald ther awen contre in gud obedience'.[3] As Sir James Melville of Halhill recounts, the basis of the Constable's argument was that 'when prencis ar absent, and far af fra ther awen, rewling ther contrees be lieutenantis, maist commonly the subiectis of sic contrees vses to rebell; quhilk gene the subiectis in Scotland did, it wald be hard and coistly to get them reducit'.[4] But in reality, Montmorency's opposition to the marriage had more to do with the extraordinary power and prestige it would give 'les Guises' at the French Court than with the prospect of civil unrest in Scotland and its financial ramifications.

---

[1] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.9[r]; *Papal Negotiations*, p.429.

[2] We have already seen in Chapter III how Henri, as 'Protector' of Scotland, made the decision as to when Mary Stewart came of age and who would govern the kingdom during her majority. These precedents, in addition to Guise's deference to Henri on the subject of dynastic union, suggest that he had the final say as to when the marriage of Mary and François would proceed.

[3] Melville, *Memoirs*, p.72.

[4] *Ibid*, p.72.

Countering the arguments of Montmorency were, as ever, the Duc de Guise and the Cardinal de Lorraine, who predictably extolled the advantages of dynastic union with Scotland. While their own dynastic ambition and the prestige of having their niece as the future Queen of France were, unquestionably, the prime motivating factors behind their support of the Valois-Stewart marriage, the Guise brothers were more subtle in their arguments to Henri. He would hear 'how it wald be baith honorable and proffitable to the crown of France, and that ther wald be revenus anough to mantean garnissons within the contree, to hald the subiectis vnder obedience; bigging ma citadelis, and hauyng the haill strenthes in ther handes'.[1] Like their sister, however, they had to tread carefully lest their support for the Valois-Stewart marriage be perceived as merely the self-promotion and aggrandisement of the house of Guise. While the Queen Regent could count on the support of her brothers in France when the time came, her domestic troubles dictated that she could not wait for Henri to make the first move. Rather, she had to take matters into her own hands and push things along discreetly within the Scottish political community - no mean feat, given her estrangement from the 'grandz seigneurs' who, she confessed, were 'plus malaysez a manier que Jamais'.[2]

In late February 1556/7, Marie de Guise summoned a Convention of her 'lordes lairdes and gentry' to meet at Stirling on 4 March ostensibly to gain their support for France in the Habsburg-Valois conflict.[3] Recognising that this was a highly contentious issue, Guise used the developing international situation to play on the Scots' fears of an

---

[1] Melville, *Memoirs*, p.72.

[2] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.8[r]; *Papal Negotiations*, p.428.

[3] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, fos. 314, 328.

English invasion that, she claimed, was inevitable given the nature of the Anglo-Imperial alliance. Guise's tactics proved successful. At a Parliament held in Edinburgh shortly after the Convention, the Three Estates promised that they would support the French King, but only if the English invaded Scotland.[1] Moreover, by highlighting the threat that Mary Tudor's marriage to Philip of Spain posed to Scotland's national security, a threat which was intensified by the substandard condition of the kingdom's defences, Guise had shrewdly and simultaneously increased the resolve of the Scots to see the conclusion of their own queen's marriage. So persuasive was she in her arguments that the Three Estates requested that either she, a special envoy, or a delegation of commissioners go to France in order to bring the matter to a 'bon fin'.[2] They even consented to raise a small tax to finance this diplomatic expedition.[3] Yet, despite the fact that the Scots had played directly into her hands, Guise was careful not to show her relief by immediately acceding to their requests. Instead, she coolly responded that she herself could not make the journey to France because Scotland would more than likely be at war with England this coming season, and as for a delegation of commissioners, she would have to think about it. In the meantime, she would write to Henri regarding these developments and seek his advice on the matter.[4]

---

[1] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, fos. 314, 328; AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.12^{r}.

[2] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, f.178^{v} and *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.12^{v}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.283 and *Relations*, I, pp. 293-4.

[3] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, f.178^{r}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 282-3 and *Relations*, I, pp. 293-4. In December 1557, a tax of £15,000 was levied in response to Henri's formal request that a delegation be sent to France in order to commence the marriage negotiations. *APS*, II, p.504; *RPC*, XIV, p.14.

[4] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, f.178^{v} and *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.12^{v}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.283 and *Relations*, I, pp. 293-4.

By her shrewd manipulation of events, Guise was finally in a position to raise the issue of dynastic union directly with Henri, without appearing to do so from self-interested motives. By assuming the role of messenger, she was conveying the wishes not of herself, but of the Scottish political élite. In her letter to Henri dated 29 March 1557,[1] Guise related how the *Scots*, seeing that they did not have the power to defend their kingdom and because the Queen of England was married to the King of Spain, had come to the conclusion that, 'Ilz ne pouuouns estre assez fortz sans auoir ung maister'.[2] The marriage of their 'mistress' to the Dauphin was crucial for the strength and surety of their realm and, in return for Henri's due consideration of the matter, the Three Estates had consented to support their 'auld ally' militarily in the event of an Anglo-French war. Of greater importance for the Queen Regent herself, was the Three Estates' declaration that she, 'se pourra faire servir s'il luy plaist soit a la guerre soit a la paix des subjects dudict Royaulme, ainsy que les Roys predecesseurs de la Royne sa fille avoient accoustumé, & que pour cet effect ils n'y espargneroient rien'.[3]

The ball was now in Henri's court as to when the Valois-Stewart marriage would proceed. All Marie de Guise could do was wait for word to come from France. The fact

---

[1] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 11^{v}-3^{r}. Letters of the same date were also written by Guise and d'Oisel to Montmorency and d'Acqs, informing them, and giving details of this Parliament. *Ibid*, XV, fos. 13^{v}-14 and *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, fos. 177-8; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 278-84 and *Relations*, I, pp. 290-5.

[2] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.12^{r}. By this, it is unclear as to whether 'ung maister' refers specifically to the Dauphin or is a more general reference to Henri, who, in all probability, would rule on behalf of his son as the 'Protector' of Scotland. However, the Scots' suggestion that 'ung maister' would reign superior to their mistress is of interest when considering Parliament's consent to grant the crown matrimonial to François in November 1558. Is this an early indication of the Scots' predisposition to do so and, if so, was this issue as really as contentious as many contemporary and modern historians have made it out to be? As we shall see, the sources do not reveal any substantial opposition to Marie de Guise's dynastic policies by Scotland's Protestants or otherwise.

[3] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, f.178^{v}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.283 and *Relations*, I, p.294.

that matters had come this far at all, however, demonstrates the sheer political acumen of the Queen Regent. At a time when she felt estranged from her nobles and was consequently being frustrated in her attempts to govern the kingdom, she was nevertheless able to manipulate the less than favourable international situation to her own advantage. Henri received assurances of Scottish military support in his conflict with Philip, while Guise received political backing for her dynastic policies and, more importantly, regained the support of her nobles for her administration - at least in matters of defence. While greatly lamented by the Queen Regent as a whole, the renewal of the Habsburg-Valois conflict enabled her to satisfy her own need, and that of the Scottish political community, for political security. For all parties concerned, this stability was inextricably associated with Franco-Scottish dynastic union and the marriage of Mary, Queen of Scots to the Dauphin.

Yet, when all was said and done, neither Marie de Guise nor the Scots wanted a war with England. Both hoped that the peace between the 'auld enemies' would prevail. War with Scotland was similarly the last thing Mary Tudor wanted while simultaneously engaged in a war with France, and she took diplomatic steps to prevent this from being the case. In its attempt to neutralise the Scots through diplomacy, however, the English government grossly underestimated the affect their proclamation of war against France would have on the Scots and, more importantly, the loyalty of the Scots to their 'auld ally'.

***

It was during a meeting of Border Commissioners in early June 1557 that the English government attempted to prevent Scotland's formal entry into the Habsburg-Valois

conflict and to ensure that the Anglo-Scottish peace would survive their hitherto unannounced declaration of war against France. Despite Marie de Guise's best efforts, the Borders had still not been reduced to a state of obedience. The endemic problems of lawlessness, violence and disorder still existed and continued to strain Anglo-Scottish relations to near breaking point. In January 1556/7, therefore, the Queen Regent commissioned Sir Robert Carnegy of Kinnaird to present Mary Tudor with a detailed list of Border complaints against the English on her behalf.[1] As a show of unity and force, Carnegy was to be accompanied by the newly appointed French ambassador in London, François de Noailles, bishop d'Acqs,[2] something which, d'Oisel noted, the English did not like to see - the French and Scots together.[3] The grievances they presented to Mary and her council in April 1557, mainly concerned the refusal of English Border officials, especially Lords Dacre and Wharton, to hand over certain Scottish fugitives, to provide redress for various crimes committed against the Scots and to dispense justice in general. A case in point was Richard Norton, Captain of Norham. He had still not paid the £20 fine levied against him in the 'Indenture' of 1553 for his illegal occupation of the Tweed.[4] The most serious of Guise's charges, however,

---

[1] *APC*, VI, p.80. The arrangements for Carnegy's diplomatic mission were finalised in March. AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.14^{v} and *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, fos. 146-7, 177-8, 194; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 278-82 and *Relations*, I, pp. 289-92; LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, f.17; *Foedera*, XV, pp. 457-8. For copies of Carnegy's instructions, see AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 665-8 and *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 15-20.

[2] Antoine de Noailles wrote to Marie de Guise on 31 October 1556 to inform her that his brother, François, would be replacing him as ambassador. AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, f.63^{v}.

[3] *Ibid*, XIII, f.178^{r}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 281-2 and *Relations*, I, pp. 292-3.

[4] On 16 December 1556, Richard Norton was summoned before the English Council and 'commaunded againe to cause indelaied restitucion to be made of the xx^{li} by the Commissioners in the Borders to paye unto the Scottes, toke upon him to cause the same to be doone out of hand, so as no further matter of complaynte shulde be made thereof hensfourthe'. *APC*, VI, p.30.

concerned the illegal activities of the Grahams in the West March. Contrary to the dictates of Border Law, none of that surname had been handed over to the Scottish authorities for their numerous acts of pillaging, spoliation, murder and larceny committed during their devastating and frequent incursions into Scotland. Moreover, Wharton and Dacres' refusal to administer and execute justice against them led Marie de Guise to believe that they were deliberately encouraging and supporting the Grahams in their criminal activities against the Scots – the most notable example of which was Bothwell's military expedition to the Western Border in July 1556. To all intents and purposes, the conduct of the Grahams and the English Wardens resembled a breach of the peace, which, Guise added, would not be the case if Mary and Philip maintained order on the Border. The Queen Regent, therefore, demanded redress and reparation from the English government and warned that she did not know for how much longer she could contain her subjects to tolerate such outrageous and injurious acts.[1]

In response to these charges, the English government consented to a meeting of Border Commissioners and, on 25 May 1557, representatives from both England and Scotland were appointed to meet at Carlisle.[2] Scotland was to be represented by Carnegy, Cassillis, the Bishop of Orkney and later, by James Makgill of Nether Rankeillour, while the Earl of Westmorland, the Bishop of Durham, Robert Hyndman, Chancellor of the Bishopric, and Dr Thomas Martin, President of the Chancery, constituted the English delegation. For the English, this meeting had far greater significance than the settling of Border grievances. Carnegy's diplomatic mission had

---

[1] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, IX, fos. 665-8 and *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 15-20.

[2] *Foedera*, XV, pp. 464-5; PRO, SP51/8/12.

coincided with Thomas Stafford's invasion and capture of Scarborough Castle, which proved to be the catalyst for England's declaration of war against France. This Border Commission, therefore, provided the English government with an ideal opportunity to try and prevent Scotland from entering a conflict they themselves were just about to enter. As we have seen, Border disputes continually threatened to jeopardise the already precarious Anglo-Scottish peace, and one possible way of ensuring that the amity between the 'auld enemies' was maintained was the reparation of 'attemptates' committed against the Scots. In this, however, the English government had imposed clearly defined parameters and was not willing to satisfy all of Marie de Guise's demands outright. Their continued refusal to hand any of the Grahams over to the Scottish authorities as pledges, for example, proved to be a point of contention that would eventually break up the Border Commission in July 1557.

As in 1550, the fear of losing the Grahams as allies was the principal reason for the English government's obstinacy.[1] If they complied and handed the Grahams over as security for compensation, there was the possibility that the Graham clan would not be able to pay for their release. The only option that would then be left open to them would be to renounce their affiliation with England and side with the Scots.[2] As effective agents of the English crown, this scenario was completely unacceptable. The Scots, however, would not settle for anything less. When it became clear that no headway was to be made on this matter, the English government took the extraordinary step of offering to pay the damages of approximately £3000 directly out of the

[1] Chapter II, pp. 61-3.

[2] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3194, fos. 336-40.

Exchequer.[1] This gesture alone signifies the extent to which the English government was determined to maintain peaceful relations with the Scots in order secure their neutrality in the Habsburg-Valois conflict. Yet, even this offer proved unsatisfactory to the Scots, who were determined to have the matter settled on their own terms and according to the dictates of Border Law.

The Scots' resolve may be explained by the fact that, during these proceedings, England had formally declared war against France on 7 June 1557.[2] From the outset, the English Commissioners were acutely sensitive to the mood of the Scots - especially after their declaration of war had been proclaimed. On 11 June, Thomas Martin filed a report to Mary Tudor describing the reaction of each of the Scottish Commissioners to the news.[3] Although they were all appalled by England's breach with France, Martin nevertheless reported that each was of the opinion that this would not affect the Anglo-Scottish peace. Robert Reid, for example, wished only for 'equal restitution on both parts to preserve amity, nothwithstanding the French', while James Makgill saw no reason to break with the English on account of the French, because 'thEmperours warres with the French empeacheth not owre league and amytie with thEmperour'.[4] But it is Cassillis' response that is, perhaps, most famous. In response to Westmorland's assumption that 'my lord, I thinke hit but foly for us to treate now togyther, we havinge

---

[1] Estimates of the compensation due to the Scots ranged from £907 to £3000. LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, f.36 and 3194, f.306.

[2] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, fos. 225-7. See also *ibid*, XIII, fos. 232^{v}-6^{v}, for Henri's letter of acknowledgement, and fos. 224-5, for a copy of the letter Mary Tudor circulated around England publicising the war against France.

[3] *CSP Scot.*, I, 416, pp. 198-9.

[4] *Ibid*, I, 416, p.198.

broken with France, and ye beinge French for your lyves,' Cassillis stated that 'I am no more French then ye ar a Spanyard', and then proceeded to divulge the movements of French troops in Scotland.[1] While Cassillis' anti-French comments are not surprising in themselves, it would be foolish to conclude that either he or the rest of the Scottish Commissioners were being totally honest with their English counterparts. The movements of the French along the Border had never been any secret in England, and the eagerness with which Cassillis was willing to disclose this information seems to be just a little too deliberate, so as to suggest an 'official' leak or, as Boscher contends, a deliberate ruse to allay English suspicions of Scottish intentions.[2]

Even more suggestive are Sir Robert Carnegy's comments upon hearing of Mary Tudor's 'sincere meaning for continuance of the league with Scotland'.[3] While he gave 'his faith of a Christian, and honour of a Scottish knight, that his mistress meant the like', he then added the stipulation, 'As farre as we yet ken'.[4] Even the author of this report had his suspicions as to the Scots' real intentions. Having heard from Cassillis, 'Doe yowe my lordes, what yowre commissions directe ye to, and so wyll we',[5] Martin took the opportunity to study the Scots' commission. On doing so, he found what he hoped was a clerical error. Reading, '*Damus potestatem nostris commissariis audiendi, tractandi, concordandi, concludendi, et finaliter dissidendi*', Martin realised that if this were indeed correct, no agreement would ever be reached because the Scots had not

---

[1] *CSP Scot.*, I, 416, p.198.

[2] Boscher, 'English provincial government', pp. 260-1; Vertot, *Ambassades*, IV, pp. 317-8.

[3] *CSP Scot.*, I, 416, p.198.

[4] *Ibid*, I, 416, pp. 198-9.

[5] *Ibid*, I, 416, p.199.

been commissioned to do so.[1] The Scottish Commissioners had not been instructed to settle [*finaliter decidere*], but rather, to disagree [*finaliter dissidere*].[2] There was also some suspicion that the Scottish Commissioners were employing delaying tactics in order to give Marie de Guise more time to prepare for war against England. This was a particular fear of Westmorland, who believed that war with Scotland was imminent. The Scottish Commissioners' insistence that redress be given for crimes not contained within their commission led Westmorland to 'verely beleve, that they mynd no trueth but to delay and tasle the tyme with us unto they be prepared and redy (if they may) uppon a sudden to work some displeasour unto this realme'.[3] The English Council was inclined to agree, and saw the introduction of new business, especially that which could have been handled by the Wardens themselves, as a sign of the Scots' ill-will: '... for if there had byn nowe other things ment by the appointing of the commissioners but the rigoure and extremitie of the lawe then it had byn in vayne to send expresse personages to the borders for the onely doings of that which might well enough have byn don by the wardens'.[4]

The suspicion that the Scots were really preparing for war put a new slant on the English government's offer to compensate the Scots with cash from the Treasury. Dacre, for one, regarded this as a very bad idea given that, in his opinion, 'shortly it will growe to open warr'. The considerable amount of money owing to the Scots for

---

[1] *CSP Scot.*, I, 416, p.199.

[2] *Ibid*, I, 416, p.199.

[3] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, f.44; *CSP Scot.*, I, 417, p.199.

[4] PRO, SP51/1/26, 27.

damages, he argued, would enable them to 'get all they might, and then be at libertie to spye their tyme and to make warres uppon us with our owen money'.[1] There was the danger that, in trying to maintain the peace by offering financial restitution, the English would be inadvertently financing the Scottish war effort against them. While the Scottish Commissioners' refusal to accept this method of payment ruled out such a possibility, it also meant that a settlement was not going to be reached during this particular Border Commission. On 13 July, therefore, the Commissioners agreed to disband, depart in peace as they had come, and reconvene on 15 September 1557.[2] As a gesture of their mutual goodwill, it was further decided to issue a joint declaration of peace. So, on 17 July, 'standing together ... at the highe crosse at Carlisle', the Commissioners for both England and Scotland 'made open proclamation for peace, ... and the like ... sent to the wardens of both realms'.[3] As events would soon transpire, Marie de Guise had no intention of enforcing the Commissioners' instructions to the Wardens of the Marches, to detain the principal 'owtrydars' of both realms in order to prevent future raids and incursions.

While the Scots were eager to declare publicly their commitment to the Anglo-Scottish peace and give the appearance that they 'covet peace [rather] then warr', their actions following the break up of the Border Commission reveal their true feelings about England's declaration of war against France.[4] Almost immediately after its

---

[1] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, f.36.

[2] *CSP Scot.*, I, 419, pp. 200-1; LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, f.46.

[3] *CSP Scot.*, I, 421, pp. 201-2.

[4] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, fos. 34^{v}; 40, 46, 49.

disbandment, the Scots waged an 'unofficial' war against England. Although they suspected that the Scots would engage in some sort of hostile activity, the English government was nevertheless unsure as to what form it would take; namely, '... if they denounce warr woll invade with an army or not, and that it may bee that they woll rather onely make incursions than otherwise'.[1] It did not take long for them to realise that the Scots' chosen means of expression, at least initially, was the launch of small-scale raids across the Border.

Conducted over a three-month period and overseen by Marie de Guise stationed at Dunbar, these guerrilla like raids were led by such notables as d'Oisel, Maxwell, Huntly (lieutenant of the Borders) and other members of the Scottish nobility, and to devastating effect.[2] On 4 August, Shrewsbury reported that, 'The Scots nightly And dayly mayketh incursions And prepareth so to doo to dystroye the howses And cornes And thereby leave fortresses Towars and howses distytut. Ther haith ben great damaige done whereby the bordours is mych wasted'.[3] As Guise had intended, these raids were proving to be a 'grette annoyance' to the English.[4] But perhaps the most devastating of the raids in the summer of 1557 was the assault against Ford Castle. At five in the morning on 5 August, Lords James and Robert Stewart, Lord Home and a complement of Scottish soldiers invaded the East March. Armed with certain pieces of ordnance, they 'attempted to wynne the castell of forde, and ... byrnt syndrie townes there aboute

---

[1] PRO, SP15/8/17.

[2] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, fos. 42, 52, 103, 115; Lesley, *History*, p.260.

[3] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, f.66. Reports that the Scots were making 'inrodes almost nyghtly and doth great Annoyaunce' were still being sent in September 1557. See, for example, *ibid*, 3195, f.177^{v}.

[4] *Ibid*, 3195, fos. 115, 253.

called the ten townes of glendale'. Cattle was seized and countless inhabitants either slain or taken hostage before the Scottish incursionary force retreated back into Scotland.[1]

While these raids were worries in themselves, the English government became seriously alarmed when reports that Marie de Guise was planning a full-scale military invasion of Northumberland began to file in. Throughout August and September, details of an extensive military assault on Wark and Norham were received with increasing concern.[2] This was particularly true with respect to the news that the Queen Regent had assembled a great Scottish army to carry out the enterprise. In addition to the 3,000 hackbutters that had been summoned from the burghs, Guise had also called a general muster of all men between the ages of 16 and 60 to assemble at Edinburgh provisioned with enough victuals to last 40 days.[3] The Scottish army was to be commanded by Châtelherault as Lieutenant-General, and supported by the 'holle nobylytie of Scotland', with Argyll, Cassillis, Morton and Huntly (who helped plan the siege) all playing prominent roles alongside d'Oisel and his contingent of French troops.[4] But the assembly of a Scottish army on the Anglo-Scottish Border was not the only cause for concern. Another factor that intensified the overall threat Scotland posed to England was the refortification of Eyemouth.

---

[1] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, fos. 72, 74, 115.

[2] *Ibid*, 3195, fos. 98, 99, 150-1, 153, 162, 177, 179, 182, 189, 197, 200, 207, 214.

[3] *Ibid*, 3195, fos. 98, 99, 153, 197.

[4] *Ibid*, 3195, fos. 99, 197; Lesley, *History*, p.260. As recommended by Mary, Queen of Scots, Châtelherault was appointed the Lieutenant-General of Scotland upon resigning the regency in April 1554. He was discharged from this office on 25 October 1557. Chapter III, p.124; NLS, Adv.MSS, f.1; *RPC*, XIV, p.15.

Dismantled in accordance with the terms of the treaty of Norham, Marie de Guise ordered the reconstruction of Eyemouth in direct response to England's declaration of war against France. Its strategic location as a defensive check to, and a potential launch pad for, military campaigns against England's principal Border stronghold at Berwick were no doubt major considerations in the Queen Regent's decision to resurrect Eyemouth. But of more immediate and practical value, especially in light of the planned siege of Wark and Norham, was Eyemouth's capacity to serve as an arsenal of ordnance and munition. As Lord Herries noted in his *Historical Memoires*, '... it was thought necessar to build a fort at Aiimouth, which might both stop these incursions of the Engish and be a strength to keep cannon and munition in that pairt of the cuntrie; for it was trublesome upon everie occasion to draw cannon and other necesars from Edinburgh'.[1] For defensive and offensive purposes, therefore, Eyemouth was deemed to be of paramount importance for Scotland's challenge to the Anglo-Imperial threat emanating from England.

The actual refortification of Eyemouth was essentially a French endeavour. French soldiers under the supervision of d'Oisel, who were also garrisoned there, carried out most of the work. While the most intensive phase of its reconstruction and

[1] John Maxwell, lord Herries, *The Historical Memoires of the Reign of Mary Queen of Scots and a portion of the Reign of King James the Sixth* (Abbotsford Club, 1836), p.30. William Maitland of Lethington, conversely, regarded this decision in a far more cynical light: '... the Quein Regent be advyse of the Frenchemen and uthers of the Councill ... did resolue to mak warre against Ingland and to induce or force the nobilitie and Cuntrie verye unwilling thai resolvit to mak ane fort neir to Heymouthe on the seysyde in the Mers and in 6 myles to Berwik vnder colour to be a fronteire to the cuntrie for safetie thairof in tyme of warre'. W.S. Fitch (ed.), *Maitland's Narrative of the Principal Acts of the Regency during the minority ... of Mary, Queen of Scotland* (Ipswich, 1842), p.9. See also Merriman, 'The Forts of Eyemouth', pp. 152-3.

fortification occurred during the Anglo-Scottish truce in 1558,[1] work had nevertheless advanced enough in 1557 for Marie de Guise to declare in August that 'she well uyset Aymowth shortly'.[2] English reports later confirmed that cannon, demi-cannon and other great pieces of ordnance intended for the assault against Wark and Norham, were indeed being stored at Eyemouth.[3]

Yet, despite these extensive preparations and the steady stream of intelligence confirming that an invasion of England was imminent, no such event ever occurred, prompting Shrewsbury to complain that the Scots 'have dyvers tymes this yeare illudyd us with their apperences of settforwerds'.[4] By mid-October, the military campaign was finally set into motion. The Scottish army advanced to the Border and assembled at Kelso, where they were joined by d'Oisel and the French troops and ordnance he brought with him from Eyemouth, in full readiness to cross the River Tweed and launch the assault against Wark.[5] Accompanied by Marie de Guise, who decided to oversee the military campaign from the safety of Home Castle just a few miles north of Kelso, the Franco-Scottish army heard rousing words of encouragement from their Queen Regent.[6] Words, however, were not enough to see the siege of Wark become a reality. On 18 October, Châtelherault and other members of the Scottish nobility took the sudden and

---

[1] *TA*, X, pp. 331, 334, 341, 344, 345, 353, 360, 368, 377, 387, 394, 401, 405, 409, 415, 418, 421-31; SRO, E34/21/5.

[2] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, f.66^{r}. See also Astier's accounts for the refortification of Eyemouth (22 July - 18 December 1557) in SRO, E34/21/4.

[3] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, f.99.

[4] *Ibid*, 3195, fos. 105^{v}, 153, 200, 214, 220, 228, 230.

[5] *Ibid*, 3195, f.238; Knox, *History*, I, pp. 124-5 and *Works*, I, p.255.

[6] Knox, *History*, I, p.125 and *Works*, I, p.255; Pitscottie, *Historie*, II, pp. 119-20.

unilateral decision to disband the army and abort the siege of Wark even before it had begun.[1] Directly contravening the order and authority of Marie de Guise, the decision of Châtelherault *et al* not to invade England, was ostensibly made to save the honour of Scotland. Foul weather conditions, being 'most contagious [for] the tyme of the yere', had weakened the resolve of the army and had resulted in many of the men 'Rynnyng away, dying and in mysery'.[2] This, in addition to the preparedness of the English to resist the Scots, rendered such an invasion unwise.[3]

The steady leak of information detailing Guise's planned assault of Wark and Norham had given the English ample time to set up their defences accordingly. To their detriment, the Scots had earlier misconstrued the absence of an English army on the Border as an encouraging sign of weakness.[4] They soon discovered that, in fact, a force of 4,000 men had arrived at Newcastle on 2 October 1557. This, in addition to the garrisons stationed at Wark, Norham and Berwick and the 600 horse and 400 foot which had also been levied for the occasion, meant that the English were not only well fortified, but amply prepared to meet any threat emanating from Scotland. The strength of England's Border defences was further enhanced by the presence of a sizeable naval force along the eastern seaboard, the mere sight of which was reported to have caused even more desertions from the Scottish army, as men returned home to protect their

---

[1] BL, Tablot MSS.3195, fos. 231, 248, 251-2, 253; Lesley, *History*, p.260; Knox, *History*, I, p.125 and *Works*, I, pp. 255-6; Pitscottie, *Historie*, II, pp. 119-20; *Diurnal of Occurents*, p.267.

[2] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, fos. 248, 253, 258.

[3] *Ibid*, 3195, f.258.

[4] Shrewsbury received the order from the English Council that, 'Ye shall not nede to make any full assemblie of the armie oneless they sholde go abowte with theyr mayne power to invade the realme'. *Ibid*, 3195, fos. 153, 184.

lands.[1] Even without an 'English army', therefore, England's Border defences were formidable - a fact that Shrewsbury had thought could be enough of a deterrent to avert a large-scale invasion at the hands of the Scots: 'it may now come to passe, that consyderynge the countenans of our force and preparacon, they may now chaunge ther purpose, to lye at the defence of ther owen contrey, then, otherwyse to invade till the light of the mone by wastyd'.[2]

But bad weather and the strength of England's defences may not have been the only contributing factors to the Scottish nobility's decision to abandon the siege of Wark. Events on the Continent may also have played a part. The summer of 1557 was not a particularly successful period in Henri's conflict with Philip. In August, Emmanuel-Philibert, the exiled duke of Savoy, led a successful Spanish invasion of France's northern frontier that culminated in the fall and Imperial occupation of Saint-Quentin.[3] Montmorency's military expedition to relieve the town was, in short, disastrous on both a personal and national scale. Despite his efforts, Saint-Quentin remained in Imperial hands, and after sustaining a heavy loss of 3,000 French troops, an additional 7,000 were taken prisoner - Montmorency himself being captured on 10 August 1557.[4] Henri's losing battle against Philip and, in particular, the disaster at Saint-Quentin seemed to have a degenerative effect on Scottish morale and led some

---

[1] Boscher, 'English provincial government', pp. 274-6; LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, f.231.

[2] *Ibid*, 3195, f.228.

[3] For more on the siege of Saint-Quentin, see Rodríguez-Salgado, *The Changing Face of Empire*, pp. 176-9; Potter, 'The Duc de Guise and the Fall of Calais', *EHR*, ccclxxxviii (1983), pp. 486-8; Baumgartner, *Henry II*, p.202; C.S.L. Davies, 'England and the French War, 1557-9' in J. Loach & R. Tittler (eds.), *The Mid-Tudor Polity, c.1540-1560* (London, 1980), pp. 165-6; Bouillé, *Histoire des Ducs de Guise*, I, pp. 397-401.

[4] Davies, 'England and the French War', p.165.

Scots to question their participation in France's war with England. As ever, English observers were keen to pick up on this seemingly low ebb in Franco-Scottish relations and comment on the dissension that was apparently growing within the Scottish Court. On 18 September, for example, Thomas Wharton reported that:

> ... the Scotts myche grudgeth against this warr ocasioned by the french And saith that there ar Sondrie noble men in Scotland who wold haue peace with this realme ... they are Discontented with the greate vyctories the Kings Majesty [Philip] hath had over the frenche And that the Scotts do not trust the fayire promises of the french nor in their Assystaunce which [the] Scotts loked for.[1]

Discontent had also arisen, allegedly, over a disagreement as to the target of invasion. D'Oisel, it was reported, 'movet to Assaylle barwyk', but the Scots prevailed in their insistence that the targets remain Wark and Norham with devastation to the surrounding countryside.[2] Naturally, the English saw this as an ideal opportunity to exacerbate the situation and foster discord between the Scots and Marie de Guise. Shrewsbury, for one, suggested that 'such practyse myght have ben used and with money as at the least a dessention shold have bene sowne amongst them'.[3]

Some caution is necessary when considering these English observations. It is only natural to presume that the Scottish nobility would have some say in the logistics of a military exercise they were leading, and that in such discussions opposing or conflicting viewpoints should be expressed. Moreover, the fact that the Scottish army did advance to Kelso, ostensibly with every intention of carrying out the siege of Wark, suggests that some sort of consensus had been reached and that the final decision not to

---

[1] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, fos. 177[r]. See also his report of 23 September, *ibid*, 3195, f.189.

[2] *Ibid*, 3195, f.177[r].

[3] *Ibid*, 3195, f.189.

invade was, as Châtelherault implied, simply to avoid a humiliating defeat at the hands of the English. It should also be remembered that, at the outbreak of the Habsburg-Valois conflict in early 1556/7, the Scots had assured Marie de Guise that they would support Henri militarily in the event of an Anglo-French war, but only if they suffered an invasion at the hands of the English.[1] In this respect, their decision not to embark on a full-scale military campaign, complete with a 'national' army furnished with great pieces of ordnance, was consistent with their previous position. But, as we have just seen, the Scots were more than willing to make small-scale incursions to express their displeasure, and even hostility at England's declaration of war against France. Nevertheless, the fact that reports of internal dissension and the Scots decision to abandon the siege of Wark were contemporaneous with the fall of Saint-Quentin does suggest that Scottish support for France in the Habsburg-Valois conflict ultimately depended on whether Henri was winning or losing. The same cannot be said, however, for their support of Marie de Guise. Contrary to the received view of contemporary and modern historians, such as Knox, Lesley, Pitscottie, Tytler, Marshall and Donaldson, the Scottish nobility's decision to abandon the siege of Wark did not mean they were abandoning either their Queen Regent or the war effort against England.[2]

Marie de Guise was, understandably, shocked and angered by the news that her magnates had unilaterally decided to act against her wishes. When Châtelherault informed Guise of what he and the others had done, she 'raged and repreived them of

---

[1] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.12[r].

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 255-6 and *History*, I, p.125; Lesley, *History*, pp. 260-1; Pitscottie, *Historie*, II, pp. 119-20; Tytler, *History of Scotland*, IV, pp. 24-5; Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, pp. 214-5; Donaldson, *James V-James VII*, p.88.

theire promysses which was to Invade and anoy England. Theyre determynacione to departe and the consideracione they told hir and therupone arguments grew great betwene them wherwith she sorrowed and wepp openly'.[1] For his part, d'Oisel, 'in great hevynes and with high woords ... wisshed hymself in Fraunce'.[2] Châtelherault, however, had not acted in accordance with the wishes of all the Scottish nobles. Huntly, for one, shared Guise and d'Oisel's feelings of condemnation. According to English sources, the others were 'so offended with hym and said that he shuld have no rule of their doings and restrayned his Libertie for a day', and apparently 'axed playnely whatever he wolde be a Skottsman or a Frensheman'.[3] Nevertheless, the actions of her nobles had left Guise without an army and she had no choice but to order that the 'siege of the castell of Werk be left', promptly discharging Châtelherault from his commission in the process.[4]

But a fact that most historians have ignored is that the immediate aftermath of the Scottish army's disbandment did not witness the complete disappearance of Scottish forces from the Border, or an end to Scotland's 'unofficial' war against England.[5] After

---

[1] 20 October 1557, LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, f.253.

[2] *Ibid*, 3195, f.253. In his commentary, Knox writes that the Scots refusal to invade England 'putt ane effray in Monsieur Dosell his breathe, and kendilled such a fyre in the Quein Regentis stomak, as was nott weall slockened till hir braith failled'. Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 255-6 and *History*, I, p.125.

[3] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, fos. 248, 253.

[4] *RPC*, XIV, p.14; Lesley, *History*, p.261. D'Oisel was still determined to go ahead with the attack and, on 27 October, led his French troops across the Tweed with a few pieces of ordnance. Losing two men and eight horse to drowning in the process, all d'Oisel managed to achieve was a small and insignificant skirmish at Wark. According to English intelligence, d'Oisel felt so threatened upon returning to Scotland that he needed a bodyguard of 100 soldiers to ensure his personal safety. It was also alleged that d'Oisel was similarly concerned for Marie de Guise's safety, but there is no evidence to substantiate this claim. LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, fos. 248, 253, 265; Boscher, 'English provincial government', p.275.

[5] War was never formally declared between the 'auld enemies', and all Knox writes to indicate that the Scots still engaged in warlike activity against the English after the siege of Wark had been abandoned was, 'Butt yitt warre continewed'. Knox, *Works*, I, p.256 and *History*, I, p.125.

leaving Kelso, Châtelherault proceeded to Jedburgh with an unidentified chosen few and placed garrisons along the Border, adopting what was primarily a defensive position against the English.[1] Given the strength of England's defences and the strong military presence on the Border, this was not an unwise position for the Scots to adopt. The Scottish nobility's abandonment of the siege of Wark, therefore, did not automatically mean that Guise's defensive policies would also be abandoned. Châtelherault had assured the Queen Regent in no uncertain terms that despite their refusal to launch a full-scale attack against the English, they would 'devise [how] to furnyshe their fronters for this wynter'.[2] After this had been done, Châtelherault returned to the Borders to implement their resolutions, while others, such as Argyll and his 'company of Yrish men', returned to their own 'cuntries'.[3] But of even greater importance was the fact that Marie de Guise's offensive policies had not been abandoned in their entirety either. The Franco-Scottish force that was maintained on the Border, most notably at Kelso and Eyemouth, continued, as before, to conduct guerrilla like raids into England and to devastating effect.[4]

Both Northumberland and Shrewsbury were deeply concerned at the sustained threat to English national security. Northumberland sent urgent and repeated requests for reinforcements because the Scots had not only 'kept there own frontiers plenished to the uttermost but have destroyed and laid waste agreate parte of the borders of this

---

[1] LPL, Talbot MSS, 3195, f.253.

[2] *Ibid*, 3195, f.248.

[3] *Ibid*, 3195, fos. 231, 253, 248; Lesley, *History*, pp. 260-1.

[4] *Ibid*, I, p.261.

realme.'[1] For Shrewsbury, the only solution to this Scottish problem was for the Scots '... to be scourged with armyes or with great garysons for frontier war or both'.[2] So, while the Scots were specifically unwilling to carry out the assault on Wark and Norham, they did not withdraw altogether their general support for the Queen Regent's offensive policies. Rather, they continued to make incursions into England until an Anglo-Scottish truce was negotiated on 14 January 1557/8.[3]

As with Marie de Guise, there is no evidence to suggest that the Scots' refusal to invade England on 18 October 1557 was a statement against the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance. If anything, it served to highlight the importance and the need for the marriage of Mary, Queen of Scots to be concluded once and for all. One has to wonder whether such an event would have occurred if Scotland and France had been united dynastically, and the order to invade had come directly from their king and master. Until the Franco-Scottish alliance was set on a more secure footing through dynastic union, the implementation of Franco-centric policies in Scotland would continue to be frustrated, while the political stability of both Marie de Guise and the Scottish political community at large would continue to be undermined and their working relationship

---

[1] PRO, SP15/8/41.

[2] *Ibid*, SP15/8/41, 52, 52i. For a discussion of England's Border defences at this time, see Boscher, 'English provincial government', pp. 276-7.

[3] This was the first of many temporary peace agreements between the 'auld enemies', the negotiations for which cannot be dealt with effectively or comprehensively in this thesis. Suffice to say, the first truce was negotiated by Lord Home, the Earl of Northumberland and Sir Henry Percy on 14 January 1557/8 and was contracted to last for just 12 days. In February, the peace was extended to 15 March 1557/8 and, on 6 March, Bothwell and Northumberland contracted another truce to last two months. Fighting resumed in April and cut this last agreement short. See *CSP Scot.*, I, 422, 423, 426, 428, 429, 433, 434, pp. 202, 203-4, 204-5; *CSP Foreign, 1553-1558*, 665, pp. 335-6; *HMC Twelfth Report*, Appendix viii, pp. 183-4; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 285-91 and *Relations*, I, pp. 296-300, *TA*, X, pp. 331, 337, 420; *APC*, VI, p.275; and Boscher, 'English provincial government', pp. 296-301 for references concerning these truce negotiations and compacts.

counter-productive. Ironically, the disaster at Saint-Quentin sparked a chain of events in France that would bind the 'auld allies' closer and tighter than they had been in years. Montmorency's imprisonment marked the ascendancy of 'les Guises' at the French Court and, with it, a general desire to see the Valois-Stewart marriage formally concluded.

***

The Imperial occupation of France's northern frontier forced Henri to take prompt and drastic action. His immediate response was to recall the Duc de Guise from Italy and make him the 'lieutenant-général du roi'.[1] As such, the Duc was invested with extraordinary military and diplomatic powers, enjoying similar authority to the 'Constable of France', though without the title.[2] Together with the Cardinal de Lorraine, who enjoyed similar powers in the realm of administration, the Guise brothers now reigned supreme at the French Court and exercised almost total control in all matters of state.[3] Their prestige at Court and, more importantly, their influence over Henri gave 'les Guises' the perfect platform from which to promote their dynastic ambitions and advance the Valois-Stewart marriage without fear of opposition or intrigue from Montmorency. But even in captivity, Montmorency still managed to pose a potential threat to Guise dynastic ambition. In December 1557, he had tried to throw a spanner in the works by suggesting that the Dauphin marry Philip's sister, and Henri's daughter, Elisabeth, marry Philip's son, Carlos.[4] But by this time, Henri had already

---

[1] Michaud et Poujolat, *Mémoires-Journaux*, pp. 387-90.

[2] *Ibid*, pp. 387-90; Bouillé, *Les Ducs de Guise*, pp. 412-3; Baumgartner, *Henry II*, p.202.

[3] Potter, 'The Duc de Guise', pp. 486-7.

[4] Baumgartner, *Henry II*, p.207.

sent letters to the Three Estates acceding to their previous request that a delegation of commissioners be sent to France for the 'accompleishment' of the marriage of Mary, Queen of Scots to the Dauphin.[1]

While the influence of 'les Guises' cannot be dismissed as a motivating factor behind Henri's decision to proceed with the marriage, events in Scotland arguably had a more immediate impact. The timing of his decision to send 'special lettres and writingis direct vnto the ... thre estatis' on 29 October 1557, followed in the wake of the Scots' abandonment of the siege of Wark.[2] Significant as this was in its own right, the Scots' refusal to carry out the Queen Regent's orders against the English assumed even greater significance given that the English had assisted their Imperial allies in the capture of Saint-Quentin, Le Câtelet and Ham.[3] Control over Scottish foreign policy and, in particular, the obedience of the Scots in carrying out this policy was imperative, now even more so that a major assault on Calais was being planned for the winter of 1557/8.[4] If the Calais expedition was successful and France recaptured the last English held territory on the Continent, Scotland would then become England's primary target against the French. In such an event, Scottish cooperation and their military assistance

---

[1] *APS*, II, p.504; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, f.178^{v} and *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.12^{v}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.283 and *Relations*, I, p. 294.

[2] *APS*, II, p.504.

[3] Davies, 'England and the French War', pp. 165-6; Potter, 'The Duc de Guise', pp. 487-8; Rodriguez-Salgado, *The Changing Face of Empire*, pp. 176-9. Although they missed the Duke of Savoy's initial assault on Saint-Quentin on 10 August, the Earl of Pembroke's 2000 English troops did participate in the battle that led to fall of Saint-Quentin on 27 August. They remained in France to aid their Imperial allies in the subsequent capture and occupation of Le Câtelet and Ham, and stayed until 27 November 1557, when the Anglo-Imperial troops retreated from France's northern frontier.

[4] See Potter, 'The Duc de Guise', pp. 481-512; Davies, 'England and the French War,', pp. 168-78; and Bouillé, *Les Ducs de Guise*, I, pp. 420-30, for detailed analyses and discussions on the siege and recapture of Calais.

would be essential. As it happened, France's counter-attack on Calais was a resounding victory for France and for the commander of the campaign, the Duc de Guise. Launching his assault on 1 January 1557/8, Marie de Guise's brother easily took Rysbank and Newnham Bridge before capturing Calais castle just one week after the campaign had begun. By the end of the month, the Duc had also managed to take Guisnes and Ham, the remaining two fortresses in the Calais Pale.

Finally, one must not forget the role that Henri's imperial ambitions in the British Isles played in his decision to proceed with the Valois-Stewart marriage. Mary Tudor had still not produced an heir and, at forty-one, her chances of doing so were remote at best. Although the English Queen had reluctantly named her Protestant half-sister, Elizabeth, as her successor, there was the possibility that she could be kept off the throne on account of her illegitimacy. According to the dictates of canon law, Elizabeth was a bastard and, therefore, ineligible to succeed her half-sister as Queen. The next legitimate and Catholic claimant to the English throne was Mary Stewart, whose marriage to the Dauphin would provide for the creation of a Franco-British Empire.

While these considerations may have prompted Henri to push for the marriage when he did, there was still the possibility that, given the events of the past few months, the Scots no longer wished to undergo dynastic union with France. Henri need not have worried, for the opposite was true. The marriage of Mary, Queen of Scots was still seen as the precondition of political stability. The Habsburg-Valois conflict and, in particular, the Anglo-French war served only to accentuate this need in the eyes of the Scots. On 14 December 1557, the Three Estates convened at Edinburgh to discuss the

marriage question and issue a formal response to Henri's 'special lettres and writingis'.[1] There, it was determined that a delegation of eight commissioners would be sent to France to negotiate the terms of the marriage compact. Gilbert, earl of Cassillis, George, earl of Rothes, Lord James Stewart, James, lord Fleming, George, lord Seton and Provost of Edinburgh, John Erskine of Dun, Robert Reid, bishop of Orkney and James Beaton, archbishop of Glasgow, were all appointed to conduct the negotiations.[2] In her absence, Marie de Guise appointed her mother, Antoinette de Bourbon, to represent her in the negotiations.[3] Their commission was to be financed by the tax Parliament had agreed to in March 1556/7, when the Scots first solicited Marie de Guise to advance the marriage of their Queen. Having now received the French King's consent, the Three Estates accordingly levied this tax of £15,000.[4] It is essential to reiterate that, despite some historians' assertions to the contrary, both Henri's request and the Three Estates' consent to begin formal negotiations for the marriage of Mary, Queen of Scots, took place *before* the Calais expedition had even been launched. The assumption that Henri decided to go ahead with the Valois-Stewart marriage only because he had successfully recaptured Calais, a major turning point in the Habsburg-Valois conflict, and wished to reward 'les Guises' for their part in securing its recapture is, as the chronology indicates, an inaccurate interpretation of events.[5] Rather, it appears

---

[1] *APS*, II, pp. 501-2; Lesley, *History*, pp. 262-3.

[2] *APS*, II, pp. 504-5, 506, 511, 514, 518; NLS, Adv.MSS, 54.1.2(i), f.1^{r}; SRO, GD/204/559.

[3] *Ibid*, 54.1.2(i), f.1^{r}.

[4] *APS*, II, p.504; *RPC*, XIV, p.14; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, f.178^{r} and *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 12-3^{r}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 282-3 and *Relations*, I, pp. 293-4.

[5] For example, Marshall writes: 'In January 1558 the Duke of Guise, Mary's eldest brother, captured Calais from the English and the power and popularity of his family rose to new heights. Eager to reward

that the disaster of Saint-Quentin, the subsequent ascent to power of 'les Guises' and the Scots' refusal to carry out the siege of Wark were the catalytic events that moved both Henri and the Scottish political community to see the Valois-Stewart marriage concluded. France's resounding victory at Calais served only to boost morale and bolster the support that already existed for Franco-Scottish union.

Armed with their instructions,[1] the negotiating commissioners set sail for France in early February 1557/8, escorted by a fleet of merchant and private vessels.[2] Upon arriving in France, they were 'honorable convoyit to Pareis, quhair thay war with gret honour and fawour receaved be the King of France and his nobilitie in the monethe of Merche'.[3] By 19 April 1558, agreement had been reached and a treaty contracting the marriage of Mary, Queen of Scots and the Dauphin François was formally concluded.[4] As in the treaties of Birgham, Greenwich and, to a lesser extent, Haddington, this treaty was fundamentally concerned with the protection of Scotland's cultural and institutional independence in a dynastic union. As per the commissioners' instructions, the treaty contained the provision that, in the marriage, all 'heirs and successors sal observe and keip the fredomes Liberteis and priuilegeis of this realme and lawis of the samyn and In

---

them, Henri II agreed to go ahead with the marriage plans'. Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, .p.215; Fraser, *Mary, Queen of Scots*, pp. 90-1.

[1] See NLS, Adv.MSS, 54.1.2(i), fos. 1-5^{r}; *APS*, II, pp. 511-3, 504-6; and Prince Alexandre Labanoff, *Lettres, Instructions et Mémoires de Marie Stuart, Reine d'Écosse* (London, 1844), I, pp. 46-50, for the specific details of the Scots' commission.

[2] *TA*, X, pp. 330, 332, 333. On 5 February 1557/8, Marie de Guise ordered that 'all sindrie awnaris, skipparis and marinaris of schippis to be in reddines to depart witht the commissionaris the vj day of Februar instant, ... and to pas fordwart witht thame unto the tyme the saidis commissionaris beis landit in France'. See also Lesley, *History*, pp. 262-3; *Papal Negotiations*, p.9.

[3] Lesley, *History*, p.263.

[4] NLS, Adv.MSS, 54.1.2(i), fos. 1-5^{r}; *APS*, II, pp. 511-3. See also *ibid*, II, pp. 516-7; SRO, SP7/38, 39; and BL, Harley MSS, 1244.35, f.202, for the commission to investigate consanguinity (Mary and François were third cousins) and subsequent papal dispensation for the marriage.

the samyn maner as hes bene keipit and obseruit in all kingis tymes of Scotland of before'.[1] It also stipulated that, if Mary should die without issue, the Scottish crown would revert, without impediment, to her nearest blood relative - namely, Châtelherault and his heirs and successors.[2] As heirs apparent to the Scottish throne upon the failure of the Stewart line, the house of Hamilton and, in particular, Châtelherault's rights to the Scottish succession were safeguarded, at least ostensibly, in the dynastic union of the French and Scottish crowns.[3] A series of documents secretly signed by Mary, Queen of Scots on 4 April 1558, however, revealed the extent to which Henri was not prepared to relinquish his interests in Scotland in the event that his future daughter-in-law died without issue.[4]

Directly contravening the terms of the 'official' marriage treaty, these secret documents renounced the rights of the house of Hamilton to the Scottish succession in favour of the royal house of Valois. The first document was a letter of donation, whereby Mary willingly bequeathed the sovereignty of Scotland and all her claims to the English succession to the King of France and his successors.[5] It was decreed that, because of the special favour and affection Henri had bestowed on Scotland and its queen, Mary:

---

[1] *APS*, II, p.504.

[2] *Ibid*, II, p.505; SRO, SP7/40.

[3] The commissioners had been instructed to ensure that 'the richtuis blude of the croun of scotlande to succeid without any impediment Bot to be aydit fortifyit and supportit be the kingis maiestie and his successouris And all the auld Ligis in that cace to stand in effect as thai wer before the completing of the said mariage and obseruit betuix the twa realmis'. For his part, Châtelherault lodged a protest to ensure that his rights were safeguarded in the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance. His rights and title were later confirmed by Mary and François in April 1558. *APS*, II, pp. 605, 517.

[4] Labanoff, *Lettres*, I, pp. 50-6.

[5] *Ibid*, I, pp. 50-2.

> ... a donné et donné par ces présentes, par pure et libre donation, faicte pour cause de mort, au Roy de France qui est ou sera, le royaulme d'Escosse selon qui se consiste et comporte, oultre tous et telz droictz que lui peuvent ou pourront, ores et pour l'advenir, compecter et appartenir au royaulme d'Angleterre, et aultres terres et seigneuryes, qui par ce tître lui sont escheuz ou pourrount escheoir et advenir; ensemble tous et chacuns les droictz, tant en pensions que aultrement, qui, à cause de ce, peuvent et pourront, ores et pour l'advenir, compecter à icelle Dame envers et contre toutes personnes, mesmes envers et à l'endroict du Roy de France et ses successeurs Roys, sur les terres de son royaulme, en quelque sorte que ce soit, dont les Roys ou Roynes d'Angleterre leur pourroient faire demande, débat ou querelle, desquelz icelle Dame, ou cas susdict, a fait à iceulx Roys de France don, quietance, cession et transport ces présentes.[1]

Mary's second letter of donation was also hedged in protectionist rhetoric, but this time the French King's voluntary 'protection, tuition et deffence du royaume d'Escosse' was revealed to have come at a price. In the event that Mary should die in the near future, it was decreed that the kingdom and the revenues of Scotland were to be retained by France until Henri was reimbursed of all the expenses he incurred in Scotland's defence and Mary's education at the French Court.[2] Estimated to be in the region of one million *d'or*, the sheer size of the Scots' debt to Henri was yet another guarantee that Scotland would remain in French possession for a very long time.

Given the nature of these two documents, it is understandable that Henri wanted not only to ensure their secrecy, but also to safeguard the provisions contained therein - provisions which would undeniably prove unacceptable to the Scots. To protect his interests, therefore, the Queen of Scots simultaneously issued a letter of renunciation nullifying any future contract or agreement made by the Three Estates that contravened the terms of her two donations. The articles safeguarding Scotland's sovereignty and

---

[1] Labanoff, *Lettres*, I, p.51.

[2] *Ibid*, I, pp. 52-4.

Châtelherault's claim to the Scottish succession in the 'official' treaty of 19 April 1558, therefore, would technically be rendered null and void in the event of Mary's death by virtue of the letter of renunciation dated 4 April 1558.[1] What these secret arrangements clearly show is that, just as the Scots were adamant in safeguarding their cultural and institutional independence in a dynastic union with France, so too was Henri determined to protect the interests that Mary Stewart's dynasticism afforded him through marriage - interests which could provide for the realisation of his vision of a Franco-British empire.

Yet, there were some terms of the 'official' marriage contract that were unaffected by the secret deal. It was agreed, for example, that upon marriage, François would assume the title 'King of Scotland', and until he succeeded his father, he was to be officially styled the 'King-Dauphin' and Mary, the 'Queen-Dauphiness'.[2] Only when François acceded to the French throne would France and Scotland truly be united. In the meantime, the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance would be celebrated and symbolised by the joining of the French and Scottish crowns on Mary and François' coat of arms (something which was later altered to include that of England following the death of Mary Tudor), and the naturalisation of both the Scots and the French in each other's kingdom.[3] Marie de Guise's position in Scotland was also safeguarded in the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance. According to the Scottish Commissioners' instructions, it was agreed that a commission would be granted for Guise to retain the regency of

---

[1] Labanoff, *Lettres*, I, pp. 54-6.

[2] The use of these styles was confirmed in an act of Parliament recognising the marriage of Mary to François (30 April 1558) and in a letter of congratulation (26 June 1558). *APS*, II, pp. 518, 519.

[3] *Ibid*, II, pp. 518-9, 507, 513; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 303-6; Bonner, 'French Naturalization of the Scots', p.1115.

Scotland for as long as Mary and François remained in France.[1] This is of particular significance in light of the Lords of the Congregation's attempt to suspend Guise from the regency during the Reformation Rebellion on 21 October 1559, in which they claimed to be acting in the 'name and authority of our Sovereign Lord and Lady'.[2] In accordance with the Scots' demand that the articles of the treaty of Haddington be confirmed and ratified by Mary and François, Henri's protectorate of Scotland was similarly maintained.[3] Finally, provisions were made for the event that François predeceased Mary, and the succession of any offspring this marriage might produce. In the first instance, Mary would have the option either to return to Scotland or stay in France, living off the income she received from her dowry (600,000 *livres* from lands assigned to her in Tours, Picardy, Champagne and Poictou, together with an annual pension of 30,000 *francs*).[4] If there existed an heir male, he would naturally inherit both the French and Scottish thrones, but if the marriage only produced an heir female, she would only be able to lay claim to the Scottish succession as Salic law prohibited the succession of females to the French throne. These terms having been agreed, the marriage of Mary and François was then celebrated in a manner befitting a King and Queen at the Cathedral of Notre Dame on 24 April 1558.

---

[1] Guise's regency was confirmed by Mary and François on 29 April 1558. *APS*, II, pp. 519, 504; SRO, SP13/81.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 444-9 and *History*, I, pp. 251-5. As we shall see in Chapter VIII, the Congregation's attempt to depose Guise was ultimately unsuccessful; she chose simply to ignore their 'Act of Suspension'.

[3] *APS*, II, pp. 504, 518-9; SRO, SP7/41.

[4] *APS*, II, pp. 505, 517; Lesley, *History*, p.263.

As in Henri's triumphant entry into Rouen, the ceremony solemnising the marriage of Mary, Queen of Scots and the Dauphin François was a grand and lavish display celebrating the 'auld alliance'.[1] It was also a celebration of 'les Guises', their recent accomplishments at Calais, and the realisation of their dynastic ambitions. This can be evidenced by the prominent role the Duc de Guise played in the marriage ceremony, leading not only the marital procession, but also acting as the master of ceremonies. Through throngs of spectators, the bride's uncle led a massive procession into the Cathedral of Notre Dame, including brightly adorned musicians, a hundred gentlemen-in-waiting to the King, princes of the blood, abbots and bishops, among them the Cardinal de Lorraine and the Cardinal de Guise.[2] Next came the Dauphin, preceded by Antoine, King of Navarre and escorted by his brothers, Charles, duc d'Orleans and Henri, duc d'Angoulême. Then came the bride. In a resplendent and unconventional white gown, Mary was led by Henri and the Duc de Lorraine, and followed by the French Queen, Catherine de Medicis.[3] Crowds lined the streets and people strained to watch the ceremony through the windows of the cathedral, after which, a festive string of banquets, balls and entertainment lasted for several days.[4] In Scotland, news of their sovereign's marriage was also cause for celebration. Immediately following Mary and

---

[1] Teulet, *Relations*, I, pp. 292-303 and *Relations*, I, pp. 302-11.

[2] The fact that the Duc de Guise should lead the 'princes of the blood' is of great symbolic importance given that 'les Guises' were regarded as foreigners and, consequently, of lower status. This was due to the fact that the house of Guise was a scion of the princely house of Lorraine, rulers of the independent duchy of Lorraine, which was only incorporated into France in 1766.

[3] White was the traditional colour of mourning for royalty.

[4] For more details on the wedding ceremony and celebrations in France, see W. Bentham (ed.), *Discours du Grand et Magnifique Triomphe Faict du Mariage de François et Marie Stuart*, (Roxburghe Club, 1818); Lesley, *History*, pp. 264-5; Merriman, 'Mary, Queen of France', pp. 42-4; Fraser, *Mary, Queen of Scots*, pp. 98-102.

François' proclamation of 26 June 1558, in which they formally announced their marriage to the nobles and the rest of the estates in Scotland, Marie de Guise ordered that fires and processions be made throughout the entire kingdom, in order to mark the 'completing and solemnizing of the mariage betuix our Soverane Ladie and the Dolphine of France'.[1]

For 'les Guises', the marriage of their niece to the heir to the French throne consolidated their own power and position at the French Court, and marked the beginning of their ascendancy in France. But, the dynastic ambitions of the house of Guise and the imperial ambitions of Henri were only partially realised with the marriage of Mary and François. Until the Dauphin was bestowed with the crown matrimonial, his kingship of Scotland was nominal - the sovereignty of Scotland and the rights to the English succession technically remained with his wife, Mary. Central to Henri's vision of a Franco-British empire, the crown matrimonial would enable the Dauphin to lay claim to the throne of England as husband and king of Mary Stewart. Immediately following the return of the Scottish Commissioners from France in November, therefore, Marie de Guise summoned a Parliament to secure the Three Estates' ratification of the 'official' marriage contract, and, more importantly, to gain their consent for the crown matrimonial to be bestowed on the King-Dauphin.[2]

---

[1] SRO, SP13/82; NLS, MSS, 3137, fos. 13-4; *TA*, X, pp. 365, 366. Both Mary and François sent Marie de Guise personal letters announcing their marriage. SRO, SP13/79, 80.

[2] Having left the French Court in August 1558, the Scottish Commissioners then travelled to Dieppe for their return voyage home. There, a mysterious illness took the lives of four of the Commissioners: Robert Reid, bishop of Orkney (6 September); George, earl of Rothes (9 November); Gilbert, earl of Cassillis (14 November) and James, lord Fleming (14 December at Paris). There was some suspicion that the illness was poison induced and that 'les Guises' were behind it because the Commissioners found out about the 'secret' marriage contract. This, however, has neither been proved nor disproved. If such a plot had been discovered, the question must then be asked why was nothing said by the surviving commissioners to prevent the ratification of the 'official' marriage treaty or mentioned in the

The attendance at this session of Parliament, held at Edinburgh on 29 November 1558, clearly reflects the perceived importance of Mary, Queen of Scots' marriage and the matter of the crown matrimonial amongst the Scottish political community.[1] Virtually every member of the Three Estates is listed in the sederunt, with the notable exception of Châtelherault, for reasons that will become clear shortly. As intended, one of the first matters of business to be concluded was the ratification of the articles comprising Mary and François' marriage contract, and the formal discharge of the surviving members of the negotiating delegation from their commission.[2] This having been done, it was decreed that:

> The quenis grace dowriare and regent foirsaid and thre estaitis of parliament findis and declaris the saidis commisssionaris abonewrittin and thair colleigis hes dewlie & detfullie compleitit and performyt the haill contentis of thair commissionis articlis and Instructionis gevin vnto thame And hes ressauit detfull and dew answeris and sufficient securiteis ffor fulfilling keiping and obsweruing thairof And hes satisfyit thair saidis commissionis articlis and Instructionis foirsaidis in all poyntis Eftir the forme and tennour of the samyn And thairfore hes exonerit and dischargeit and exoneris and dischargeis the saidis commissionaris and every of thame havand detfullie and dewlie done thair offices In that parte for now and evir.[3]

Marie de Guise's greatest accomplishment during this Parliament, however, was gaining the formal consent of the Three Estates for Mary, Queen of Scots to honour her husband with the crown of Scotland. In accordance with the wishes of their Queen, the crown matrimonial was granted to François:

Congregation's propaganda to substantiate their claims of French conquest. SRO, SP13/83-4; Labanoff, *Lettres*, I, pp. 57-60; *TA*, X, p.393; Knox, *History*, I, pp. 13 *n.*4, 130, 140-1; Lesely *History*, pp. 266-7; Fraser, *Mary, Queen of Scots*, pp. 111-2; Donaldson, *James V-James VII*, p.88.

[1] *APS*, II, p.504.

[2] *Ibid*, II, pp. 504-6.

[3] *Ibid*, II, p.505.

> ... be way of gratificatioun during the mariage without ony maner of preiudice To hir hienes self the succesioun or hir body Or lauchfull successioun of hir blude quhatsumeuir And this crowne to be send with twa or thre of the lordis of hir Realme To the entent that the maist cristin king and king dolphine hir husband may vnderstand with quhat zele and affectioun hir subictis ar myndit To obswerue and recognosis hir said spous.[1]

With this, the Dauphin's kingship of Scotland was no longer nominal. He assumed all of Mary's rights and powers as sovereign, and more importantly, her dynastic claim to the English succession. In short, François became King of Scots. To further show their support for and commitment to the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance, the Three Estates reciprocated Henri's earlier gesture and bestowed the same privileges and rights that the Scots enjoyed on all French subjects.[2] This Parliament, therefore, was the culmination of Marie de Guise's political career in Scotland. Motivated by her own dynastic ambitions, and those of 'les Guises' in France, Marie de Guise had successfully provided for the union of the crowns and kingdoms of France and Scotland. In the wider context of European dynastic politics, however, the fulfilment of Guise's dynastic objectives assumed even greater significance because, in doing so, she had also laid the foundations for Henri's imperial scheme for a Franco-British empire.

The death of Mary Tudor on 17 November 1558 and the 'dubious' accession of Elizabeth, at least in Catholic eyes, brought Henri one step closer to realising his imperial ambitions within the archipelago. According to the dictates of canon law, Elizabeth was illegitimate and, therefore, ineligible to succeed to the English throne. The next legitimate Catholic claimant to the English throne was Mary Stewart, and, by

---

[1] *APS*, II, p.506. The outbreak of the Reformation Rebellion prevented the crown from being sent to France as Mary, Queen of Scots had wished.

[2] *Ibid*, II, pp. 506-7; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 303-9 and *Relations*, I, pp. 312-7.

consequence of the crown matrimonial, the Dauphin. Mary Stewart's dynasticism had provided Henri, through the marriage of his son, with the prospect of uniting Scotland, England and Ireland under one Catholic French crown. Upon Henri's death, these kingdoms would officially fall into the imperial dominion of France. Thus, upon hearing the news of Mary Tudor's death, the French King:

> ... caused to make publict proclamatione in Paris, publishing the Quenis majestie of Scotlande to be Quene of Inglande, Scotlande and Irelande and caused hir and the dolphin hir husbande tak the armes of Inglande, and jone with the armes of Scotland and France, and make all thair seales conforme thairto, and mark thair silver plait, brodir thair tapestries, hingers and all uther thyngs with the same.[1]

As early as 16 January 1558/9, Mary and François had styled themselves 'Mary and François, King and Queen Dauphins of Scotland, England and Ireland', while Henri was actively trying to persuade the pope to declare Elizabeth Tudor illegitimate and recognise Mary Stewart's right to the English throne.[2]

On account of the international situation, however, Henri had to be careful not to push the claims of Mary and François to the English succession too vigorously, as he was currently negotiating a peace with Philip. On the one hand, Mary Tudor's death had undermined the strength of Philip's demand that Henri relinquish Calais, but on the

---

[1] Lesley, *History*, pp. 268-9.

[2] *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 235, 346, pp. 91, 145; *CSP Rome*, 4, pp. 1-2; *Papal Negotiations*, pp. 10-2. It is of interest to note that Elizabeth styled herself the sovereign of Scotland and France, so her anger at Mary and François was not without contradiction. See, for example, *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 173, p.59. Mary, Queen of Scots' use of the styles and arms of England intensified after the death of Henri II in July 1559 and subsequent union of the French and Scottish crowns. This became a particular bone of contention for Elizabeth and her secretary, William Cecil, who saw this as a pretext for a French invasion of England which they thought was imminent given the influx of French troops into Scotland sent to deal with the outbreak of rebellion. As will be discussed in Chapter VIII, Mary and François' use of the arms of England was also a motivating factor behind England's later decision to intervene financially and militarily on behalf of the Lords of the Congregation. *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 837, 840, 845, 868, pp. 311-2, 312-3, 314, 324-9; PRO, SP12/6, f.74^{r}; BL, Cotton MSS, Caligula B.x, fos. 17^{v}-8^{r}; S. Alford, *The Early Elizabethan Polity: William Cecil and the British Succession Crisis, 1558-1569*, (Cambridge, 1998), pp. 43-70.

other, he did not want to infuriate Elizabeth too much for fear that she would then be unreasonable over Calais.[1] The French King also feared the prospect of another Anglo-Imperial dynastic alliance. During the negotiations that culminated in the Peace of Câteau-Cambrésis (2 April 1559), therefore, Henri worked hard to prevent a marriage between Philip and Elizabeth - a marriage that would inevitably be more fruitful than Philip's marriage to Elizabeth's aged and barren half-sister had been.[2] The actual terms of the treaty contracted between France, Spain and England reflect Henri's desire to safeguard his position and dynastic interests within the British Isles.[3] In lieu of the English Queen, Philip would instead marry Henri's daughter, Elisabeth, thereby keeping the Imperial threat out of the British Isles.[4] More importantly, it also provided for the possibility that Elizabeth could still be excommunicated by the pope, and enable Henri to put Mary and François on the prized throne of England.

With international peace and the dynastic and imperial interests of 'les Guises et Valois' safeguarded in Scotland and in England, the spring of 1559 seemed like the beginning of a 'golden age' for Henri and Marie de Guise. In reality, nothing could have been further from the truth. The reform movements in both Scotland and France soon began to translate into civil unrest, whilst Henri's untimely death in July 1559 instigated a series of events that would eventually see the collapse of Marie de Guise's

---

[1] Baumgartner, *Henry II*, p.224.

[2] See *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 321-2, 324-6, 335-7, 338-9, 340-1, 373, 390-4, 399, 405, 408, 419-20, 421-2, 439, 445-6, 447-8, 456, pp. 122-3, 137-44, 163-72, 175-9, 184, 186-8, 190, for references to the negotiations, in addition to Wernham, *Before the Armada*, pp. 244-6; Ruble, *Le Traité de Cateau Cambrésis* (Paris, 1889); Baumgartner, *Henry II*, pp. 221-5; Rodríguez-Salgado, *The Changing Face of Empire*, pp. 305-18.

[3] *Foedera*, XV, pp. 505-12; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 475, 483, pp. 195, 196-8.

[4] Baumgartner, *Henry II*, pp. 227-9; Rodríguez-Salgado, *The Changing Face of Empire*, pp. 319-23.

régime in Scotland. But as we shall now see, the eventual outbreak of the so-called 'Reformation Rebellion' in May 1559 was not due to the 'altogether altered' mind of the Queen Regent towards her Protestant subjects upon fulfilling her dynastic objectives.[1] In fact, religion was a decidedly secondary concern for Marie de Guise until well after the marriage of her daughter and the bestowal of the crown matrimonial on the Dauphin. Seen in this light, the prevalent view that Guise had to conciliate the reformers of her realm in order to achieve her dynastic objectives becomes highly questionable.

***

Throughout most of Marie de Guise's regency, religious issues had taken a back seat to more pressing and immediate concerns such as the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance, national security and the imposition of law and order.[2] However, Guise's preoccupation with these concerns did not mean that she was oblivious to the fact that the established Church was in need of internal reform or, for that matter, that there existed a small but powerful group of Protestants in her kingdom. In 1555 and 1556, for example, Pope Paul IV received numerous reports and petitions in the name of Mary, Queen of Scots,[3] detailing the degenerate and profligate state of the Scottish Church and requesting a visitation for the 'management and reform of our clergy'.[4] Church property had been alienated and neglected by prelates, rectors, prebends and holders of canonries and

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, p.315 and *History*, I, p.158.

[2] *Papal Negotiations*, p.xiii.

[3] *Ibid*, pp. 4-9, 522-30, xviii-xx.

[4] *Ibid*, p. 525.

benefices, while ecclesiastical discipline had relaxed to such an extent that nuns wandered freely through the houses of the laity, admitted 'worthless and wicked men' to their monasteries and daily indulged in carnal lusts.[1] This was also evidenced by the fact that:

> ... divers abuses are introduced into the churches ... and very many crimes, iniquities, and scandalous enormities (some of them savouring of heresy) are committed by various persons of either sex, by ecclesiastics of various orders, both secular and regular, iniquities which give offence to the Divine Majesty, bring shame on the Christian religion, and cause loss of souls, and scandal to Christ's faithful.[2]

It is significance that this is this is the only reference to heresy in all the applications for a 'visitor' to Scotland. Even in Guise's letter to the Cardinal de Lorraine of 13 January 1556/7, in which she describes her problems in Scotland at great length, neither religion nor heresy is mentioned.[3] But it was at the instigation of the Queen Regent that Paul IV granted factory to Cardinal Anthony Trivulzio, legate *de latere* to the Apostolic See and to the Most Christian King of France on 27 October 1557. Specifically, he was commissioned 'to visit, by means of some fit prelate, to be deputed by him, the churches monasteries, and persons of either sex, ecclesiastical and secular, and regulars of every order in the realm of Scotland, and of the reforming and correcting of what he shall think deserving of reformation and correction'.[4] In 1556, Guise had already recommended the Scottish prelates who she thought were the most capable and suitable candidates to hold the office of 'visitor'. The names of James Beaton, archbishop of

---

[1] *Papal Negotiations*, pp. 6-9, 528-9.

[2] *Ibid*, p.7.

[3] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 8-11; *Papal Negotiations*, pp. 423-30.

[4] *Ibid*, pp. 8-9.

Glasgow, Patrick Hepburn, bishop of Moray, Andrew Durie, bishop of Galloway, William Chisholm, bishop of Dunblane and Robert Reid, bishop of Orkney were all submitted for consideration.[1] It is not known, however, who was appointed, if anyone.

By 1557, the international situation was a more serious concern for the papacy than the internal reform of the Scottish Church. In December 1557, Trivulzio was sent on a special mission to France to pursue peace on the Continent. But Trivulzio also used his time in France to gather information on the 'state of Scottish affairs to which the queen's application to the Pope referred'.[2] In this, he was to be assisted not only by Henri and the Cardinal de Lorraine, but also by the delegation of Scottish Commissioners negotiating Mary, Queen of Scots' marriage treaty. Expecting their arrival in two or three days time, Henri informed Trivulzio that these 'Scotsmen of importance ... would give full information as to the necessities of that kingdom'.[3] As proposed candidates to hold the office of visitor, Beaton and Reid, could be expected to provide Trivulzio with pertinent and constructive information for the internal reform of the Scottish church, but what the delegation's noted reformers, Cassillis, Erskine of Dun and Lord James, had to say on the matter is anyone's guess. Again, it is not known what information Trivulzio gathered from the Henri or the Scots, if anything at all. What his papal appointment does reveal, however, was Marie de Guise's desire to see the internal reform of the Church.

---

[1] *Papal Negotiations*, pp. 530, xx.

[2] *Ibid*, p.9.

[3] *Ibid*, pp. 9-10.

Marie de Guise was similarly mindful that there existed a small but powerful group of Protestants in her kingdom that might oppose the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance on religious grounds. In order to assure her Protestant subjects that her dynastic policies were not incompatible with the reformed faith, Guise adopted an accommodating position. Committed and noted reformers such as Glencairn, Argyll, Cassillis, Erskine of Dun and Lord James were shown no political bias in Guise's administration on account of their faith. Rather, they continued to play prominent roles in her government and, more importantly, were extensively involved in every stage of the process that culminated in Mary, Queen of Scots' marriage to the Dauphin. As we have seen in Chapter III (Appendix A), reformers were recipients of French patronage alongside their Catholic peers and participated in Henri's triumphant entry into Rouen that celebrated, amongst other things, the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance and projected Henri's imperial ambitions in the British Isles. Seven years later, Protestants elected to proceed with the Valois-Stewart marriage and were directly involved in the negotiations of the marriage treaty itself. Finally, in November 1558, having consented to grant the crown matrimonial to their new king, two of Scotland's most prominent reformers, Argyll and Lord James, were appointed to transport the crown itself to France.[1] By embracing a tolerant position with respect to religion and implementing a policy of inclusion rather than persecution, Guise sent a clear message to her Protestant subjects that they would not be marginalised, excluded or made to suffer personally or

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, p.294 and *History*, I, p.141; Lesley, *History*, p.268. Argyll was to be accompanied in this, by another Protestant sympathiser, Lord James Stewart, who not only negotiated the Valois-Stewart marriage, but also invited Knox to return to Scotland on 10 March 1556/7, along with Glencairn, Argyll and Erskine of Dun. Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 267-8 and *History*, I, p.132.

politically on account of their faith. This may also explain their support of Guise's dynastic policies when most would see the union of the French and Scottish Catholic crowns as a direct threat to the reform movement in Scotland. Jenny Wormald has argued that leading Protestants such as Lord James and Erskine of Dun gave 'positive' support to the union with Catholic France because 'they saw it as a way to keep the Catholic-educated Mary out of Scotland, while maintaining their formal loyalty to her, [and] thereby maximizing the opportunity to advance the Protestant cause while minimizing the need to clash directly with their sovereign'.[1] However, the relationship between Guise and her Protestant subjects appears to be far less cynical, and one based rather on a mutual understanding of religious toleration, than Wormald's argument allows.

This can be evidenced in many ways. Unlike Mary Tudor, Marie de Guise did not implement a policy of persecution - the controversial burning of Walter Miln in April 1558 being the work of Archbishop Hamilton.[2] John Knox, moreover, went unmolested during his preaching tour of Scotland in 1555-1556 and Guise did nothing to prevent him associating with Scots with Protestant sympathies such as Erskine of Dun, Argyll, Lord Lorne and Lord James.[3] Rather, Guise reinforced her assurances of inclusion and toleration with patronage. In November and December 1557, she entered into a bond a manrent with the Earl of Morton, while Donald Campbell, abbot of

---

[1] Wormald, *Mary, Queen of Scots*, pp. 94-5 and *Court, Kirk, and Community*, p.114.

[2] Dawson, 'The Scottish Reformation and the Theatre of Martyrdom', in D. Wood (ed.), *Martyrs and Martyrologies* (Oxford, 1993), pp. 259-70, especially pp. 269-70. Even Knox accepted Guise's protestations of innocence in this matter. Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 308-9, Appendix XIII, pp. 550-5, and *History*, I, pp. 153-4.

[3] Donaldson, *James V-James VII*, pp. 85-6.

Coupar-Angus was nominated to the bishopric of Brechin, a son of Glencairn received a pension of £900 from Kelso abbey, a nephew of Argyll was granted the temporalities from Brechin, and Adam Bothwell, son of the provost of Edinburgh, was nominated and provided with the bishopric of Orkney.[1] So, if Guise had adopted a tolerant position with respect to religion in a conscious effort to reassure her Protestant subjects that there would not be a backlash after the Valois-Stewart marriage, the 'First Band' of the Congregation cannot be seen as a sign of opposition to Guise's dynastic policies.[2] But, as a politique who was ultimately concerned with her own dynastic interests and those of her daughter, Marie de Guise was not above altering her religious policy if circumstances deemed it necessary or advantageous to do so. There was the possibility that she could abandon her tolerant position towards the reform movement for one far less accommodating, and it is because of this possibility that the 'First Band' must be seen, primarily, as an insurance policy against an eventuality.

Thus, on 3 December 1557, Argyll, his son and heir, Lord Lorne, Glencairn, Morton and Erskine of Dun signed a covenant, pledging to:

> ... continually apply our hole power, substance, and our verray lyves to manteane, sett fordward and establish the most blessed word of God and his Congregatioun; and shall laubour at our possibilitie to have faythfull Ministeris purely and trewlie to minister Christis Evangell and Sacramentes to his people. We shall manteane thame, nuriss thame, and defend thame, the haill congregatioun of Christ, and everie membour thairof, at our haill poweris and waring of our lyves against Sathan, and all wicked power that does intend tyranny or truble against the foirsaid congregatioun.[3]

---

[1] Donaldson, *James V-James VII*, p.86 and *Reformed by Bishops*, pp. 1-52; Mahoney, 'The Scottish Hierarchy', p.53; Dowden, *Bishops*, pp. 190-1, 374, 267; *Papal Negotiations*, pp. 28, 30, 40, 55, 172; *Highland Papers*, IV, p.211; *ER*, XIX, p.451, *RSS*, IV, 1800, p.292 and V, 589, pp. 122-3.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 273-4 and *History*, I, pp. 136-7; NLS, Ch.2593.

[3] Knox, *Works*, I, 273 and *History*, I, p.136.

Unlike the later proclamations of the Lords of the Congregation, the 'Common Band' was purely a religious manifesto in which the subscribers publicly declared their commitment to the reformed religion and its establishment in Scotland. Nothing contained within it suggests that the subscribers' motives were political or, more importantly, that they were opposing Marie de Guise or the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance. Rather, the 'Common Band' was entirely consistent with John Knox's own position at the time (at least publicly) – 'lawful obedience' to the established authority.[1] The purpose of the 'Common Band', therefore, was purely defensive. In the event that Marie de Guise was not playing straight with them, this group of committed reformers took the precautionary step of setting up a private insurance policy against the *possibility* that once the marriage was accomplished, Guise would no longer need or, as it would happen, could no longer afford to be so accommodating.[2] As we shall see in Chapter VIII, the fears of the Protestants ensured that this became a self-fulfilling prophecy. Needless to say, the subscribers' concerns about the possible ramifications of

---

[1] Even though he advocated lawful obedience, Knox had started to develop his theory of armed resistance by October 1557. For in-depth analyses of John Knox's theory of armed rebellion, see: Mason, 'Knox on Rebellion', *Kingship and the Commonweal* (Edinburgh, 1998), pp. 139-64, 'Knox, Resistance and the Royal Supremacy' in Mason (ed.), *John Knox and the British Reformations*, pp. 154-75, 'Covenant and Commonweal: the Language of Politics in Reformation Scotland' in Macdougall (ed.), *Church, Politics and Society* (Edinburgh, 1983), pp. 98-120, 'Knox, Resistance and the Moral Imperative', *History of Political Thought*, I (1980), pp. 411-36, in addition to his edited work, *Knox: On Rebellion*; J.H. Burns, 'Reformation and Resistance: John Knox' in *The True Law of Kingship* (Oxford, 1996), pp. 122-52, 'John Knox and Revolution, 1558', *History Today*, viii (1958), pp. 565-73, and 'The Political Ideas of the Scottish Reformation', *Aberdeen University Review*, xxxvi (1956), pp. 251-68; J.R. Gray, 'The Political Theory of John Knox', *Church History*, viii (1939), pp. 132-47; Greaves, 'Calvinism, Democracy, and Knox's Political Thought' in Greaves (ed.), *Theology and Revolution in the Scottish Reformation*, pp. 169-83, and 'John Knox and the Covenant Tradition', *Journal of Ecclesiastical History*, xxiv (1973), pp. 23-32; Dawson, 'Trumpeting Resistance: Christopher Goodman and John Knox' in Mason (ed.), *John Knox and the British Reformations*, pp. 131-53, 'The Two John Knoxes', pp. 555-76; and Q. Skinner, 'The Origins of the Calvinist Theory of Revolution' in B.C. Malament (ed.), *After the Reformation* (Manchester, 1980), pp. 309-30.

[2] Mason, *Kingship and the Commonweal*, p.150 *n.*40.

the dynastic union of the French and Scottish *Catholic* crowns makes the Protestants' presence on the Commission to negotiate the terms of the marriage very intriguing.

But, if the 'Common Band' signalled the emergence of Protestantism as an organised political force, did the reformers pose enough of a threat to force Guise to maintain her accommodating position in order to achieve her dynastic objectives? With only five subscribers one would hardly think so. It is Donaldson's contention that the 'Common Band' 'failed to attract the support of the many others for whose signatures ample space was provided'.[1] While this is true, there is also the possibility that this document was the only surviving copy of several that were circulated throughout the kingdom. In his *History of the Reformation in Scotland*, Knox claims that there were 'many otheris' who subscribed to the 'Common Band'.[2] His failure to identify these 'many others', however, leads one to presume that they were not of the same political stature as Glencairn, Argyll, Morton, Lord Lorne or Erskine of Dun and, therefore, a negligible threat to the Queen Regent in the accomplishment of her dynastic objectives.

Knox is similarly vague when referring to the Protestants who formulated and subscribed the petitions, letters and protestations that were presented to Marie de Guise and the Three Estates in November and December 1558.[3] Apart from 'certain zealous men' who exhorted their 'brethren' in the privy-kirk, the only person of note who Knox cites specifically is Sir James Sandilands of Calder who presented the 'First Oration,

---

[1] Donaldson, *James V - James VII*, p.89.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, p.274 and *History*, I, p.137.

[3] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 302-14 and *History*, I, pp. 149-58; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 15-6, 45-6, 66-7, pp. 7-8, 14, 21.

and Petition, of the Protestants of Scotland to the Queen Regent' in November 1558.[1] Other than that, Knox predominantly uses the royal 'we' when referring to the Protestants as a whole. Being the name-dropper that he was, one would expect Knox to identify the more notable supporters of the reform movement; his failure to do so suggests that, in actuality, there were not that many. As we shall see in Chapter VIII, the majority of support for the Congregation came in 1560, when France failed to respond to England's military intervention following the treaty of Berwick.

The year following the signing of the 'Common Band' witnessed the systematic development of the Lords of the Congregation's religious policy, which they presented to the Queen Regent in their petitions of November 1558. Again, Guise showed her proclivity for accommodation by promising to have them considered at a Provincial Council, which subsequently convened at Edinburgh on 1 March 1558/9.[2] Passing several statutes upholding the ancient faith and its authority as the established Church in Scotland, the Protestants' requests for such things as the legal assembly of Protestants in private or public, the reading of Scripture in the vernacular, the administration of the sacraments of baptism and communion in the vernacular (the latter in both kinds) and the reform of the Estate Ecclesiastical according to the above precepts, were rejected outright - not by Guise, but by the Provincial Council.[3] These facts being as they are, considerable doubt is raised as to the accuracy of Knox's assertion that:

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, p.301 and *History*, I, p.148. In *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 15, p.7, the date of the 'First Oration' is cited as 20 November 1558, but this date has not been substantiated elsewhere. Knox, *History*, I, p.152 *n.*1.

[2] Patrick, *Statutes*, liv, pp. 149-91.

[3] *Ibid*, liv, pp. 156-62.

> ... to gett the Matrimoniall Croune, the Quein Regent left no point of the compas unsailled ... Unto the Protestants she said, "I am nott unmyndfull how oft ye have suyted me for Reformatioun in religioun, and glaidly wald I consent thairunto; but ye see that the power and craft of the Bischop of Sanctandrois, togetther with the power of the Duck [Châtelherault], and of the Kirk-men, ever to be bent against me in all my proceadingis; So that I may do nothing, onless the full authoritie of this Realme be devolved to the King of France, which can nott be butt by donatioun of the Croune Matrimoniall; which thing yf ye will bring to passe, then devise ye what ye please in materis of religioun and thei shalbe granted".[1]

This version of events is, of course, coloured by Knox's personal bias as well as hindsight. It gives the impression that Guise needed to conciliate the Protestants by granting empty promises because their sheer political weight could have some bearing on the outcome of whether the crown matrimonial was granted to the Dauphin or not. Given the presumably small number of openly committed reformers at the time, this scenario seems highly unlikely – especially as this decision was made in Parliament, where the majority vote ruled. Of greater significance, perhaps, is Knox's inference that pro-reforming sympathies were synonymous with opposition to Franco-Scottish dynastic union. There is no evidence to suggest that such a correlation even existed before patriotism became a central theme of the Lords of the Congregation's propaganda during the Reformation Rebellion. The only formal protest lodged against the granting of the crown matrimonial to the Dauphin came from Châtelherault, who was noticeably absent from this session of Parliament and principally concerned with safeguarding his own dynastic ambitions and rights to the succession.[2]

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, pp. 293-4 and *History*, I, pp. 140-1.

[2] *APS*, II, pp. 507-8.

Future membership in the Lords of the Congregation is in no way indicative of opposition to Marie de Guise's dynastic policies in 1557 and 1558. If anything, this chapter has clearly shown that the Scottish political community actively pressed for the conclusion of their sovereign's marriage from as early as May 1556. It is important to remember that, if the Scots had any reservations about the effect Franco-Scottish dynastic union would have on their ancient laws or liberties, or their cultural or institutional independence, they could have refused to grant the crown matrimonial to the Dauphin. The fact that the Three Estates did grant it, moreover, does not automatically mean that they did so because Marie de Guise made a secret deal with her Protestant subjects over matters of religion. Rather, their consent was more than likely due to her dual policy of accommodation and inclusion, and the general assurances she gave to her Protestant subjects throughout her regency that her dynastic policies were not necessarily incompatible with the reform movement. Yet, despite these assurances, international and national events coinciding with the fulfilment of Guise's dynastic policies forced the Queen Regent to take a harder line in matters of religion and encouraged her Protestant subjects to take a far more assertive stance in their quest to advance and establish the reformed kirk in Scotland. Culminating in the outbreak of rebellion, the conflict that would dominate Marie de Guise's final years and lead to the collapse of her régime in Scotland is the subject to which we now turn.

CHAPTER VIII

The Reformation Rebellion: the Collapse of Marie de Guise's Régime in Scotland?

On 24 May 1559, a government force of 8,000 men assembled on the outskirts of Perth to confront a riotous 'congregation' of Protestants who had embarked on a violent campaign of iconoclasm.[1] On the surface, Marie de Guise's decision to respond to this Protestant revolt militarily seemed to confirm her 'altogether altered' mind towards the reform movement since the fulfilment of her dynastic policies.[2] Already on 23 March 1558/9, she had issued a religious proclamation in support of the Third Provincial Council, upholding the authority and supremacy of the Scottish Church and ordering the return of all Scots to the ancient faith by Easter (26 March).[3] Guise's determination to enforce this ordinance resulted in four Protestant preachers being summoned to account for their non-compliance. Their failure to appear, whether deliberate or unintentional, was regarded by the Queen Regent as an act of open defiance and led to their immediate denunciation as rebels.[4] Incensed by this turn of events and, in particular, by Marie de Guise's ostensible *volte-face*, John Knox preached a rancorous sermon 'vehemente

---

[1] *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 728, pp. 268-9; *CSP Scot.*, I, 457, p.213.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, p.315 and *History*, I, p.159.

[3] Patrick, *Statutes*, pp. 149-91; D. Laing (ed.), 'Historie of the Estate of Scotland', *Wodrow Misc.*, I, p.56; W.L. Mathieson, *Politics and Religion: A Study in Scottish History from the Reformation to the Revolution* (Glasgow, 1902), I, p.57; Lee, *James Stewart*, p.33.

[4] Pitcairn, *Trials*, I.i, pp.406-7; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 710, pp. 263-4; *CSP Scot.*, I, 455, pp. 212-3; Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 315-9. The four preachers were Paul Methven, John Christison, William Harlaw and John Willock.

against idolatrie'.[1] The iconoclasm that this sermon incited officially marked the beginning of the Reformation Rebellion in Scotland.[2]

Both contemporaries and modern historians have used the timing of this change of religious policy to suggest that Marie de Guise adopted a 'conciliatory' position towards her Protestant subjects with the sole purpose of achieving her dynastic objectives.[3] Thus it is argued that, having secured the Three Estates' ratification of Mary, Queen of Scots' marriage contract and consent to grant the crown matrimonial to the Dauphin, Guise no longer required the political support of her Protestant subjects and promptly abandoned her policy of conciliation for one less accommodating. This alteration in policy, however, was neither sudden nor extreme and did not represent the complete abandonment of Guise's accommodating position. Rather, a complex series of international and national events *coinciding* with the completion of her dynastic policies compelled Guise to take an increasingly harder line in matters of religion. As in so many other aspects of her regency, events in England dictated her actions at home, and the dynastic controversy that followed in the wake of Mary Tudor's death forced Guise to adopt a more assertive stance against the reform movement in Scotland. Marie de Guise's sudden preoccupation with religion in 1559, therefore, came not with the realisation of her dynastic ambitions, but rather as a direct result of the early Elizabethan succession crisis.

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, p.321 and *History*, I, p.163.

[2] Knox's accounts of the iconoclasm in Perth varied to suit his audience. A more realistic account can be found in his letters to Anna Locke in *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 743, 877, pp. 278, 331-5, while a decidedly more favourable version of events is contained in his *Works*, I, pp. 319-23 and *History*, I, pp. 162-3.

[3] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 294, 312, and *History*, I, pp. 140-1, 156; Donaldson, *James V-James VII*, p.91; Lee, *James Stewart*, pp. 20, 32-3; Mathieson, *Politics and Religion*, I, pp. 42-4, 52, 56.

***

Following the death of Mary Tudor in November 1558, the question of religion in Scotland became a matter of crucial importance - for only in Catholic eyes was Mary Stewart's claim to the English succession superior to that of Elizabeth Tudor. Yet despite her dubious legitimacy, Elizabeth succeeded her half-sister to become the Queen of England – a fact that physically prevented the immediate realisation of Henri's imperial vision of a Franco-British Empire. Undeterred, Henri launched a campaign to advance his daughter-in-law's claim to the English succession on the grounds that she was 'laitlie mareit to the dolphine his eldest sone, [and] was just heritour of the realme of Inglande, as nerrest and lauchfull to the croun thairof, being onelie dochtir to King James the Fyft of Scotlande, quhois moder Quene Margaret was eldest sister to Henry the viij'.[1] Henri's dynastic argument rested foursquare on religion. Because the Pope had not sanctioned Henry VIII's divorce from Catharine of Aragon, his subsequent marriage to Anne Boleyn was invalid, thus rendering Elizabeth illegitimate.

Unlike her cousin, there was no question of Mary Stewart's legitimacy in canon law, and it was this line of argument that Henri used to try to persuade Pope Paul IV to 'declare Queen Elizabeth illegitimate, and, as it were, of incestuous birth and consequently incapable of succeeding to the throne'.[2] The credibility of his argument, however, would be seriously undermined if the Queen of Scots' subjects were seen to favour Protestantism and, worse still, if the Scottish government was seen to

---

[1] Lesley, *History*, pp. 268-9.

[2] [December 1558], *CSP Rome*, 2, p.1.

accommodate them in their heretical beliefs.[1] That Scotland should remain a kingdom favourable to Catholicism and a faithful adherent to the Holy See, therefore, was pivotal if Henri was to receive papal support for his daughter-in-law's claim and, more importantly, realise his dynastic ambitions within the archipelago. Although Henri never received the papal support he so desired, Marie de Guise's religious proclamation of 23 March 1558/9 can nevertheless be seen as part of Henri's international campaign to strengthen Mary Stewart's Catholic claim to the English succession.[2]

---

[1] After the outbreak of the Reformation Rebellion, Henri, Mary and François wrote to Pope Paul IV seeking financial assistance, papal intervention and, more importantly, to absolve themselves of any responsibility for their tolerance of heresy and growth of Protestantism in their respective kingdoms. In his letter of 29 June 1559, Henri went so far as to blame the pope for the troubles in Scotland on account of the latter's failure to provide a remedy for the degenerative state of the Church. 'Having long foreseen the incredible disaster which has since befallen the realm of Scotland', he wrote, 'we have many and divers time heretofore written and made most instant request to you Holiness, that it might be your good pleasure to commit and delegate some good virtuous and notable personage among the prelates of that kingdom, such as our most dear and well-beloved good sister and cousin the queen dowager of this Scotland could well choose and select to introduce and establish some wholesome, holy and devout reform in the Church, correct, bridle and temper the corrupt customs, the depraved and dissolute lives of the said prelates and ecclesiastical ministers, who already begin to fall away very much and degenerate'. *Papal Negotiations*, pp. 17, xxviii-xxix, 13-20; NLS, Adv.MSS, 54.1.2(ii), fos. 6-7^{r}; Ribier, *Lettres et Mémoires*, II, p.808; P. Hume Brown, *John Knox* (London, 1895), II, Appendix B, pp. 300-2.

[2] Henri's appeals to the Court of Rome were no doubt enhanced by his own commitment to extirpate heresy in France. While this was cited as a premise for the peace of Câteau-Cambrésis, Henri's declared intent to combat the Huguenot movement did not begin in earnest until the summer of 1559. In late May, Throckmorton reported that, 'The French King ... minds to make a journey to Poictou, Gascoigne, Guienne, and other places for the repressing of religion, and to use the extremist persecution he may against the Protestants in his countries and like in Scotland, and that with celerity'. It was only with the outbreak of the Reformation Rebellion in Scotland that Henri's declarations against heresy became more extremist in nature. On 3 July, Henri wrote to his ambassador in Rome that, '... I'espere bien, puisque Dieu m'a donné la paix, d'employer le temps, et ce qu i'auray de force en main à faire punir, chastiser et extirper tous ceux qui se trouveront imitateurs de ces nouvelles Doctrines, sens y épargner personne, de quelque qualité or dignité qu'ils soient'. Despite the projections of contemporary observers, such as Étiènne Pasquier, that as soon as the Valois-Habsburg peace was contracted, '...Monsieur le cardinal de Lorraine declara en plein Parlement, que l'opinion du Roy avoit esté de la faire a quelque prix et condition que ce fust pour de la en avant vacquer à son aise à l'extermination et banissment de l'heresie de Calvin' and, similarly, that 'Le Roy resolut, a quelque prix que ce fúst, de faire la paix en deliberation de s'armer contre les Heretiques de son Royaume', Henri's threats of extremist persecution did not translate into effective action. *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 732, 823, 833, pp. 272, 301, 308-11; Ribier, *Lettres et Mémoires*, II, p.806; É. Pasquier, *Les Oeuvres d'Estienne Pasquier, countenant ses recherches de la France* (Amsterdam, 1723), II, pp. 77, 450; Dickinson (ed.), 'Report by de la Brosse and d'Oysel on conditions in Scotland, 1559-60', *SHS Misc.*, IX, pp. 85-6.

Another cause for concern for Henri and Marie de Guise was the possibility that Elizabeth's own religious sympathies would result in a Protestant religious settlement in England. The prospect of yet another Protestant English monarch serving as the *foci* of support for discontented Scottish reformers eager to revive the arguments in favour of Anglo-Scottish Protestant union or for disaffected Scots opposed to the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance, posed a significantly greater threat to French interests in Scotland than the Anglo-Imperial dynastic and *Catholic* alliance had done during the reign of Mary Tudor. For, as time would ultimately reveal, this threat would not only come from England, but also from within Scotland itself.[1] The Elizabethan religious settlement, therefore, was eagerly anticipated by Catholics and Protestants alike – its outcome not only had the potential to change the political map of the British Isles, but of Europe as a whole.

Unsurprisingly, Elizabeth's first Parliament (assembled on 25 January 1558/9) was overwhelmingly concerned with the highly contentious matter of religion. Strong opposition from the Lords to the proposed restoration of the Acts of Supremacy and Uniformity, as they had been during the reigns of Henry VIII and Edward VI, delayed the final settlement until May 1559.[2] The question throughout the spring of 1559, therefore, was not whether England would break from Rome, but the extent to which the

---

[1] In their letter to Pope Paul IV, Mary and François cited the Elizabethan religious settlement as one reason for the outbreak of the Reformation Rebellion in Scotland. They claimed they needed a papal subsidy for the 'soustenement et deffence de l'eglise Romaine contre les nouvelles sectes qui commancerent lors a seslever au dict Royaulme par le moyen de leurs voisins suivant l'eglise changee en Angleterre'. NLS, Adv.MSS, 54.1.2(ii), f.6[r]; Brown, *John Knox*, II, p.301.

[2] See, for example, Sir Simonds d'Ewes, *The Journals of all the Parliaments during the reign of Queen Elizabeth, Both of the House of Lords and House of Commons* (London, 1682), pp. 37-56; N.L. Jones, 'Elizabeth's First Year: The Conception and Birth of the Elizabethan Political World' in C. Haigh (ed.), *The Reign of Elizabeth I* (London, 1989), pp. 36-9, 43-8.

Elizabethan Church would be a reformed church. All speculation ended when, on 8 May, the Elizabethan Acts of Uniformity and Supremacy received Parliamentary sanction in both the Commons and the Lords.[1] With the restoration of the Edwardian *Book of Common Prayer and the Administration of Sacraments*, and 'to the Crown the ancient jurisdiction over the state ecclesiastical and spiritual', England once again became a Protestant kingdom and, in doing so, irrevocably changed the dynamics of Scottish politics.[2]

By May 1559, Scotland's Protestants had become decidedly more assertive in their demands for religious reform. Elizabeth's accession and religious settlement no doubt played a part in this new found confidence, but so too did the return of John Knox to Scotland on 2 May 1559. Ending his exile on the Continent at the behest of Argyll, Lord Lorne, Glencairn, Morton and Erskine of Dun, Knox's return had an immediate impact on the progress of the reform movement in Scotland, even though he would have preferred to go to England.[3] Just four days after his return, the Congregation sent a letter to Marie de Guise expressing their dissatisfaction at her sudden *volte-face* and, in particular, her religious proclamation of 23 March 1558/9:

> ... now allace frustret of our howp to our greit hewines, we find the contrair, our lycht is changeit in myrknes, our myrth and joy in sorow and weping; ffor your letters proclamationis and the wordis dalie pronuncit of your awin mowthe, dois altogidder mak for the downputting of Godis gloir, his wird, and trew wirschiping, and to menten and to authoreis the idolatrie and abhominatioun of the Roman Antichrist.[4]

---

[1] 1559: 1 Eliz. I, c. 1 & 2, *Statutes of the Realm*, IV, pp. 350-5, 355-8.

[2] 1552: 5 & 6 Ed. VI, c.1 and 1559: 1 Eliz. I, c.1, *ibid*, IV, pp. 130-1, 350-5.

[3] It was following his successful preaching tour in Scotland that Knox was invited to return in November 1558. Knox, *Works*, I, p. 274 and *History*, I, pp. 137, 161, 139 *n.*3.

[4] 'Appendix to the Dun Papers', *Spalding Misc.*, IV, p.88.

Of greater significance was the Congregation's latent threat that if Guise persisted in making 'ordinance aganis the word of God … we of necessitie man disobey your ordinance'.[1] Whilst it is unknown whether Knox actually penned this letter himself, his influence on the Congregation's language and ideology is beyond question. Espousing Knox's covenanting ideology and theory of armed resistance, the Congregation's epistle clearly reflected their perceived duty as the elect bound in 'league and covenant' to the divine will. As such, they were constrained to disobey Guise as the constituted temporal authority, if her laws contradicted those of God as revealed in Scripture.[2] Written just days before Paul Methven, John Christison, William Harlaw and John Willock were scheduled to appear before the Queen Regent at Stirling on 10 May, the Congregation's letter not only justified the Protestant preachers' act of defiance in failing to observe Guise's religious proclamation, but was also a poignant foreshadowing of things to come.

It was in support of the summoned preachers that a multitude of Protestants, including John Knox, assembled in Perth during the first week of May. According to Knox, this multitude, comprised of men from 'the toune of Dundy, [and] the gentilmen of Anguss and Mearnis', was '…without armour, as peciable men, mynding onlie to geve confessioun with thare preachearis'.[3] But for the Queen Regent, this assembly was an alarming prospect – especially since it was their declared intention to accompany their preachers to Stirling. Showing her proclivity for accommodation rather than

---

[1] *Spalding Misc.*, IV, p.90.

[2] Mason, 'Covenant and Commonweal', pp. 98-101.

[3] Knox, *Works*, I, p.317 and *History*, I, p.160.

persecution, Guise asked Erskine of Dun 'to wret to those that ... war assembled at Sanct Johnestoun, to stay, and nott to come fordwarte', which Knox claims was taken to include the summoned preachers.[1] In light of the Congregation's letter, however, this 'misunderstanding' could just as easily be interpreted as an open and deliberate act of defiance. Whatever the intent, the subsequent non-appearance of the preachers prompted Guise, with justification, to give 'commandiment to putt thame to the horne, inhibiting all men under pane of thare rebellioun to assist, conforte, receave, or mayntenne thame in any sorte'.[2]

This assembly at Perth was also a cause for concern for Guise because of the threat contained within the 'Beggars Warning'.[3] Throughout January 1558/9, a summons appeared 'upon the gaittis and ports of all the Freiris places'. Written in the name of the 'Blynd, Cruked, Bedrelles, Wedowis, Ophelingis, and all uther Pure ... as may not worke', this proclamation sought to effect the 'Restitutioun of Wranges bypast, and Reformatioun in Tyme Cuming' – namely, by ordering the Friars to surrender their property so that the poor, 'the onelie lawfull proprietaris thairof may enter thairto, and efterward injoye thai commodities of the Kyrk, quhilke ye have heirunto wranguslie halden fra us'.[4] The day of eviction, or 'flitting Friday', fell on 12 May 1559 and coincided, rather unfortunately for Guise, with the scheduled appearance of the four preachers and their subsequent denunciation as rebels on 10 May.[5] The existence of a

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, p.318 and *History*, I, p.160.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 318-9 and *History*, I, pp. 160-1; Pitcairn, *Trials*, I.i, pp. 406-7; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 710, pp. 263-4; *CSP Scots.*, I, 455, pp. 212-3.

[3] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 320-1 *n.*1 and *History*, II, Appendix V, pp. 255-6.

[4] Knox, *Works*, I, p.321 and *History*, II, p.256.

[5] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 320-1 and *History*, I, p.162; Donaldson, *James V-James VII*, p.92.

mob of extremist Protestants none too pleased with the Queen Regent added a new element of danger to the threat that, if the Friars did not meet their demands and surrender their properties, they would, 'at the said terme, [and] in haile number .... enter and tak possessioun of our said patrimony, and eject yow utterlie furthe of the same'.[1] True to their word, the Protestants assembled at Perth ran 'without deliberatioun to the Gray and Blak Freris' after having been suitably inspired by John Knox's sermon 'vehement against idolatrie' on 11 May. In the iconoclasm that followed these religious houses were attacked, spoiled and utterly destroyed.[2]

***

Upon hearing of the destruction in Perth, Marie de Guise immediately summoned the nobility and began making preparations to assert her authority and that of the Scottish Church through a visible display of force.[3] Her decision to respond to this tumult militarily, however, is not evidence of her proclivity for religious persecution. As we have seen, international and national events culminating in the month of May, forced Guise to take an increasingly harder line in matters of religion. Moreover, for Guise, the aims of the Congregation's revolt in Perth were not as they professed. Rather than a revolt of conscience in defence of the true faith, she perceived the Congregation's insurgent activity as 'nothing bot a rebellioun' directed against the established

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, p.321 and *History*, II, p.256.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 322-3 and *History*, I, pp. 162-3. The White Friars were also victims. According to one commentator, the Protestants targeted the Abbey of the Charter-House and 'pullit the hoill place downe, alsweill the Kirk thairof as uther housses, and all the coastlie bigginis quhilkis was maid be King James the First' in 1429. Lesley, *History*, p.272.

[3] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 324-5 and *History*, I, p.163; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 728, 743, pp. 268-9, 278; *CSP Scot.*, I, 457, p.213.

authority.[1] The dictum *cuius regio, eius religio* was fast becoming a commonplace idiom in Reformation Europe, and Guise, like Henri, believed that the religion of their subjects should be that of their sovereigns. Any challenge to the established Church was seen as a challenge to the temporal authority and, as such, political sedition. But, as a politique whose dynastic interests took precedence over her own religious convictions, Guise had shown a considerable degree of toleration towards the reform movement. The relationship she had established with her Protestant subjects – namely, one of mutual accommodation – moved her to perceive the Congregation's revolt exclusively in political terms. Throughout their rebellion, she consistently maintained that the Congregation 'intended not religioun, bot the subversioun of authoritie'.[2]

This questioning of motives ultimately gave the Queen Regent an edge over the Congregation in the war of words that continued between the two sides throughout 1559 - especially when the Congregation's actions began to substantiate her contentions. As

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, p.324 and *History*, I, p.163.

[2] D. Calderwood, *The History of the Kirk of Scotland*, T. Thomson (ed.), (Wodrow Society, 1842-9), I, p.433. See similar comments that the Congregation 'pretended no religion, but a plain revolt from the Authority' in Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 324, 363-4, 397-9 and *History*, I, pp. 163, 193-4, 217-9. Only when seeking intervention from Pope Paul IV did Henri, Guise, Mary and François speak of the Congregation's rebellion in religious terms. The nobles and the third estate were described as 'seditious and scandalously insolent against religion', having 'certain apostate preachers of the learning or doctrine of Geneva to exhort, and induce the people to follow their damnable errors and heresies, whence the greater part of the said people is entirely infected and as it were lost. They constrain every one to follow their sect, wreck churches and monasteries, profane holy things, burn publicly the statues and pictures of the saints with their holy relics and bones. They have disinterred the bodies of the kings of Scotland, whom they have in like manner burnt and reduced to ashes; they have taken off and changed the habits of monks and nuns to make them become seculars and leave and abandon their orders and professions, boasting and bragging of attacking and bearing down the queen and all others who would oppose and refuse to join their new league, in such sort that cruel savages could not do worse'. With French military intervention, Henri hoped that the King and Queen Dauphin and the Queen Regent 'will overcome these heretics and schismatics, and force and power will be in their hands to chastise and punish their great temerity and arrogance, for the honour of the Creator, the exaltation of His Holy Name, and the increase of our holy faith and religion'. *Papal Negotiations*, pp. 17-8; NLS, Adv.MSS, 54.1.2(ii), fos. 6-7[r]; Ribier, *Lettres et Mémoires*, II, p.808; Brown, *John Knox*, II, pp. 300-2.

Roger Mason points out, 'If credibility be ranked among the most treasured assets of any political movement, then it was the Congregation's singular misfortune that from the very outset their motives were questioned and their professed aims scoffed at and derided'.[1] Perhaps because Guise did not see the Congregation's revolt in religious terms, she did not employ a policy of persecution nor abandon her policy of accommodation towards the reformers. Instead, she continued to use notable Protestants such as John Erskine of Dun, Lord James Stewart and Archibald, 5th earl of Argyll, in the hope of suppressing the Congregation's revolt.

We have already seen how Marie de Guise tried to 'stay' the multitude in Perth through the intervention of Erskine of Dun, whom Knox described as 'a zealous, prudent, and godly man ... most addict to please hir in all thingis not repugnant to God'.[2] During the initial stages of the rebellion, Guise also relied on the services of Lord James and Argyll to try to restore order through peaceful means. While Châtelherault and d'Oisel's troops were on standby in Auchterarder, Guise sent Argyll, Lord James and Lord Sempill (an ardent Catholic whom Knox described as 'a man sold under syne, enymye to God and to all godlynes'), to meet with representatives of the Congregation.[3] Their first task was to inquire as to the nature of the Congregation's armed occupation of Perth. In the two weeks that had elapsed since the iconoclasm first began, the situation in Perth had taken a more serious turn with the arrival of Glencairn

---

[1] Mason, 'Covenant and Commonweal', p.112.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 317-8 and *History*, I, p. 160.

[3] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 341, 339 and *History*, I, pp. 175, 173.

and a small contingent of lesser nobles in support of the Congregation.[1] The extent of Glencairn's reinforcements, however, was not substantial (numbering somewhere in the region of 2,500 men)[2] and should not be taken as a sign that Marie de Guise faced a groundswell of opposition from the nobility or the Protestant community at large.[3] Rather, support for the Congregation at this point was minimal and localised in nature. Glencairn was the only magnate of significance willing to risk his lands, liberty and life for the 'caus of religioun'.[4] Most of the gentry and leading reformers were still firmly in the Queen Regent's camp. As Sir James Croft observed, because 'a great number of those that rise with the Queen being of that religion that the other faction is, being also of kindred and alliance', it was his opinion that 'the matter will fall to some other appointment without battle'.[5]

---

[1] Glencairn was accompanied by the Lords Ochiltree and Boyd, Matthew Campbell of Loudon, John Wallace of Craigie, George Campbell of Cessnock, Hugh Wallace of Carnell, John Lockhart of Barr, James Chalmer of Gadgirth. Knox, *Works*, I, p.340 and *History*, I, p.175; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 822, 833, pp. 301, 308-11; *CSP Scot.*, I, 464, p.215.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, p.341 and *History*, I, p.175; Sanderson, *Ayrshire and the Reformation*, pp. 98-9.

[3] Upon hearing that Guise had summoned the nobility for the purpose of confronting them militarily, the Congregation hastily wrote a letter 'To the Nobilitie of Scotland', in which they earnestly required their 'moderatioun, and that ye stay your selfis, and the furye of utheris, from [the] persecuting of us'. Penned in the language of the covenant and espousing Knox's theory of armed resistance, the Congregation took great pains to stress the 'difference betuix the authoritie quhiche is Goddis ordinnance, and the personis of those whiche ar placit in the authoritie'. God's law was infallible, and if the nobility persecuted the Congregation for following God's will as revealed in Scripture, 'blynd zeale, nather yit the colour of authoritie' would excuse them in the eyes of God. Rather, it was the nobility's duty to 'defend innocentis, and to brydle the fury and raige of wicked men, wer it Princes or Emperouris'. And, as a foretaste of the patriotic stance they would later adopt, the Congregation played on the fact that, if the nobility carried out the will of the constituted temporal authority, namely, Marie de Guise, they would be doing so against their 'naturall cuntriemen'. Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 329-34 and *History*, I, pp. 167-71; Mason, *Knox: On Rebellion*, pp. 152-6.

[4] As Knox himself admitted, support for the Congregation in Perth came only from the brethren of Fife, Angus [Dundee], Mearns, Cunningham and Kyle. Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 335-6, 327 and *History*, I, 171, 165.

[5] *CSP Scot.*, I, 457, p.213; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 728, pp. 268-9.

Yet the reality of the situation was that Perth was a town under siege, and the Congregation's assurances of 22 May 1559 did little to convince Guise that theirs was simply a revolt of conscience or that their promise of 'all humill obedience' was sincere.[1] Argyll, Lord James and Sempill's prime directive on 24 May was 'to inquire the caus of that convactioun of liegis' in Perth and, more importantly, if the Congregation 'myndit nocht to hold that town against the authoritie, and against the Quene Regent'.[2] The response to this question did little to assure the Queen Regent. With Knox as their spokesperson, the Congregation reiterated their assurances of obedience, while simultaneously pledging to 'tak the sweard of just defence aganis all that should persew us for the mater of religioun'.[3] Upon hearing Knox's reply, Guise immediately issued letters to her Lyon-King at Arms, Robert Forman, charging all men to avoid Perth on pain of treason.[4] No military force, however, was used to enforce this proclamation; Guise was still determined to reach some sort of agreement with the Congregation and restore the burgh to a state of obedience peacefully.[5]

With the law and the majority of leading reformers still behind the Queen Regent, Knox knew that for the Congregation to succeed more support was needed – particularly from high-ranking members of the nobility such as Lord James and Argyll. The problem facing Knox was that these two nobles had bound themselves to the

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 326-7 and *History*, I, pp. 164-5; Mason, *Knox: On Rebellion*, pp. 149-51.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, p.337 and *History*, I, p.173.

[3] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 339, 326 and *History*, I, pp. 173, 164; Mason, *Knox: On Rebellion*, pp. 149-50.

[4] Knox, *Works*, I, p.340 and *History*, I, p.175.

[5] In his *History*, Knox lets slip that an 'appointment' was what Guise 'required' at Perth – contradicting his inferences that the Regent's true intention was to persecute the Congregation and suppress them by force. Knox, *Works*, I, p.341 and *History*, I, p.175.

Regent, promising 'to laubour for concord, and to assist the Quene' against the Congregation if the latter refused to act reasonably and accept Guise's offer to negotiate a settlement.[1] Despite his attempts to goad Lord James and Argyll into breaking with the Regent by accusing them of 'infidelitie, in sa fer as thay had defrauded thair brethering of thair debtfull support and confort in thair gretest necessitie', honour prevented them from doing so.[2] Honour, however, worked both ways and Knox claims that Lord James and Argyll promised to side openly with the Congregation if, having concluded some sort of appointment with the Regent, 'the Quene did break in ony joit thairof'.[3] Whatever the premise, the negotiations that ensued culminated in the Perth Agreement of 29 May 1559. It was agreed that both armies would disband and leave Perth open to the Queen Regent; that none of the inhabitants would be molested on account of the late alteration in religion; that no Frenchmen would enter or be left to garrison the town when Guise retired; and finally, that all other controversies would be referred to the next Parliament.[4] Guise's success in reducing Perth to obedience through diplomacy without having to resort to force, however, was short-lived and ultimately lost her the crucial support of Argyll and Lord James. Upon entering Perth the next day, Guise immediately restored the Mass, replaced Lord Ruthven as Provost with a more faithful adherent to the crown, the Laird of Kinfauns, and upon leaving the burgh, maintained a garrison of four Scottish companies there in French pay.[5] Guise's

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, p.343 and *History*, I, p.177.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, p.343 and *History*, I, p.177.

[3] Knox, *Works*, I, p.343 and *History*, I, p.177.

[4] *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 784, p.289.

[5] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 347-8 and *History*, I, pp. 179-80; Donaldson, *James V–James VII*, p.93; Lee, *James Stewart*, p.39.

perceived contravention of the Perth Agreement cost her dearly. The subsequent defection of Argyll and Lord James to assume the nominal leadership of the Congregation was a devastating blow to the Queen Regent and must have surely reinforced her perception of the rebellion as one against the established authority.

Why these two notable reformers switched allegiances is open to speculation and slightly bemusing given that, just days before, Knox claims they were firmly on side with the Regent and convinced that the Congregation 'ment nothing bot rebellioun'.[1] Knox purports that they remained loyal to the Queen Regent because she desired peace, but Guise had not resorted to violence at any time during the revolt or in her actual violation of the Perth Agreement.[2] Equally perplexing is the fact that the Perth riots had secured very little support for the Congregation – especially from the nobility. The Second Band of the Congregation (31 May 1559) had only six subscribers, four of whom were new: Lord James, Matthew Campbell of Teringland, and the Lords Boyd and Ochiltree.[3] If the opposite had been true, and the Congregation was perceived as the winning side, as it would start to after England entered the conflict in January-February 1559/60, Lord James and Argyll's defection would be more understandable.

A slightly more sinister analysis emerges, however, if Knox's version of events is accurate. Knowing that Guise was bent on peace and that Argyll and Lord James

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, p.341 and *History*, I, pp. 175-6. In their negotiations with the Congregation, Knox writes that Argyll and Lord James 'had promesed to laubour for concord, and to assist the Quene, in case we refuised ressonable offerris, of conscience and honour, thay culd no na less than be faithfull in thair promeise maid'. But, as Maurice Lee points out, the terms of the Perth Agreement were far too favourable to the Congregation for Guise to abide by them permanently. Knox, *Works*, I, p.343 and *History*, I, p.177; Lee, *James Stewart*, p.36.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 337-8 and *History*, I, pp. 175-6; Lee, *James Stewart*, p.36.

[3] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 344-5 and *History*, I, pp. 178-9; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 799, p.296. Glencairn and Argyll were the only two subscribers to the 'First' and 'Second' Bands of the Congregation.

would break from the Regent if she violated any part of the agreement, it is possible that Knox entered into negotiations not with the intent of reaching a peaceful settlement, but rather to provide a pretext for Lord James and Argyll's defection. Although there is no evidence to substantiate such a theory, it is significant that it was only because of Lord James and Argyll's promise that Knox consented to negotiate with Guise in the first place.[1] Moreover, it was widely recognised that the terms of the Perth Agreement were decidedly favourable to the Congregation – too favourable for Guise to keep for any substantial length of time.[2] Knox was fully aware of this and preached a sermon on the day of the agreement, in which he predicted with a great deal of confidence that, 'I am assured, that no pairt of this promeise maid shalbe longar keipit than the Quene and hir Frenchemen have the upper hand'.[3] While Maurice Lee and Jane Dawson contend that Lord James and Argyll sided with the Congregation because Guise, as her violation of the Perth Agreement clearly demonstrated, never had any intention of honouring her declarations of peace, it might also be said that Knox's pugnacity and determination to secure the support of Lord James and Argyll ensured that no settlement with the Queen Regent could be permanent.[4] With Guise's subsequent demands for their return dismissed,[5] Argyll and Lord James went on to become the *de facto* leaders of the

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, p. 343 and *History*, I, p.177.

[2] Lee, *James Stewart*, p.38.

[3] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 343-4 and *History*, I, p.178.

[4] Lee, *James Stewart*, pp. 37, 39; Dawson, 'Protestantism and the Anglo-Scottish Alliance, 1558-60' in her forthcoming monograph on Archibald Campbell, 5th earl of Argyll. See also Argyll and Lord James' letter to the Queen Regent dated 15 June 1559 in Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 356-7 and *History*, I, pp. 187-8.

[5] Knox, *Works*, I, p.347 and *History*, I, p.180.

Congregation until Châtelherault and his son, Arran, assumed nominal control in September 1559.[1]

***

As the Congregation's systematic campaign of iconoclasm continued throughout June and July, news of the Queen Regent's troubles soon reached the shores of France and became a topic of concern at the French Court. On 7 June, Throckmorton informed Cecil that the Cardinal de Lorraine, the King and Queen Dauphin and the Duc de Guise, '... have had great consultation of Scotland, wherein, as yet, they have fallen to no determination. They are in doubt what to do and whom to send thither, being greatly perplexed with the news brought thence to the Court'.[2] Although military intervention was high on the list of considerations, the general uncertainty as to what was actually going on and, in particular, as to the motives behind the Congregation's rebellion resulted in an initial reluctance to send reinforcements. Amidst this uncertainty, they advised the Queen Regent 'to tolerate them [the Congregation] for a time till they ... may overcome these great matters here and so to take order accordingly'.[3] In the interim, Sir James Melville of Halhill was to be sent on a fact-finding mission to Scotland. His instructions clearly reveal Henri's private reservations about sending troops to Scotland, despite his public declarations and assurances to the contrary.[4]

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 413-4 and *History*, I, pp. 229-30; *Sadler Papers*, I, pp. 455-7; Stevenson, *Documents*, pp. 73-5.

[2] *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 826, pp. 304-6.

[3] *Ibid*, 826, pp. 304-6.

[4] The reliability of Melville as a witness should not be dismissed simply because he recounts the nature of his commission in his *Memoirs*. While the discussions he had with Henri and Montmorency may not be verbatim, there is no reason to doubt the veracity of the professed aims of his mission to Scotland.

Melville had been assured that Henri 'myndit to wair and [to] hazard his crown, and all that he has, rather or your Quen want hir rycht, now seing that sche is maried vpon his son; and purposis to raise and send ane armye in Scotland for that effect'.[1] However, there were several factors preventing him from doing so. The most notable of these was 'that his Maieste hes hed wairres lang anough with his auld ennemys, and agreed with them for gud respectis, his is laith till enter again in a new vnnecessary wair with his auld frendis'.[2] Apart from the obvious financial and diplomatic considerations, Henri's reluctance to support Marie de Guise militarily was primarily because he was unsure as to whether such intervention was justified. What, exactly, was the nature of the civil unrest in Scotland and why had it erupted? Was the Congregations' rebellion a revolt of conscience or was it politically motivated? Was Marie de Guise an innocent bystander or had she acted dishonourably towards her subjects, thereby inciting them to rebel? Many questions needed to be answered before Henri was prepared to translate his words into decisive action.

Melville's principal duty was to investigate the events surrounding Lord James' defection to the Congregation. As the bastard son of James V, Lord James' tergiversation sparked fears, particularly in the Guise camp of the French Court, that he intended 'vnder pretext of this new religion, [to] vsurp the crown of Scotland, and pluk it clean away from the Quen'.[3] Simultaneous reports that the Queen Regent had broken her word and violated the Perth Agreement, however, added an altogether new

---

[1] Melville, *Memoirs*, p.79.

[2] *Ibid*, p.79.

[3] *Ibid*, pp. 78, 80.

dimension to the situation in Scotland.[1] Melville was thus commissioned to determine whether Lord James had designs on the crown or 'gene he be mouit to tak armes only of conscience, for deffence of his religion, him self and his dependers and associatis', what promises to Lord James and the Congregation had been broken, by whom and at whose instance.[2] Unlike Marie de Guise and d'Oisel, Henri was willing to concede that the Congregation's revolt might be religiously motivated.[3] If that was indeed the case, he was powerless to do anything about it for, 'Gif it be only religion that moues them, we mon commit Scottismens saules vnto God; for we haue anough ado to reull the consciences of our awen contre men'.[4] Rather, it was 'the obedience dew vnto ther lawfull Quen with ther bodyes' that the King desired, but again, Henri's hands were tied if Guise refused to keep her promises.[5] In short, the uncertainty surrounding what lay behind the Congregation's rebellion prevented Henri from intervening in support of Marie de Guise – especially in light of the reports that suggested she was not entirely blameless. Instead, Henri chose to place his faith in the Scots and the 'auld alliance', not wanting 'to geue haisty credence, that Scotland, wha haue keped salang frendschip

---

[1] Melville, *Memoirs*, p.79.

[2] *Ibid*, pp. 78, 80.

[3] See d'Oisel's letter of 14 June 1559 to Gilles de Noailles, the new French ambassador resident in England, in which he writes that Argyll, Lord James and the Congregation 'disent que c'est pour la Religion Et de faict ilz ont des predicantz avec Eulx Gens de Mauvaise & dangereuse doctrine. Mais je cuyde qu'ilz ont autre desseing en l'esprit & n'y a autre apparence. ... Ilz disent bien qu'ilz veulent estre obeyssants a leurs Roy & Royne, mais il ne s'en void sortir effect du monde qui n'y soit du contraire, prenans Les armes tous les jours, pillant & destruissant les Abbayes ça et la'. AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, f.257; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 310-11 and *Relations*, I, pp. 318-9.

[4] Melville, *Memoirs*, p.80.

[5] *Ibid*, p.80.

with France, will now sa leichtly brek the auld band, nor abandon deute to ther lawfull prince'.[1]

This was a far cry from the offensive stance taken by the King in his supplication to Paul IV for a papal subsidy to finance his intended military campaign in Scotland.[2] Blaming the troubles on the internal degeneration of the Scottish Church and the heretical learning and doctrine of Geneva, Henri characterised the Congregation's rebellion in exclusively religious terms, making only a passing reference to the 'bragging of attacking and bearing down the queen and all others who would oppose and refuse to join their new league'.[3] Henri's position on the matter was clear, and conveyed none of the personal reservations he had as to the cause and nature of the rebellion nor, significantly, what France's response should be. Rather, he had resolved:

> ... to send immediately to Scotland a large and sufficient force or posse of French soldiers, both infantry and cavalry, with the hope of sending more after them very shortly, and of increasing and strengthening them with another large company or army, if need shall be; not intending to spare anything in sustaining and defending the cause of God, even though we have but just concluded a long war to enter on peace, after having borne and suffered an incredible expense as everyone knows. But our confidence is in God who in signally offended at this wretched pest of ruffians. He will so provide our most dear and well-beloved son and daughter, the king and queen dauphin, and the queen dowager their mother, with our aid and succour, will overcome these heretics and schismatics, and force and power will be in their hands to chastise and punish their great temerity and arrogance, for the honour of the Creator, the exaltation of His Holy Name, and the increase of our holy faith and religion.[4]

---

[1] Melville, *Memoirs*, p.79.

[2] *Papal Negotiations*, pp. 13-20.

[3] *Ibid*, pp. 17-8.

[4] *Ibid*, p.18. See also contemporary English reports detailing France's planned military intervention, which were more than likely deliberate leaks out of the French Court in order to frighten the Congregation

In practice, however, Henri had opted for a policy of temporisation – a policy that was also, but not exclusively, favoured by François II during his short reign.

Following the death of Henri on 10 July 1559 from injuries sustained in a jousting tournament, France's new king, François, despatched another diplomatic envoy to Scotland with new instructions for Marie de Guise. Echoing those of 7 June, Guise was to proceed 'doulcement' against the Congregation.[1] Unlike the former missive, which advised Guise simply 'to tolerate them for a time', Béthencourt's commission included a specific plan of action for temporising with the Congregation. The most notable feature was an extensive letter writing campaign, whereby leading members of the Congregation were targeted and promised absolution for past offences if they repented and returned to their due obedience to the crown.[2] Lord James was one such member of the Congregation who received letters from both Mary and François.[3] Fair words and promises, however, failed to induce the Prior to repent, for in his words, 'my conscience perswaidis me in thir proceidingis to have done na thing aganeis God, nor

---

into submission and to deter the English from joining the conflict. *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 902, 928, 953, 962, pp. 346-8, 356, 365, 367-8; *CSP Scot.*, I, 486, p.223.

[1] Béthencourt's instructions (16 July 1559) are printed in L. Paris, *Négotiations, Lettres et Pièces Diverses Relative au Relative au Règne au François II* (Paris, 1841), p.12. See also *Papal Negotiations*, pp. xxxiii-iv, and *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1094, pp. 428-9.

[2] Béthencourt brought unaddressed letters from both Mary and François with him to Scotland; Guise was left to determine which members of the Congregation were to receive these letters and fill in the blanks accordingly. Paris, *Négotiations*, p.16; *Papal Negotiations*, pp. xxxiii-iv; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1149, p.457.

[3] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 27-8; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1004, p.385; Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 384-6 and *History*, I, pp. 208-9; *Papal Negotiations*, p.432. Melville must have got to the bottom of Lord James' defection, at least to the French Court's satisfaction, as both Mary and François' letters charge the Prior with being the self-proclaimed head, principal beginner and nourisher of the tumults.

the debtfull obedience torwartis your Hienes and the Queneis Grace my Soverane'.[1] As in the 'rough wooing', the distribution of patronage was also hoped to secure support for the Queen Regent. Béthencourt brought with him 20,000 *livres* to induce members of the Congregation to abandon their cause, but it is not known how this money was dispensed or to whom.[2]

Marie de Guise, however, had already made efforts to appease her Protestant subjects before Béthencourt's arrival in August 1559. As per her instructions of 7 June and despite their sustained campaign of iconoclasm, Guise was constrained to tolerate the Congregation, or at least give the appearance that she was doing so by granting conciliatory promises. On 1 July 1559, for example, Guise issued a proclamation outlining the various concessions she had allegedly made to the Congregation over the recent controversy in religion.[3] Written in the name of Mary and François, this pronouncement claimed that the Queen Regent:

> ... perceaving the seditious tumult rased by ane parte of the our liegis, naming thame selffis THE CONGREGATIOUN, who, under pretense of religioun, have putt thame salffis in armes; and .... for satisfeing of everie manis conscience, and pacifeing of the saidis trubles, had offerred unto thame to affix ane Parliament to be haldin in Januare nixt to cum, ... or sonnar, gyf that had pleased, for establissing of ane unversall ordour in matteris of religioun, be our advise and Estatis of our Realme; and in

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, p.387 and *History*, I, p.209. For Lord James' reply dated 12 August 1559, see AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.30; *Papal Negotiations*, pp. 433-4; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1184, pp. 468-9 and Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 386-7 and *History*, I, p.210.

[2] Paris, *Négotiations*, p.12; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1149, p.457. Rumours of Henri's Scottish policy had reached England even before Béthencourt had arrived in France. On 8 July, Cecil informed Sir James Croft that 'the Protestants there [in Scotland] shall be essayed with all fair promises first, next with money, and last with arms'. In the end, Cecil was right – this was exactly how France's intervention in Scotland developed. Elizabeth responded accordingly by sending Sir Ralph Sadler north with £3000 to counter the French offers. *Ibid*, 953, 1125, 1131, 1140, 1157, 1161, 1162, pp. 365, 450, 449, 453-4, 459-60, 460-1; *CSP Scot.*, I, 486, 520, 521, pp. 223, 241-2; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, fos. 319^{v}-20^{r}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 344-5 and *Relations*, I, pp. 348-9.

[3] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 363-5 and *History*, I, pp. 193-4; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 905, pp. 348-9.

> the meantyme, to suffer everie man to leaf at libertie of conscience, without truble, unto the tyme the said ordour war tackin be advise of our forsaid [Estates.] And at last, because it appeared mekle to stand upoun our burght of Edinburght, what maner of religioun thai wald sett up and use for the tyme; swa that na man mucht alledge that he was forsed to do against his conscience: Quhilk offer the Quenis Grace, ... was at all tymes , and yit is, ready to fulfill.[1]

This proclamation also served as an effective piece of propaganda in which Guise was able to launch a scathing attack on the Congregation by exposing the true aims of their rebellion. As they themselves had declared 'by oppin dead', the Congregation's military occupation of Edinburgh,[2] their suspected communication with England and, most damning of all, their seizure of the kingdom's coining irons at Holyrood on 21 July, were used by the Queen Regent to show how it was not 'religioun ... thai seak, bot onelie the subversioun of our authoritie'.[3] In light of such blatant acts of sedition, Mary and François charged all members of the Congregation to withdraw from Edinburgh under pain of treason, and for 'all and sindrie personis to leave thair cumpany, and adhear to our authoritie'. Those who failed to observe this royal proclamation were warned that they would be reputed and held as 'manifest traytouris to our Crowne'.[4]

Clearly, the main function of this proclamation was to discredit the Congregation by exposing the true aims of their rebellion as secular rather than religious. Guise's

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 363-4 and *History*, I, p.193. Knox strenuously denies that Guise made an offer to settle their religious differences before the Congregation demanded it.

[2] Following their voluntary withdrawal from Perth, and Guise's subsequent violation of the Perth Agreement, the Congregation mustered their forces at St Andrews. From there, they returned to Perth and re-took the burgh on 25 June 1559. The Congregation then made their way to Edinburgh by way of Stirling, entering there on 29 June. Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 347-62 and *History*, I, pp. 180-92; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 861, 862, 877, 878, pp. 319-20, 320-2, 331-5, 335-6; *CSP Scot.*, I, 469, 471, pp. 216-7; Donaldson, *James V-James VII*, pp. 93-4.

[3] Knox, *Works*, I, p.364 and *History*, I, p.193.

[4] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 364-5 and *History*, I, pp. 193-4. The Congregation issued a formal response to this proclamation on 2 July 1559. Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 365-6 and *History*, I, pp. 194-5; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559,* 925, p.355.

position was further strengthened by the concessions she had ostensibly granted to settle the religious controversy. While giving the impression that her conciliatory overtures were genuine, in reality, she had not conceded a thing. Guise's proclamation, therefore, enabled her to grant promises that she did not necessarily have to keep. This system of granting what were essentially 'empty promises' became the cornerstone of Guise's policy of toleration. Not only did they cast her in a favourable light, but they also bought time for reinforcements to arrive from France. It was presumably in the hope that French military intervention would materialise that Guise re-entered negotiations with the Congregation later that month.

These negotiations culminated in what would prove to be the highly contentious Leith Agreement of 23/4 July 1559.[1] Central to the agreement was the offer previously made by Guise to have the religious controversy settled by the Three Estates in Parliament, which was scheduled to convene on 10 January 1559/60. This provision gave both the Regent and the Congregation just under six months to procure military support from France and England respectively. For their part, the Congregation agreed to withdraw from Edinburgh and relinquish the coining irons they had seized at Holyrood. They also promised to render their due obedience to their sovereigns and refrain from further outbreaks of iconoclasm and assaults on the clergy until the meeting of the said Parliament. For her part, Guise promised that the inhabitants of Edinburgh

[1] For details of the negotiations at Leith and the agreement itself, see Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 374-81 and *History*, I, pp. 202-6; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559,* 1052, 1056, 1058, 1062, 1063/4, 1065, pp. 406-7, 408-9, 410, 411; *CSP Scot.*, I, 500, 503, 505, pp. 231-2, 233, 233-4; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, fos. 285, 303 and XIV, f.241; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 327-8, 329-32 and *Relations*, I, pp. 334-5, 335-7.

would be free to choose their own religion, having liberty of conscience, and that no interference nor harm would befall members of the Congregation or their preachers.

The effectiveness of Guise's attempts to stall the Congregation is not only evidenced by the tenor of Leith Agreement itself, but also, and more significantly, by the band concocted by the Congregation shortly thereafter on 1 August. Foreseeing 'the slycht of our adversaries, tending all maner of wayis to circumvene us' and in particular, the 'desait' of the Queen Regent, it was deemed necessary to prohibit individual members of the Congregation from communicating or meeting with Guise 'without consent of the rest, and commone consultatioun thairupoun ... swa that nathing sall proceid heirin without commune consent of us all'.[1] Ultimately, this was a tribute to Marie de Guise's political acumen and charisma. By forbidding individual members from speaking with the Regent, presumably out of fear that she would then persuade them to defect, the Congregation was inadvertently acknowledging the potential threat Guise alone posed to their cause and, perhaps, the precarious loyalty of some members to the Congregation. However, in light of the controversy that ensued surrounding the terms of the Leith Agreement, it was not the deceit of the Queen Regent, but that of Knox that was ultimately responsible for its undoing.

The terms of the Leith Agreement initially came into dispute with the arrival of French reinforcements in August and September 1559. Unbeknown to Guise, François had decided to send military reinforcements as a token gesture of support in July.[2]

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, p.382 and *History*, I, pp. 206-7; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1108, p.435.

[2] François to Noailles, 21 July 1559, AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XX, f.192. Béthencourt delivered this letter to Noailles on 30 July 1559 whilst en route to Scotland. Neither he nor François were aware that the Leith Agreement had been contracted when the decision to send troops had been made. *Brosse Missions*, pp. 164-5.

Although it was widely believed that the situation in Scotland justified full-scale military intervention,[1] financial constraints and the delicate international situation, particularly with England, constrained the young King of France to send only the bare minimum.[2] Temporising was still the preferred method at the French Court to combat the Congregation.[3] In August, Nicolas de Pellevé, bishop of Amiens, and Jacques de la Brosse were sent as envoys from the Courts of Rome and France respectively to try to effect a peaceful conclusion and bring the Regent all the comfort, counsel and aid that lay within their power.[4] In the meantime, d'Oisel was instructed to use the 'petites forces' that de la Brosse and, later, Octavien Brosso brought with them, to dispel the Scottish insurgents and defuse their designs until François could deploy the 'plus grandes' reinforcements Guise was promised would come with her next supplication to the French Court.[5] No sooner had Brosso arrived with the 'quatres premieres enseignes qu'il a pleu au Roy y faire passer', than he was immediately despatched back to France to update François on the continuing troubles in Scotland and to urge him 'faire haster le

---

[1] See, for example, AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, f. 314^{v}, XIV, f.239^{r} and XX, f.195; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 325-7, 340-3 and *Relations*, I, pp. 332-4, 345-8.

[2] François did not want to rock the boat with Elizabeth. Noailles was instructed to give Elizabeth and her Council ample warning of the French King's intentions to dispel any suspicion that these troops were intended for an attack against England. AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XX, f.192; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1118, 1143, 1151, 1187, 1190, 1255, 1270, pp. 444-5, 454-5, 458, 470-1, 476, 502, 507-8; *CSP Scot.*, I, 535, pp. 248-9.

[3] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, fos. 316^{r}, 319^{r}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 342-3 and *Relations*, I, pp. 347-8.

[4] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 130^{r}-53^{v}, and *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, fos. 319, 322^{v}-3^{r}; SRO, SP13/85; NLS, MSS, 3137, fos. 16-8; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 348-9, 349-50 and *Relations*, I, pp.352-3, 353-4; Labanoff, *Lettres*, I, pp. 70-2; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1187, 1190, 1274, pp. 470-1, 476, 508-9; Paris, *Négotiations*, p.15; Tytler, *History of Scotland*, IV, p.163. For details and analyses of de la Brosse's mission to Scotland in 1559-60 see *Brosse Missions*, pp. 175-271; Dickinson, 'Report by de la Brosse and d'Oisel', pp. 85-125; and J. de la Brosse, *Jacques de la Brosse 1485(?)-1562: Ses Missions en Écosse* (Paris, 1929), pp. 150-171.

[5] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, fos. 316^{r}, 319^{v}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 343, 344 and *Relations*, I, pp. 347-8, 348-9; CSP *Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1151, p.458; Paris, *Négotiations*, p.12.

reste de son secours'.[1] As the Congregation's rebellion developed and the situation in Scotland deteriorated, Guise became increasingly alarmed at the trickle of military aid coming out of France. Her urgent and desperate appeals for reinforcements to the King and her brothers seemed to fall on deaf ears – a fact that ultimately contributed to the collapse of Guise's régime in 1560 following England's formal entry into the conflict.[2]

While the relatively small number of troops sent from France was far from adequate in the eyes of Guise and d'Oisel, the arrival of 1,000 men in August and another 800 in September was more than enough for the Congregation to accuse Guise of violating the Leith Agreement.[3] According to the Congregation, the entry of new French troops into the kingdom had been expressly forbidden in the truce, which stipulated that, 'with all diligent speed the Frenchmen here present shall be sent away, and none other shall come in this realm without the consent of the whole nobility [and Parliament].'[4] Further condemnation followed when Guise decided to fortify and garrison Leith on 22 September 1559.[5] Again, the Congregation claimed that this contravened the article stipulating that Edinburgh was to be kept free of both Scottish and French garrisons.[6] While these articles were contained in the copies of the

---

[1] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, fos. 319^{v}-20, 322^{r} and *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.39; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.344 and *Relations*, I, pp. 348-9; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1355, p. 562.

[2] See, for example, Guise's letters of 19 and 22 September 1559 in AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 37^{r}-41^{r}.

[3] Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 342-3 and *Relations*, I, pp. 347-8; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, fos. 315^{v}-6^{r}; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1190, 1255, 1270, pp. 476, 502, 507-8; Donaldson, *James V-James VII*, p. 95; Mathieson, *Politics and Religion*, I, p.63.

[4] *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1056, pp. 408-9.

[5] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, fos. 322^{v}-4^{r} and *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.39; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 349-50 and *Relations*, I, pp. 353-4.

[6] *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1056, pp. 408-9; *CSP Scot.*, I, 505, pp. 233-4.

agreement sent to the English,[1] they were interestingly and conspicuously absent from Marie de Guise's, suggesting that the Congregation had altered the agreement to their favour.[2] Like the Perth Agreement, the Congregation's fabrication of these clauses seems to have been done with a view to gaining support. Having informed Sir James Croft of the terms of the agreement, William Kirkaldy of Grange added this personal note:

> They [the Congregation] believe that never a word will be kept of these promises on the Queen's side, and therefore have taken bonds of my Lord Duke [Châtelherault], the Earl of Huntly and the rest of the nobility on her side for the performance thereof. With this condition, that if she break any point thereof, they will renounce her obedience and join themselves with the party of the writer.[3]

Knowing that some form of French intervention was inevitable, the invention of certain clauses that the Queen Regent was bound to break would attract more support nationally. More importantly, it would also strengthen the Congregation's appeals for English military aid and justify their rebellion on an international scale by showing how Guise had broken her word yet again.[4]

As Guise did not know that François had determined to send troops until Béthencourt arrived with the news in August 1559, after the conclusion of the truce, it was imperative for her to counter the Congregation's charges and implement some form

---

[1] See, for example, the report sent to Sir James Croft by William Kirkaldy of Grange in *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1056, pp. 408-9, and *CSP Scot.*, I, 505, pp. 223-4. The same discrepancy also appeared in the two versions of the Congregation's proclamation of the appointment made on 25 July 1559. *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1062, 1063/4, p. 411; *CSP Scot.*, I, 503, p.233; Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 380-1 and *History*, I, pp. 205-6.

[2] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, fos. 285, 303 and XIV, f.241; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 327-8 and *Relations*, I, pp. 334-5.

[3] *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1056, pp. 408-9; *CSP Scot.*, I, 505, pp. 233-4.

[4] Lee, *James Stewart*, p. 46; A. Lang, *Knox and the Reformation*, (London, 1905), pp. 142-8.

of damage control. On 28 August, she issued a general proclamation defending and justifying the arrival of the first wave of French reinforcements.[1] Addressed to the Lords, Barons, Gentlemen and, as Knox terms them, the 'vulgar pepill' of the realm, this proclamation stressed that no violation of the Leith Agreement had occurred and that the current controversy was the result of the Congregation's 'interprysing' against the 'authoratie, and tennour of the said Appointment'.[2] Accusing them specifically of inventing and 'blawin abrod dyvers rumouris and evill brutis,' Guise asserted that there had been no stipulation in the compact that had 'communit or concludit to stope the sending in of Frensche men; as may cleirlie appeir be inspectioun of the said Appointmente', and denied unequivocally that the French were 'myndit to draw in greit forceis of men of weir furth of France, to suppress the libertie of this realme, oppres the inhabitantis thairof, and mak up straingaris with thair landis and goodis'.[3] Rather Guise, together with Mary and François, had nothing but a 'guid mynd' towards their Scottish subjects who, it was hoped, would not be led from their 'dew obedience' for there was held a 'moderlie luif towartis all' who showed themselves to be 'obedient subjectis'.[4] Condescending words like these, however, served only to reinforce the Congregation's emerging contention that Scotland was not destined to be an equal partner in the Franco-

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 397-9 and *History*, I, pp. 217-9; Mason, *Knox: On Rebellion*, pp. 157-9. The Queen Regent also embarked on an extensive letter writing campaign, sending letters to 'everie Lord, Barroun, and Gentilman' justifying, as in her proclamation, her actions and those of the French. Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 395-7 and *History*, I, p.215.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, p.397 and *History*, I, p.217; Mason, *Knox: On Rebellion*, p.157.

[3] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 397-8 and *History*, I, p.217; Mason, *Knox: On Rebellion*, p.157.

[4] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 398-9 and *History*, I, p.218; Mason, *Knox: On Rebellion*, p.158.

Scottish dynastic union of the crowns and brought to the fore the potential implications of the Valois-Stewart marriage for Scotland's independence.

Although the deaths of Marie de Guise and François in 1560 prevent us from knowing what plans France actually had for Scotland, namely, whether it would be coalesced, conquered or become the 'exampill of Brytanny', the Congregation nevertheless used the arrival of French troops, various other aspects of Guise's regency and the establishment of French power in Scotland as a whole, to infer that conquest was, indeed, the Queen Regent's true objective.[1] Their proclamation to the 'Nobilitie, Burghis, and Communitie of this Realme of Scotland'[2] was not simply another public apology for their rebellion - it signalled the emergence of the Congregation's as a 'patriotic' party.[3] By playing on the xenophobia of the Scots and instilling the fear of conquest by strangers, the Congregation became the self-proclaimed defenders of the true faith *and* the commonweal. Interestingly, it was Marie de Guise and not François and Mary, who was cited as the principal agent for France's alleged conquest of Scotland, whose aim was to place the Scots 'under the perpetuall servitude of

---

[1] As in Scotland, dynastic union was the pretext for Franco-Breton integration. As opposed to conquest, Anne of Brittany's successive marriages to Charles VIII and Louis XII of France resulted in the installation of a governor and the infiltration of Frenchmen into Breton institutions, such as the Court of Parliament and the Exchequer. Instead of imposing purely 'French' institutions, Brittany technically retained its cultural and institutional independence. Some Scots, such as the Earl of Argyll, feared that a similar fate was destined for Scotland in the Franco-Scottish dynastic union of the crowns. According to Archbishop Hamilton, Argyll was using France's military presence in Scotland and the occupation of certain of Scottish offices by Frenchmen to persuade the Scots that 'the France ar cumin in and sutin down in this realm to occupy it and to put furtht the inhabitantis tharoff, and siclik to occupy uther menis rowmes pece and pece, and to put avay the blud of the nobilitie'. *Scottish Correspondence*, cclxxxi, p.427 and *n.*1; McNeill, 'Discours', p.87.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 400-8 and *History*, I, pp. 219-28; Mason, *Knox: On Rebellion*, pp. 159-65.

[3] See Mason, 'Covenant and Commonweal', pp. 107-112, and Wormald, *Court, Kirk and Community*, pp. 118-9, for the ideology behind the Congregation's patriotism and their use of the concept and language of the commonweal.

strangearis'.[1] This was evidenced by the bringing in of French troops with their 'wyffis and bairneis' to occupy the Scots 'houssis and possessiouns' and 'ancient rowmeis and heritageis', the garrisoning of Scottish strongholds with French soldiers in times of peace, the most recent example being that of Leith, the Regent's exorbitant taxation and finally, her debasement of Scots coinage.[2] Rather than demonstrating Guise's 'motherlie cair ... [for] our communweath', these acts of the Regent revealed her true intention: to conquer Scotland and suppress its 'ancient lawis and liberteis'.[3] The Congregation's rebellion was no longer a Protestant revolt against Catholicism. It was now a 'patriotic' response to Guise dynasticism and the establishment of French power in Scotland.

The inherent problem with the Congregation's new platform, however, was that the establishment of French power had not come about as a result of Guise's regency, but rather as a result of the treaty of Haddington and the Franco-Scottish protectoral alliance. As we have seen in previous chapters, the establishment of French power, of which Guise's regency was but one aspect, occurred with the consent and/or at the behest of the Scottish political community. In effect, the Congregation was now rebelling against something the Scots' themselves had facilitated. More importantly, the Congregation was rebelling against the *possibility* and not the reality of conquest. Yet, despite these contradictions, the Congregation's association with patriotism was imperative if they had any chance of receiving the requested military aid from England

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, p.405 and *History*, I, p.223; Mason, *Knox: On Rebellion*, p.162.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 407-8 and *History*, I, pp. 224-6; Mason, *Knox On Rebellion*, pp. 163-5.

[3] Knox, *Works*, I, p.402 and *History*, I, p.221; Mason, *Knox: On Rebellion*, p.160.

and, in the short-term, justifying their suspension of Marie de Guise from the regency. Contrary to the Congregation's assertions, Guise's decision to fortify Leith was not a motiveless act of aggression or evidence of her overall plan to conquer the realm.[1] Rather, it came as a direct response to the return of James, 3rd earl of Arran, to Scotland and Châtelherault's subsequent defection to the Congregation on 19 September 1559.[2]

The return of Châtelherault's son and heir to Scotland to assume nominal control of the Congregation with his father, added a new, but not an entirely unexpected dimension to the Congregation's rebellion. Guise knew something was afoot when she learned that the Congregation had summoned a convention to meet at Stirling on 10 May. Her immediate response was to write to Châtelherault and her nobility, warning them that the Congregation was 'interprysing ... sum heycht purpoise aganis us, [and] our authoratie'.[3] She knew that Châtelherault's 'loyalty' was suspect at the best of times, and the very reason that his son and heir was in France to begin with was to act as surety for his support for the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance. Arran's escape from France in June 1559, therefore, had serious ramifications – especially for the Congregation.[4] Châtelherault would not break with the Regent until he could be sure

---

[1] See, for example, the Congregation's letter to the Regent dated 19 September 1559. Hearing that Guise's 'army of Frensche men' were about to fortify Leith without the consent of the 'Nobilitie and Counsale of this realme', the Congregation claimed that this would not only be a breach of the Leith Agreement, but also 'verray prejudiciall to the commun-wealth, and playne contrair to our ancient lawis and libertieis'. Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 413-4; and *History*, I, pp. 229-30; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1342, 1343, pp. 564-5.

[2] Knox, *Works*, I, p.413 and *History*, I, p.229; AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, fos. 322^{v}-3^{r}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 349-50 and *Relations*, I, pp. 353-4.

[3] Knox, *Works*, I, p.395 and *History*, I, p.216.

[4] *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 848, 868, 888, pp. 316, 327, 340-1; *CSP Scot.*, I, 465, p.215.

that his son had arrived safely in Scotland.[1] Until then, he could only promise the Congregation 'not to be ...[their] enemy'.[2] Arran's return was equally crucial in the Congregation's hope of gaining the formal support of Elizabeth I for their rebellion.

***

The Congregation's appeals for English military aid took on a new sense of urgency with the arrival of French reinforcements in the summer of 1559. For William Cecil, Elizabeth's secretary, the deployment of these troops served only to substantiate his long held contention that France was planning an invasion of England to advance the claim of Mary Stewart to the English succession. This, coupled with his notion of a united, Protestant British Isles, rendered Cecil more inclined than his mistress to support the Congregation.[3] In order to convince Elizabeth that intervention in Scotland was justified, Cecil not only stressed the immediate threat the establishment of French power in Scotland posed to Elizabeth's sovereignty and England's national security, but also used the 'sondry homagees done to this Crowne by the kinges of Scotland' to argue that 'england is of duty and in honour bound to preservve the realme of Scotland from such absolute Dominion of the french'.[4] On its own, Cecil's imperial and historical justification only managed to procure covert financial support for the Congregation's rebellion; full-scale military support would require the fulfilment of certain criteria on

---

[1] *CSP Scot.*, I, 466, 487, 525, pp. 216, 223, 242-3; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 888, 974, 1186, pp. 340-1, 372, 469-70.

[2] *CSP Scot.*, I, 525, p.243.

[3] For more on Cecil's notion of an Anglo-British Protestant Empire and his dealings with the Congregation, see Alford, *The Early Elizabethan Polity*, pp. 43-70; Dawson, 'William Cecil and the British Dimension of early Elizabethan foreign policy', *History*, 74 (1989), pp. 205-7; W. MacCaffrey, 'Elizabethan Politics: The First Decade, 1558-68', *Past and Present*, xxi (1963), pp. 26-7.

[4] BL Cotton MSS, Caligula B.x, f.86.

the part of the Congregation.[1] One such 'suggestion' was for the Congregation to emerge and establish themselves as a 'great council'. As the 'ancient blood of the realm', the Congregation would be the true and natural defenders of Scotland's ancient laws and liberties.[2] To legitimise this provisional government further, Cecil advised the Congregation to 'committ the Gouernance' of the realme to the 'nex heyres to the Croune ... the house of Hameltons'.[3] Only in this way could the Congregation effectively and legitimately oppose the Queen Regent and the 'Tyrannouse affection of fraunce'.[4] Châtelherault's position as second person in the realm coupled with his own dynasticism, provided the Congregation with a formidable defence against the potential usurpation of France and, more directly, against Marie de Guise and the Queen of Scots. If the French continued to act against the commonweal and threaten Scotland's ancient liberties and privileges, Arran could then be put forth as a suitable candidate for either the Regency or the throne.[5] Arran's return, therefore, was not only crucial in gaining Châtelherault's support for the Congregation, but also for the realisation of Cecil's notion of an Anglo-British and Protestant Empire.[6]

---

[1] Contained within 'A memoriall of certain pointes meete for restoring the Realme of Scotland to the Anncient Weal' in BL, Lansdowne MSS, 4, fos. 26^{r}-7^{r}; *CSP Scot.*, I, 537, pp. 249-50; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1297-99, pp. 518-9. See also, *ibid*, 1300, pp. 519-23, BL, Cotton MSS, Caligula B.x, f.78, and especially, Alford, *The Early Elizabethan Polity*, pp. 58-64, for a detailed discussion and analysis of this document.

[2] BL, Lansdowne MSS, 4, fos. 26^{v}-27^{r}; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1297, p.518.

[3] BL, Lansdowne MSS, 4, f.26^{r}.

[4] *Ibid*, 4, f.27^{r}.

[5] *Ibid*, 4, f.27^{r}.

[6] See, for example, Cecil's letter to Châtelherault on 24 August 1559 in *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1240, p.494. The Congregation also hoped to entice the English into supporting them by proposing Arran as a potential husband for Elizabeth. This proposal was not formally made, and rejected, until late 1560. *Ibid*, 743, 846, 878, pp. 278, 316, 335-6; *CSP Scot.*, I, 465, 466, 471, 926, 927, pp. 215-6, 216-7, 495-6; *APS*, II, pp. 605-6; Knox, *Works*, II, pp. 130-1, 137 and *History*, I, pp. 345-6, 350.

With the help of the English,[1] Arran arrived safely in Scotland on 12 September 1559 in time to attend the Congregation's convention at Stirling.[2] Châtelherault had already written to Cecil on 9 August thanking him for the 'great kindness' he had shown in giving his son a 'veill' in order that he could return to Scotland undetected.[3] Cecil duly responded by advising the Duke 'not to neglect the present opportunity of doing good to his country', as there was nothing more he would like than 'to see this isle well united'.[4] Châtelherault was not about to pass up any opportunity that would enhance his position and the prestige of the House of Hamilton. After being reunited with his son, who had been in 'consultatioun' with the principal lords of the Congregation since his arrival, Châtelherault and Arran officially became the nominal leaders of the Congregation on 19 September 1559.[5] The full implications of Arran's return and Châtelherault's defection were realised on 21 October 1559 when the Congregation, as the 'borne Counsallouris' of the realm and the 'sworne protectouris and defendaris' of the commonweal, formally assumed the governance of the realm and 'deposed' Marie de Guise as Regent in their 'Soverane Lord and Ladyeis name'.[6] *Perceiving* 'the

---

[1] For correspondence concerning Arran and the details of his escape from France to Scotland, see *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 998, 999, 1009, 1022, 1039, 1043, 1075, 1111, 1114, 1151, 1290, 1291, 1321, 1323, 1337, 1354, pp. 382-3, 383-4, 386-8, 391, 401, 402-3, 418, 436-7, 441, 451, 516, 542, 542-4, 551-2, 567; *CSP Scot.*, I, 538, 542, pp. 250, 251-2. See also Hannay, 'The Earl of Arran', pp. 264-6.

[2] *CSP Scot.*, I, 538, p.250; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1137, pp. 551-2.

[3] *CSP Scot.*, I, 522, p.242; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1176, p.465.

[4] *Ibid*, 1240, p.494.

[5] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 413-4 and *History*, I, pp. 229-30; *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1356, 1365, pp. 568, 571-2. On 19 September, the Congregation sent letters to the Queen Regent and John, 6th lord Erskine subscribed by Châtelherault and Arran. *Ibid*, 1342-4, pp. 564-5; Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 413-7 and *History*, I, pp. 229-33. William Maitland of Lethington was then commissioned to begin formal negotiations with Elizabeth and her Council for English military support. *CSP Scot.*, I, 543, p.252.

[6] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 444-9 and *History*, I, pp. 249-55; Mason, *Knox: On Rebellion*, pp. 171-4; BL, Cotton MSS, Caligula B.x, fos. 38, 42; NLS, Adv.MSS, 34.2.3, fos, 1-2.

interprysed destructioun of thair said commoun-weall, and overthrow of the libertie of thair native cuntree, be the meanes of the Quene Regent and certane strangearis', the Congregation regarded it as their 'dewtie' to suspend Guise's commission 'and all administratioun of the policy ... [her] Grace may pretend thairby'.[1]

For Marie de Guise, Châtelherault's defection and the Congregation's 'Act of Suspension' was the ultimate confirmation that they 'intended not religioun, bot the subversioun of authoritie'.[2] As such, she simply ignored their 'act', carried on in her capacity as Queen Regent and publicly accused Châtelherault and Arran of attempting to usurp 'the Croune and Authoritie of this Realme'.[3] For all her confidence, Guise was not entirely flippant about the Congregation's 'Act of Suspension'; their rebellion had taken a very serious turn against which she had to defend her position and the authority of her daughter. Foreseeing what Châtelherault's defection would lead to, Guise proceeded in earnest with the fortification of Leith which was now viewed as a political and military necessity.[4] This was accompanied by renewed and urgent appeals to

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, p.449 and *History*, I, p.255.

[2] Calderwood, *The History of the Kirk of Scotland*, I, p.433.

[3] Knox, *Works*, I, p. 439 and *History*, I, p. 248. The perceived strength of Guise's position can be demonstrated by the fact that, in the words of Knox, 'because the rumour ceassed nott, that the Duke his Grace usurped the Authoritie, he was compelled, with the sound of trumpete, at the Mercat Croce of Edinburgh, to maik his purgatioun'. In this proclamation dated 19 October 1559, Châtelherault claimed he joined the Congregation because he was 'movit partlie by the violent persute of the religioun and trew professouris thairof, partlie by compassioun of the commoun-wealth and poore communitie of this realme, oppressed with strangearis'. Knox also admits that an extensive letter writing campaign was undertaken by the Lords immediately following the Duke's defection, highlighting the danger 'giff the Frensche sould be sufferit to plant in this cuntrey at thair plesoure', their repeated pleas to Guise to 'send away to France hir Frensche men, quha war ane burding unproffitable and grevous to thair communwealth', and how the arrival of French troops with their wives and children was 'a declaratioun of ane plane conquiest'. On 6 October, for instance, Arran wrote to Sempill asking for his military support, not because of his 'conscience towartis the religioun', but 'for the commoun wealth and libertie of this youre native cuntray'. Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 438-40, 417-8 and *History*, I pp. 248-9, 232-3; *Scottish Correspondence*, cclxxxii, pp. 428-9.

[4] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 37^{r}, 39^{v} and *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, f.322^{v}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 349-50 and *Relations*, I, pp. 353-4.

François for military and financial aid.[1] Detailing the nature of the Congregation's propaganda campaign following the Duke's defection, in which it was claimed that the King wanted to 'subuirtir toutes leurs lois et les reduir cy extreme seruitude', Guise begged her son-in-law to have pity on her and 'nous ayde de meilleure forces & dargens cy la plus grand dilligence'.[2] Similar pleas came from Noailles in London with the emergence of the Congregation as a rival council to Guise's administration. On 30 September 1559, the French ambassador wrote to the Cardinal of Lorraine that the Congregation 'veulent prendre toute authorite & ne recognoistre enfin aucun superieur', which was made worse by the now certain likelihood that Elizabeth, 'les pourra ayder soubz main de quelque friandise d'argent et armes et munitions pour les eschauffer davantage a leur faire continuer leurs coups'.[3] 'Grand secours' were thus needed in the form of men, money and munitions, without which d'Oisel, the Queen Regent and 'tous les Francoys n'ayent cependant beaucoup a souffrir'.[4]

But neither these supplications nor Guise's warning that Châtelherault and his accomplices would do all they could as soon as possible, translated into effective action on the part of France.[5] As a result, Guise was left to continue her war of words with the

---

[1] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 37^{r}-8^{v}; 39^{v}-40^{r}. Similar appeals were contained in the Regent's letter to her brothers, *ibid*, XV, fos. 40r-1r. See also *CSP Foreign, 1558-1559*, 1346, pp. 565-6; *CSP Scot.*, I, 540, p.251.

[2] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.40^{r}.

[3] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, f.323r; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, p.354 and *Relations*, I, p. 358. A month later, Noailles wrote again to the Cardinal de Lorraine with certain proof that the Congregation's forces were being maintained with English money. AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, f.335^{r}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 360-1 and *Relations*, I, pp. 363-4.

[4] Noialles to Constable Montmorency, 28 September 1559, AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, f.322^{v}.

[5] *Ibid*, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.40^{r}.

Congregation, and to fortify Leith with what resources she had.[1] Needless to say, the Congregation's attempted deposition of Guise sparked a flurry of new appeals to François for aid. He was told that, 'il y faille faire passer si grand nombre de gens & de navires & qu'il y avoit beaucoup d'autres places a la devotion de lad[icte] Royne Regente plus que du Petit-Leyth, comme Dombarre, l'Isle aux Chevaulx & le Chasteau mesmes de lislebourg'.[2] Even with this dramatic turn of events, military aid from France was still not forthcoming.

While Marie de Guise obviously felt the need to implement some precautionary defensive measures to counter the effects of the Congregation's patriotic campaign, their 'Act of Suspension' also served to strengthen her resolve to assert her authority and that of Mary and François in Scotland offensively. Not only was the Congregation's attempted deposition a blatant act of sedition, but the fact that it was done in the names of the very sovereigns who had granted the commission in the first place, was also an act of extreme arrogance.[3] Marie de Guise took her case, once again, to the public. Denouncing the Congregation's actions, which seemed 'to come from a Prince to his subjects, rather than from subjects to one that bears authority',[4] Guise declared that 'None can have the authority here except the Queen's daughter and her husband'. The Congregation's 'Act of Suspension' clearly indicated that they 'acknowledge[d] no other superiority'.[5] The Regent justified her position further by declaring that she would

---

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 417-21 and *History*, I, pp. 232-5.

[2] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, fos. 338^{v}-9^{r}. See also, *ibid*, fos. 336^{r}-7^{v}, 338^{r}-42^{r}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 364-7, 367-76 and *Relations*, I, pp. 366-9, 369-78.

[3] Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 448, 449 and *History*, I, pp. 254, 255; *APS*, II, p. 519; SRO, SP13/81.

[4] *CSP Foreign, 1559-1560*, 107, p.45.

[5] *Ibid*, 109, p.45.

'grant anything which may not resist the piety due to God, nor fight with their duty to their King and Queen', as she did 'not seek the overthrow of their laws and liberties, nor dream of conquering the kingdom by violence, for her daughter possesses it already'.[1] Finally, Guise defended her fortification of Leith by shifting the onus of blame to the Congregation, for she 'had attempted nothing that way before' until they 'showed that they would shake off the lawful government, ... and made league and covenant with her ancient enemies [the English]'.[2]

Words were not the only way Guise chose to assert her authority. On 7 November, she re-entered Edinburgh and proceeded to 'hath all things at her will'.[3] Her 'will' dictated that Mass be restored, St. Giles re-consecrated, and Leith continue to be fortified.[4] But it was the process of treason that was initiated against Châtelherault and Arran that is, perhaps, most revealing as to the French reaction to the Congregation's 'Act of Suspension' and, more importantly, as to who Mary, François and Guise ultimately held responsible.[5]

Throughout November, d'Oisel and Jacques de la Brosse began to assemble a case against the Congregation and their Hamilton figureheads.[6] Instances of the Congregation's treasonous behaviour since the enlistment of Châtelherault and his son were cited in detail. This 'charge sheet' made specific reference to their convocation at

---

[1] *CSP Foreign, 1559-1560*, 109, p.46.

[2] *Ibid*, 109, p.46.

[3] *Ibid*, 234, p.100.

[4] AÉ, *Cor. Pol.*, Angleterre, XIII, fos.336^{v}-7^{r}; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 364-7 and *Relations*, I, pp. 366-9.

[5] Mary and François' commission was dated 10 November 1559. AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.130^{r}.

[6] *Ibid*, XV, fos. 130^{r}-53^{v}; Dickinson, 'Report by de la Brosse and d'Oisel', pp. 85-125.

Stirling on 19 September 1559, their taking up of arms and twenty day siege of Edinburgh in October, their suspension of Marie de Guise from the Regency (all the more treasonous since it was an office granted to her by Mary and François), their letters and proclamations written in the name of their sovereigns demanding that obedience be rendered instead to Châtelherault and Arran, and their seizure of coining irons and counterfeiting of coins.[1] The Congregation's illicit activities were then corroborated in depositions given by a plethora of witnesses, including the Archbishop of Glasgow, the Bishop of Dunblane, the Earl of Bothwell, and Sir Alexander Erskine, son of John, 5th Lord Erskine who, as custodian of Edinburgh Castle, had managed to stay neutral throughout the conflict.[2]

The evidence compiled by d'Oisel and de la Brosse was damning. Validating the crown's suspicion that Châtelherault and Arran were guilty of treason, their report concluded that they had indeed committed:

> ... crimes de leze maieste ... a lencontre de nous leurs princes souverains par les assemblees de gens en armes hostilitez et aultre actes de felonnye et Infidelite par eulx faictz Et quilz continuent encores chacun Jour pour de tout en tout opprimer audit royaulme notre auctorite et se lattribuer par la force des armes contre tout droict divin et humain'.[3]

On the strength of this evidence, Guise then commissioned James Makgill of Nether Rankeillor and John Bellenden of Auchnoul, Scotland's clerk register and justice register, to find historical and legal precedents for the various acts of treason committed

---

[1] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 131^{r}-39^{v}; Dickinson, 'Report by de la Brosse and d'Oisel', pp. 90-8. Reference was also made to the iconoclasm and various skirmishes engaged in by the Congregation.

[2] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 140^{r}-53^{v}; Dickinson, 'Report by de la Brosse and d'Oisel', pp. 98-125.

[3] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, f.130^{r}.

by the Congregation as detailed in de la Brosse and d'Oisel's report. The result was the *Discours Particulier d'Escosse.*[1]

While the *Discours* covered a wide range of topics, a disproportionate amount of the report was devoted to treason and the legal process through which cases of lese majesty were executed and punished.[2] Specifically, the *Discours* outlined what acts constituted treason and crimes of lese majesty as stipulated by the Three Estates in Parliament. Not surprisingly, these included initiating, partaking or assisting in a rebellion against the sovereign or his authority, taking up arms or maintaining a stronghold against the crown, the counterfeiting of coin, and convoking an assembly of rebels.[3] Also contained in their report were case studies of those against whom the process of treason had been duly executed – the most notable of these were James, 9th earl of Douglas (1455), Alexander Stewart, duke of Albany (1483) and John MacDonald, lord of the Isles (1475).[4] Of particular significance was the case of David Hume of Wedderburn, who was charged with treason for putting 'his people in order of battle against … James, earl of Arran, and for having invaded him'. The fact that Arran 'was then one of the regents of this kingdom', made Hume's invasion a direct attack against 'the person of our sovereign'.[5] In an ironic twist of fate, Châtelherault had become the perpetrator of a crime of which he had previously been a victim.

---

[1] Thomson (ed.), *Discovrs Particvlier D'Escosses escrit par commandement et ordonnance de la Royne Dovariere et Regent, par Messires Iacques Makgill clerc dv registere et Iean Bellenden clerk de la justice* (Bannatyne Club, 1824), pp. 3-32; NLS, Adv.MSS, 35.1.2; McNeill, 'Discours', pp. 86-131.

[2] *Ibid*, pp. 117-31.

[3] *Ibid*, pp. 123-5.

[4] *Ibid*, pp. 127-31.

[5] *Ibid*, p.129.

Together, the *Discours* and 'Information' provided the crown a strong legal foundation with which to proceed against Châtelherault and Arran for treason and crimes of lese majesty. But by the time Makgill and Bellenden had completed and submitted their report on 11 January 1559/60, circumstances had changed and the tide was beginning to turn decidedly against the Queen Regent. Any legal, ideological or constitutional strength Guise could derive from Châtelherault and Arran's nominal leadership of the Congregation and their 'Act of Suspension' was undermined by the military intervention of England on the side of the Congregation in February 1559/60. While this was unquestionably a contributing factor to the collapse of Marie de Guise's political régime in Scotland, France's failure to respond to England's intervention adequately would prove to be the most devastating.

***

England's military intervention in Scotland unofficially began in January 1559/60 when a naval fleet commanded by Admiral Winter 'accidentally' entered the Firth of Forth.[1] Officially, it was inaugurated on 27 February 1559/60 with the conclusion of the treaty of Berwick - an agreement written in the name of Mary, Queen of Scots, but contracted between James, Duke of Châtelherault, as second person in the realm, and Elizabeth I.[2] The pretext of the treaty, and England's military support of the Congregation on the whole, was the defence of Scotland's 'ancient right and liberty'.[3] In reality, it facilitated

---

[1] *Brosse Missions*, pp. 56-61; *CSP Foreign, 1559-1560*, 616, 636, 645, pp. 288-91, 311-2, 324.

[2] *CSP Scot.*, I, 665, pp. 323-4; *CSP Foreign, 1559-1560*, pp. 413-5, 781; *Foedera*, XI, p.95 and X, p.47; BL, Cotton MSS, Caligula B.ix, f.34; Knox, *Works*, II, pp. 45-52, 53-6 *History*, I, pp. 302-7, 308-10. For a discussion of the negotiations and the treaty as it pertained to Cecil's 'British strategy' and notion of an Anglo-British Protestant Empire, see Alford, *The Early Elizabethan Polity*, pp. 64-79, and Dawson, 'William Cecil', pp. 207-10.

[3] *CSP Foreign, 1559-1560*, 781, p.413.

the interference of a foreign monarch in what was essentially a domestic crisis. Hedged in the language of the commonweal, Elizabeth's intervention was justified by the fact that:

> ... the French intend to conquer the realm of Scotland, suppress the liberty thereof and unite it to France, and being required thereto by the said nobility in the name of the whole realm, shall accept this said realm, the apparent heir to the crown, the nobility and subjects thereof, for the protection of their old freedoms and liberties from conquest or oppression.[1]

In effect, the treaty of Berwick was a renunciation of the Franco-Scottish protectoral alliance that was established in the treaty of Haddington and the Congregation's formal appointment of Elizabeth as the new 'protector' of Scotland. It was also the culmination of the Congregation's patriotic platform. By accusing Marie de Guise of attempting to conquer the realm, and associating themselves with freedom, liberty and the defence of the commonweal, the Congregation, as Scotland's legitimate government, was able to secure the open and military support of England against the establishment of French power in Scotland.

The inherent contradiction in the Congregation's position, of course, was the simultaneous justification of their rebellion and alliance with England in terms of patriotism. In doing so, the Congregation revealed their true objective: the defence of their interests and position in Scotland as the natural born councillors of the realm. Self-interest and not altruism, therefore, was the prime motivating factor behind the treaty of Berwick and the Congregation's use of patriotism as a whole. The treaty's additional stipulation that England and the Congregation 'shall never assent that the realm of Scotland shall be knit to the crown of France *otherwise than it is already*, only

---

[1] *CSP Foreign, 1559-1560*, 781, p.413.

by marriage of the Queen to the French King', reinforced the Congregation's position.[1] As long as the Franco-Scottish dynastic union was nominal, the Scottish nobility's interests and traditional role in government were safeguarded. Anything beyond that, *ie* coalescence, integration or conquest, posed a direct threat and was, therefore, unacceptable. But the fact that they accused Marie de Guise only with the *intent* of conquering the realm indicates how weak their justification really was. Ultimately, the treaty of Berwick was contracted against something that had not actually happened, and any sincerity that the Congregation hoped to convey in their professed recognition of François and Mary's authority was undermined by the simple fact that they had forged a military and protectoral alliance with England against the constituted authority of Scotland.

It therefore comes as no surprise that, as with the 'Act of Suspension', Marie de Guise refused to recognise the terms of the treaty of Berwick. On 27 March 1560, she reported to her brothers that she 'never saw anything so shameful as the Articles, as well for the honour of God as the reputation of the King, and according to them there will rest no more but to render obedience to the Queen of England'.[2] Despite her indignation that the Congregation and Elizabeth should come to such an agreement in the first place, the arrival of English troops in March 1560 brought the seriousness of the situation home. Elizabeth had fulfilled her promise that she would 'send into Scotland sufficient aid of men to join with the Scots ... not only to expel the present power of French, but also to stop all greater forces to enter therein, and shall continue the same until they are

---

[1] *CSP Foreign, 1559-1560*, 781, p.413.

[2] *Ibid*, 906, pp. 480.

"aluterly" expelled therefrom'.[1] Owing to their own domestic troubles, however, the Cardinal de Lorraine and the Duc de Guise were unable to help their sister in her most desperate time of need.

'Les Guises' had originally intended to send their brother, René, Marquis d'Elboeuf to Scotland with reinforcements in December 1559. They had also issued René with letters patent commissioning him to replace his sister as regent.[2] This was in response to the news that Marie de Guise had fallen seriously ill and was not expected to survive. On 4 December, René had initially received a commission from Mary and François to serve as their Lieutenant-General in Scotland, 'during the absence of the Queen Dowager about to return to France for recovery of her health'.[3] Subsequent reports that the Queen Regent 'is nothing amended of hir diseas' and 'still languishes in great sickness, and her physicians have no hope of her recovery' must have forced 'les Guises' to reconsider their position and provide for a more permanent arrangement.[4] But when René's expedition was postponed indefinitely due to bad weather conditions, all the Queen Regent's family could do was send encouraging messages and sit and wait for news on the progress of her health.[5] In his desire to see her soon, François intimated in a personal note that Guise would have 'no better "medicines" than her daughter and

---

[1] *CSP Foreign, 1559-1560*, 781, p.413. England's military intervention in Scotland and the ensuing war between France and England in Scotland, which culminated in the siege of Leith, is a lengthy and complex topic in itself that cannot be fully explored here. See Brosse, *Jacques de la Brosse*, pp. 217-59 and 'The Journal of the siege of Leith, 1560' in *Brosse Missions*, pp. 51-179, for detailed accounts of the conflict, in addition to Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, pp. 242-53 and Tytler, *History of Scotland*, IV, pp. 114-23.

[2] 11 December 1559, BL, Cotton MSS, Caligula B.ix, fos. 46^{r}-7^{v}.

[3] *Cal. Scot.*, I, 590, p.271.

[4] *Ibid*, I, 596(ii), 592, pp. 275, 272.

[5] *Ibid*, I, 609 (i-vi), pp. 283-4.

himself'.[1] By January, the growing civil unrest in France rendered it too dangerous for René to try again.[2] Indeed, the political and religious opposition to 'les Guises' in France, culminating in the *Conjuration* of Amboise on 15 March 1559/60,[3] prevented them 'from furnishing her with money as often as they would be glad to do. This they durst not adventure, nor the Marquis [d'Elboeuf] their brother, for the evident danger that might happen; but it cannot be long before they find some way open, when they will not lose one quarter of an hour'.[4] Fortunately for them, their sister's health improved enough for her to carry on in her capacity as regent, and although the French troops in Scotland managed to withstand the English in their siege of Leith, the Guise brothers' failure to send additional reinforcements proved to be decisive in procuring widespread support for the Congregation. But if René had been successful in his mission, the question must not only be asked whether these reinforcements would have been enough to defeat the English army, but also whether his assumption of the regency would have kept French interests alive in Scotland?

Realising that French reinforcements were not coming in aid of the Queen Regent, the Congregation was finally beginning to emerge as the winning side in the conflict. This can be evidenced by the number of subscribers to the Congregation's 'Third Band', which was drawn up at Leith on 27 April 1560.[5] Approximately 140

---

[1] 23 December 1559, *CSP Scot.*, I, 609(ii), pp. 283-4.

[2] *CSP Foreign, 1559-1560*, 508, 575, 746, pp. 358-7, 460-1; *CSP Scot.*, I, p.135; AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 56, 58, 65 and *Cor. Pol.*, XX, fos. 99, 100, 282, 291; Teulet, *Relations*, II, p.139; Brosse, *Jacques de la Brosse*, pp. 342, 344; Carroll, *Noble Power during the French Wars of Religion*, pp. 95-100.

[3] See, for example, Bouillé, *Histoire des Ducs de Guise*, II, pp. 42-112.

[4] *CSP Foreign, 1559-1560*, 879, pp. 460-1.

[5] Knox, *Works*, II, pp. 61-4; *History*, I, pp. 314-5.

Scots' signatures adorned the band and included such former stalwarts to the crown as Huntly.[1] Even more indicative that the tide had turned against Guise, was the fact that so many Scots (Catholic and Protestant) had subscribed to a band that was not an exclusively political manifesto. After a long absence, the religious aims of the Congregation's rebellion reappeared alongside their now familiar political objective to defend the commonweal against the oppression of the French. Unlike their religious bands of 1557 and 1559, which attracted minimal public support for the Congregation, the band of April 1560 reflects the Congregation's confidence in their position. While this confidence may be attributed to England's formal entry into the conflict, the timing of the band suggests that it was more to do with France's failure to respond to this intervention – something which could only be determined in the months following the arrival of the English reinforcements.

For her part, Marie de Guise was still hoping that her brothers would 'find some way open' to send her aid and, in an attempt to buy time, she re-entered negotiations with the Congregation.[2] Despite her obvious military disadvantage, the Queen Regent's stance was surprisingly adamantine in the series of talks that took place with the Congregation and their English representatives in the spring of 1560. She was particularly obstinate in her position when it came to the authority of Mary and François in Scotland. When presented with the demand that, 'the whole number of French men

---

[1] Donaldson, *All the Queen's Men*, pp. 33-4.

[2] In the spring of 1560, the French also sought to 'appease things in Scotland, and to find a means to win time' by sending two diplomatic envoys, the Bishop of Valence and M. de Randan. The French position was weakened considerably, however, with the news that Marie de Guise had passed away on 11 June 1560. *CSP Foreign, 1559-1560*, 879, pp. 460-1.

at war at present in this realm be removed with speed so that we [the Scots] may live in peace without fear of disturbances from them', de la Brosse reports that Guise responded by saying that this article 'was quite beyond reason and could not be discussed.[1] As she had told them the day before, the King and Queen would not receive orders from any prince in the world, much less from subjects, and that she, for her part, would in no wise consent thereto'.[2] Moreover, Elizabeth's intervention on behalf of the Congregation was regarded by Guise as an act of blatant interference in Scottish affairs that not only undermined her position and authority as Queen Regent, but also that of Mary and François. As a result, Guise was consistently unyielding in her demand that Scots uphold and respect the authority of their own sovereigns and not the Queen of England.

Another point on which Marie de Guise was unyielding was her defence of the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance. Just as the Congregation was persistent in their demands that the French must leave Scotland, so too was Guise in her demand that the Congregation revoke their league with England. The refusal of both sides to renounce their respective allegiances resulted in stalemate and a temporary suspension of the negotiations.[3] On 12 May 1560, renewed attempts were made to reach a settlement and Lord James and William Maitland of Lethington presented Guise with a list of grievances about the establishment of French power in Scotland or, as they termed it,

---

[1] *CSP Foreign, 1559-1560*, 879, pp. 460-1; *Brosse Missions*, p.101.

[2] *Ibid*, p.103.

[3] On 14 May, Maitland reported to Cecil that, 'In the end they found that nothing could be agreed upon'. *CSP Foreign, 1559-1560*, 94, p.42. See *Brosse Missions*, pp. 151-7, for Guise's entire defence of the Franco-Scottish alliance and the establishment of French power in Scotland.

'the stay the French had made'.[1] As we have seen in their propaganda as a whole, the establishment of French military power was a particular sore point with the Congregation (or was it the English?). Reiterating their objections to *Guise's* importation of French troops in August and September 1559, the Congregation also took issue with the taxes raised for the French fortification of Inchkeith,[2] the French officers who had been appointed to the most important offices in the realm (a specific reference to the Vice-Chancellor, du Rubay) and of Guise's desire to change their laws.[3] To each of these grievances, Marie de Guise justified and defended her position and that of the French in Scotland by declaring, quite rightly, that each of these had been accepted in Parliament with the consent of the Scottish political community – all, that is, except their last complaint, which accused Guise of desiring, but not actually succeeding in changing their laws.[4]

As with their 'Act of Suspension', Marie de Guise's reaction to the Congregation's patriotic stance against her dynastic policies and the establishment of French power in Scotland was to adopt an assertive counter-position, which she did with great finesse during her negotiations with the Congregation in May and June 1560. Guise's position was enhanced, of course, by the fact that it was the Scottish political

---

[1] *Brosses Missions*, p.151.

[2] As we have already seen in Chapter IV, the *Treasurers Accounts* reveal that the fort at Langholm was the only stronghold, whose modernisation was financed out of crown revenues. Throughout 1558, Inchkeith was one of many strongholds, including Home Castle and Eyemouth, that was furnished with provisions for the war against England but paid for by the burghs of Leith and Edinburgh. If this is what the Congregation was referring to, why did they not mention these other strongplaces? *TA*, X, pp. 409, 421-45.

[3] *Brosse Missions*, p.151.

[4] *Ibid*, p.155.

élite who had provided for the establishment of French power in the treaty of Haddington and, in particular, by their request for continued French military intervention after the cessation of hostilities with England in 1550. Similarly, as we have seen in Chapter VII, the Scots wanted to see the conclusion of Mary Stewart's marriage to the Dauphin in 1556/7 just as much as Guise did, and their subsequent ratification of the marriage treaty *and* consent to grant the crown matrimonial to the Dauphin demonstrates the extent to which the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance was favoured by the majority of the Scottish political community. In 1559-60, therefore, the Scots were effectively rebelling against something that they themselves had facilitated.

Success ultimately came for the Congregation, however, not as a result of their military might or ideological arguments, but with the death of Marie de Guise in the early hours of 11 June 1560.[1] Falling seriously ill again on 1 June, the Queen Regent's health deteriorated rapidly and several of the leading members of the Congregation came to pay their last respects, including Châtelherault, Arran, Argyll, Huntly and Glencairn.[2] Although England's military intervention seriously weakened the foundations of her administration, the onus of failure for the collapse of her political

---

[1] *Brosse Missions*, p.177.

[2] *Ibid*, pp. 175-7; AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 113-4; *CSP Foreign, 1559-60*, 276-89, pp. 116-21; Pitscottie, *Historie*, II, p.171; *Diurnal of Occurents*, pp. 276-7; Lesley, *History*, pp. 439-41. Despite this ostensible display of respect, the Congregation snubbed Marie de Guise even after death. Following her autopsy, the Congregation refused her burial at Holyrood and to comply with the wishes 'les Guises' for her body to be shipped back to France. As a result, Marie de Guise's corpse remained in the Chapel of St. Margaret at Edinburgh Castle for several months. Negotiations did not begin for the Queen Regent's burial until August 1560. It was only after François II passed away and Mary, Queen of Scots' had made the decision to return to Scotland, did she order that her mother's body be sent to France on 16 March 1560/1. Guise was finally laid to rest at the Convent of St. Peter at Rheims. A memorial service was then held in her honour at the Cathedral of Notre Dame, and was attended by her daughter and the entire French Court. *TA*, XI, p.24; *CSP Foreign, 1560-1561*, 218, p.133; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 615-6; *Diurnal of Occurrents*, p.64; Knox, *Works*, II, Appendix III, pp. 590-2; Tytler, *History of Scotland*, IV, p.398; Marshall, *Mary of Guise*, pp. 261-2.

régime ultimately lay with her allies in France. The failure of her brothers to meet the English challenge enabled the Congregation to emerge, and be seen, as the victors of the conflict. Yet, despite being seriously let down by 'les Guises' in France, the Queen Regent never gave up her fight to protect her own dynastic interests or those of her daughter. She not only maintained her ideological position against the Congregation to the very end, but also her hope that her appeals for French intervention would materialise into effective action.[1] Only in death did Marie de Guise abandon her fight to defend the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance and the authority of Mary and François in Scotland, and only then, can one say that her political régime truly collapsed. Of greater importance, perhaps, was that the death of the Queen Regent also signalled the death of the French cause in Scotland. As the acceptable face of French power, the loss of Marie de Guise witnessed the almost immediate removal of all French influence in Scotland – the death of François II in December 1560 merely confirmed it.

[1] AÉ, *Mémoires et Documents*, Angleterre, XV, fos. 86-105.

CONCLUSION

On 6 July 1560, a treaty was contracted between England, Scotland and France that called for the withdrawal of all French troops from Scotland – the last vestiges of French power that remained after the death of Marie de Guise the previous month. In real terms, the treaty of Edinburgh marked the end of an alliance that had been unprecedented in its intimacy and transformed it into one of a purely nominal nature, whereby an absent queen ruled over a kingdom with a self imposed system of government, and over subjects who had taken it upon themselves to define the duties of their sovereign. The 'divorce' was finalised when, six months later, François II's death severed the dynastic ties that had bound Scotland and France together since 1548, and that had slackened considerably since Marie de Guise's exit from the political arena. Marie de Guise not only proved to be the acceptable face of French power in Scotland, but was in many ways the linchpin of the Franco-Scottish alliance as a whole. As a victim of circumstance and a slave to the ever-changing international situation, however, she was always destined to meet with limited success.

Marie de Guise was raised, and later operated, in a world where dynasticism took precedence over personal and religious convictions. The dynastic interests of 'les Guises' became inextricably associated with those of Mary Stewart when she became the Queen of Scots at the tender age of six days old. But it was her Catholic claim to the English succession that made Mary Stewart a figure of extraordinary dynastic importance in sixteenth-century Europe – for it was possible that she alone could unite the kingdoms of Scotland, England and Ireland under one Catholic crown. As with any

queenship, the question of marriage assumed great significance. For Mary Stewart, it was a question that dominated the politics of her minority, most notably because her marriage carried with it notions of British Imperialism for her future husband and served as the pretext for war.

It was to protect and advance these dynastic and imperial interests that Marie de Guise formally entered into the factional high politics of Scotland during the 1540s in opposition to the Anglo-Scottish dynastic alliance contracted in the treaties of Greenwich. Guise's allegiances naturally lay with her native France and, aided by an unlikely bedfellow in the person of Somerset, whose particularly aggressive Scottish policy procured tremendous support for the French cause, she played a key role in contracting a treaty of alliance with Henri II in July 1548. Marie de Guise's policies during the period 1548-1560, therefore, were dictated by European dynastic politics and, more directly, by the Franco-Scottish protectoral and dynastic alliance established by the treaty of Haddington in 1548.

While Marie de Guise was instrumental in contracting the treaty of Haddington, her official political career in Scotland as Queen Regent was an inadvertent by-product of the treaty that facilitated the establishment of French power in Scotland. Henri's protection of Scotland and its queen enabled him to establish a permanent foothold in the kingdom that served as the backdoor to England, and assume control over Scottish diplomacy and foreign policy. As the 'protector' of Scotland, he was also able to determine when Mary, Queen of Scots reached her perfect age and, more importantly, who would govern her kingdom in her absence during her majority rule. Despite her role in forging this alliance, it should not be presumed that Marie de Guise had political

designs in Scotland once the treaty of Haddington had been contracted and her daughter's future seemed secure. Her return to France in 1550, and even more surprising return to Scotland in 1551 to assume the regency in 1554, has conventionally been interpreted to show that one of Guise's long-term objectives was to oust Châtelherault from power. But, as in the case of the Reformation Rebellion, this misconception is an example of the tendency of historians to read history backwards when assessing Marie de Guise's régime, in order to provide convenient explanations for events that often defy such simplistic analyses. The decision behind Guise's return seems not to have been her own, but that of the Scots who had accompanied her to France and, latterly, that of Henri.

Marie de Guise's regency was dominated and, to a large extent, dictated by the international situation. The general aim of her policy was to restore stability to a realm that had endured a decade of plague, famine, war and the adverse affects of factionalism that accompanied any minority government. Like her late husband and his Stewart predecessors, she sought to achieve this by effecting a strong, yet personal monarchy and imposing royal authority by advancing the interests of the crown at the expense of local jurisdictions. But it is her quest for law and order and the pursuit of royal justice that best characterises her domestic policy – particularly as these were seen as necessary prerequisites for facing the Anglo-Imperial threat that emanated from England during the reign of Mary Tudor. But it was precisely because of this threat, and the Habsburg-Valois conflict on the Continent in general, that Guise's quest for law and order was undermined. Mary Tudor's accession and marriage to Philip of Spain meant that, through the forging of dynastic alliances, the Habsburg-Valois powers now met *tête à*

tête on the Anglo-Scottish Border, and Guise was forced to focus her attention on the more pressing and immediate concerns of defence and national security. The international situation also brought to the fore the importance of, and need for, Mary, Queen of Scots' marriage to the Dauphin. For many of Scotland's ruling élite, the Franco-Scottish protectoral alliance had run its course and now needed to be established on a more permanent footing that only dynastic union could bring about. Roughly translated, this meant that before they committed any more resources to finance Guise's defensive policies or to fight Henri's war on the Continent, they needed to know who their master was and where their allegiances formally lay. It was within this European context of the Habsburg-Valois conflict, therefore, that Marie de Guise fulfilled her dynastic objectives, not only by securing the marriage of her daughter to the Dauphin, but also the consent of the Three Estates to grant the crown matrimonial to their new king.

Although Marie de Guise made a deliberate effort to reassure her Protestant subjects that the union of the French and Scottish Catholic crowns was not incompatible with the reform movement, she was not above abandoning her accommodating position if changes in the international or national scene made it advantageous to do so. Indeed, it was more than likely because she was recognised as a politique that a group of Scotland's leading Protestants signed a covenant pledging to 'manteane, sett fordward and establish the blessed word of God' on the eve of the Parliament that moved to advance the Valois-Stewart marriage.[1] The Lords of the Congregation were wise to take

[1] Knox, *Works*, I, p.273 and *History*, I, p.136.

out such an insurance policy; changes in the international situation coinciding with the completion of her dynastic policies forced Guise to alter her religious policy and assume a less tolerant position towards the reform movement. The dubious legality of Elizabeth Tudor's accession saw the launch of a new campaign to advance the Catholic claims of Mary Stewart to the English throne by virtue of Elizabeth's illegitimacy in canon law. Once again, Guise's dynastic interests took precedence over religious considerations.

Conventional historiography has placed undue emphasis on the religious dimension of Marie de Guise's administration. Religion was a decidedly secondary concern for Guise throughout her regency. Dynasticism, not Catholicism, was the prime motivational force behind her policy in Scotland and it is from a dynastic perspective that her régime must be examined. As a victim of circumstance, though, even Guise's dynastic policies met with limited success. While she showed herself to be an extremely shrewd and effective politician in fulfilling her dynastic objectives, the failure of her allies in France to respond accordingly to the changes in the international scene served to undermine all she had worked for during her political career in Scotland. In itself, the outbreak of the Congregation's rebellion did not pose a sufficient threat to her administration to cause its collapse. Guise's consistent belief that this was not a revolt of conscience, but a rebellion against duly constituted temporal authority, gained credence with every act of sedition the Congregation committed – none more so than their 'Act of Suspension'. Throughout 1559, Guise had the constitutional, legal, ideological and military edge over the Congregation. It was only when the rebellion adopted a British dimension with the formal intervention of England that the foundations of Guise's administration began to crumble.

As feared, Elizabeth's Protestant sympathies, and the religious settlement of May 1559, made her a source of support for Scotland's reformers and disaffected subjects in a way that her Catholic half-sister had never been, posing an arguably more dangerous threat than the Anglo-Imperial alliance had done during Mary Tudor's reign. Guise knew that, with the military might of England behind the Congregation, ideological arguments would not be enough to maintain her position. The inability, or unwillingness, of her allies in France to respond adequately to this intervention was the most damaging blow to her régime. The onus of failure for the collapse of French power in Scotland and the Franco-Scottish alliance, therefore, lay with those who had wanted it the most – 'les Guises'. The fact that it did meet with limited success is solely down to Marie de Guise, whose death not only deprived the French cause of a respected and effective figurehead, but also what would prove to be the only acceptable face of French power in Scotland.

Much of the negative imagery surrounding Marie de Guise and her régime in Scotland derives from the propaganda of the Congregation. Its emphasis on conquest and French domination at the hands of Marie de Guise was designed to play on the xenophobia of the Scots and identify the Congregation as a party of patriots. This thesis has shown, however, that the Reformation Rebellion is not a reliable or accurate context within which to assess Marie de Guise. Her régime must be examined within the wider context of European dynastic politics and, specifically, within the Franco-Scottish protectoral alliance of 1548-1560. By changing the perspective and reading history forwards, Marie de Guise emerges as a pragmatic politique whose dynastic interests consistently took precedence over her religious convictions, while her assumption of the

regency was the final part of a larger process establishing French power in Scotland that was intended to be consolidated by the marriage of Mary Stewart to François Valois. Despite the allegations of the Congregation to the contrary, the establishment of French power and the dynastic union of the French and Scottish crowns were both sanctioned and endorsed by the Scottish political élite. As a result, and ironically, the Congregation's rebellion was a revolt against something that they themselves had established.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Manuscript Sources

ARCHIVES de MINISTÈRE des AFFAIRES ÉTRANGÈRES, PARIS.
Correspondence Politique, Angleterre, II, VIII-XXII.
Mémoires et Documents, Angleterre, XV.

BIBLIOTHÈQUE NATIONALE, PARIS.
Fonds français: 5467, 18153, 20457.

BRITISH LIBRARY, LONDON.
Cotton MSS. Caligula B.vii, B.viii, B.ix, B.x.; E.iv.
Harley MSS. 34, 36, 289, 290, 297, 353, 1244, 1582.
Lansdowne MSS. 4, 155, 159.

INNER TEMPLE, LONDON.
Petyt MSS. 538/47.

LAMBETH PALACE LIBRARY, LONDON.
Talbot MSS. 3194, 3195, 3196.

NATIONAL LIBRARY, SCOTLAND.
MSS. 2991, 2992, 3112, 3137.
Advocate MSS. 1.2.2.
19.1.25.
29.2.1-3, 5.
33.1.9.
34.1.11.
34.2.3, 17.
35.1.2.
54.1.2.
54.1.5, 7.
Ch.2593.

PUBLIC RECORD OFFICE, LONDON.
MSS. 3/31/22, 23, 32, 33.
SP10/14, 15.
SP11/3.
SP12/6.
SP13/76.
SP15/7, 8.
SP31/3.
SP51/1, 8.

SCOTTISH RECORD OFFICE, EDINBURGH.
GD 90/3, 149/264, 150/3438, 204/559.
E33/4, 5.
E34/12, 14, 15, 17, 18, 20, 21, 25, 26, 27.
SP2/4.
SP7/34, 38-42.
SP6/49.
SP13/14, 55, 56, 58-61, 63, 65, 66, 68-73, 79-84.

SPECIAL COLLECTIONS, UNIVERSITY LIBRARY, ST. ANDREWS.
msDA784.7
ms4347

Primary Printed Sources, Narrative Sources and Works of Reference.

Accounts of the Masters of Works for Building and Repairing Royal Palaces and Castles, ed. H.M. Paton *et al*, 2 vols. (Edinburgh, 1957-82).

Acts of the Lords of Council in Public Affairs, 1501-1554: Selections from the Acta Dominorum Concilii introductory to the register of the Privy Council of Scotland, ed. R.K. Hannay (Edinburgh, 1932).

Acts of the Parliament of Scotland, eds. T. Thomson and C. Innes, 12 vols. (Edinburgh, 1814-75).

Acts of the Privy Council of England, ed. J. R. Dasent *et al*, New Series, 46 vols. (London, 1890-1964).

Ambassades de Messieurs de Noailles en Angleterre, ed. R.A. de Vertot, 2 vols. (Leiden, 1743).

'Appendix to the Dun Papers', *Spalding Miscellany*, IV (Spalding Club, Aberdeen, 1849).

Armstrong, R.B., *The History of Liddesdale, Eskdale, Ewesdale, Wauchopedale, and the Debateable Land* (Edinburgh, 1833).

Atlas of Scottish History to 1707, eds. P.G.B. McNeill and H.L. MacQueen (Edinburgh, 1996).

Bateson, M. (ed.), 'Aske's Examination', *English Historical Review*, v (1890).

Calderwood, D., *The History of the Kirk of Scotland*, ed. T. Thomson (Woodrow Society, Edinburgh, 1842-49).

Calendar of Documents relating to Scotland and Mary, Queen of Scots, ed. J Bain *et al*, 13 vols. (Edinburgh, 1881-1969).

Calendar of Letters and State Papers, relating to English Affairs of the reign of Elizabeth preserved in the Archives of Simancas, ed. M.A. Hume, 3 vols. (London, 1892-96).

Calendar of Letters, Despatches, and State Papers, relating to the negotiations between England and Spain, ed. J.M. Thomson *et al*, 13 vols. and 2 supplements (London, 1862-1954).

Calendar of State Papers, Domestic Series, of the reign of Edward VI, 1547-1553, ed. C.S. Knighton (revised edition, London, 1992).

Calendar of State Papers, Domestic Series, of the reign of Elizabeth, 1601-1603 and Addenda, 1547-65, ed. R.H. Brodie, 6 vols. (London, 1924-29).

Calendar of State Papers, Domestic Series, of the reign of Mary I, 1553-1558, ed. C.S. Knighton (revised edition, London, 1998).

Calendar of State Papers, Foreign Series, of the reign of Edward VI, 1547-1553, ed. W.B. Turnball (London, 1863).

Calendar of State Papers, Foreign Series, of the reign of Elizabeth, ed. J. Stevenson *et al*, 23 vols. (London, 1863-1950).

Calendar of State Papers, Foreign Series, of the reign of Mary, 1553-1558, ed. W.B. Turnball (London, 1861).

Calendar of State Papers, relating to English Affairs preserved principally at Rome in the Vatican Archives and Library, ed. J.M. Rigg (London, 1916).

Calendar of State Papers relating to Ireland, of the reigns of Henry VIII, Edward VI, Mary, and Elizabeth, 1509-1573, ed. H.C. Hamilton (London, 1860).

Calendar of State Papers relating to Scotland, 1547-1603, ed. M.J. Thorpe, 2 vols. (London, 1858).

Calendar of State Papers and Manuscripts, relating to English affairs, existing in the Archives and Collections of Venice, ed. R. Brown *et al*, 9 vols. (London, 1867-97).

Catalogue des actes de François II, ed. M.-T. de Martel, 2 vols. (Paris, 1991).

Catalogue des actes de Henri II, eds. M.-N. Baudoin-Matuszek *et al*, 2 vols. (Paris, 1979-86).

The Chronicle and Political Papers of King Edward VI, ed. W.K. Jordan (London, 1966).

The chroncile of Queen Jane and two years of Queen Mary (Camden Society, 48, London, 1850).

The Complaynt of Scotlande vyth ane Exhortatione to the Thre Estaits to be vigilante in the Deffens of their Public veil (Paris, 1549?), ed. J.A.H. Murray (Early English Text Society, London, 1872-73).

Compota Thesaurariorum Regum Scotorum: Accounts of the Lord High Treasurer of Scotland, ed. T. Dickson *et al*, 13 vols. (Edinburgh, 1877-1978).

Correspondence Politique de Odet de Selve Ambassadeur de France en Angleterre (1546-1549), ed. G. Lefèvre-Pontalis (Paris, 1888).

Dickinson, G. (ed.), 'Instructions to the French Ambassador, 30 March 1550', *Scottish Historical Review*, xxvi (1947).

Dickinson, G. (ed.), *Mission of Beccarie de Pavie, Baron de Fourquevaux, en Ecosse, 1549. Documents originaux de fonds Fourquevaux* (Oxford, 1948).

Dickinson, G. (ed.), 'Report by de la Brosse and d'Oysel on conditions in Scotland, 1559-1560', *Scottish History Society Miscellany*, IX (Edinburgh, 1958).

Dickinson, G. (ed.), *Two missions of Jacques de la Brosse: An Account of the Affairs of Scotland in the year 1543 and the Journal of the Siege of Leith, 1560* (Scottish History Society, Edinburgh, 1942).

Dictionary of National Biography, ed. L. Stephen *et al*, 63 vols. and 6 supplements (London, 1885-1903).

Discours du Grand et Magnifique Triomphe Faict du Mariage de François et Marie Stuart, ed. W. Bentham (Roxburghe Club, Edinburgh, 1818).

Discovrs Particvlier d'Escosses escrit par commandement et ordonnance de la Royne Dovariere et Regent, par Messires Iacques Makgill clerc dv registere et Iean Bellenden clerc de la justice. XI Ianvier MDLIX., ed. T. Thomson (Bannatyne Club, Edinburgh, 1824).

A Diurnal of Remarkable Occurrents that have passed within the country of Scotland, since the death of James IV till the year 1575 (Bannatyne and Maitland Clubs, Edinburgh, 1833).

Dowden, J., *The Bishops of Scotland: being notes on the lives of all the bishops, under each of the sees, prior to the Reformation*, ed. J.M. Thomson (Glasgow, 1912).

Ellis, H. (ed.), *Original letters, illustrative of English history: including numerous royal letters from autographs in the British Museum*, 4 vols. (London, 1846).

An Epistle or exhortacion, to unitie & peace, sent from the Lorde Protector, & others the kynges moste honorable counsaill of England: To the Nobilitie, Gentlemen, and Commons, and al others the inhabitauntes of the Realme of Scotlande (London, 1548), reprinted in the *Complaynt*.

Ewes, Sir S. d', *The Journals of all the Parliaments during the reign of Queen Elizabeth, Both the House of Lords and House of Commons* (London, 1682).

Extracts from the Council Register of the Burgh of Aberdeen, 1398-1570, ed. J. Stuart, 2 vols. (Spalding Club, Aberdeen, 1844-48).

Extracts from the Records of the Burgh of Edinburgh, 1403-1589, ed. J.D. Mawick, 4 vols. (The Scottish Burgh Records Society, Edinburgh, 1871).

Foedera, conventiones, litterae, et cujuscunque generis acta publica inter reges Angliae et alios quosvis imperatores, reges, pontifices, principes, vel communitates, ed. T. Rymer, 20 vols. (London, 1704-35).

Foreign Correspondence with Marie de Lorraine Queen of Scotland, from the Originals in the Balcarres Papers, ed. M. Wood, 2 vols. (Scottish History Society, Edinburgh, 1923, 1925).

Fraser, J., *Chronicles of the Frasers: The Wardlaw Manuscript entitled 'Polichronicon seu Policratica Temporum, or, The True Genealogy of the Frasers, 916-1674* ed. W. MacKay (Scottish History Society, Edinburgh, 1905).

Fraser, W., *History of the Carnegies Earls of Southesk and of their Kindred*, 2 vols. (Edinburgh, 1867).

Fraser, W., *Memorials of the Family of Wemyss of Wemyss* (Edinburgh, 1888).

Fraser, W., *The Scotts of Buccleuch* (Edinburgh, 1878).

Fraser, W., *The Sutherland Book*, 3 vols. (Edinburgh, 1874).

Gail, J.B. (ed.), *Lettres inédits de Henri II, Diane de Poitiers, Marie Stuart, François, Roi Dauphin addressées au connétable Anne de Montmorency* (Paris, 1818).

Gregory, D., *The History of the Western Highlands and Isles of Scotland* (London, 1881).

Hall, E., *Chronicle*, ed. Sir H. Ellis (London, 1809).

The Hamilton Papers: Letters and Papers illustrating the political relations of England and Scotland in the XVIth century, ed. J. Bain, 2 vols. (Edinburgh, 1890-92).

Handbook of British Chronology, ed. E.B. Froude *et al* (3rd edition, London, 1986).

Handbook of Dates, ed. E. Cheney (London, 1991).

Haynes, S. (ed.), *A Collection of State Papers relating to affairs in the reigns of Henry VIII, Edward VI, Mary, and Elizabeth, from 1542 to 1570. Transcribed from original letters ... left by W. Cecill Lord Burghley, and now remaining at Hatfield House* (London, 1740).

Henrison, J., *An Exhortacion to the Scottes to conforme themselfes to the honorable, Expedient & godly Union betweene the two Realmes of Englande & Scotland* (London, 1547), reprinted in the *Complaynt*.

Herries, Maxwell, J., lord, *The Historical memoirs of the reign of Mary, Queen of Scots, and a portion of the reign of King James the Sixth*, ed. R. Pitcairn (Abbotsford Club, Edinburgh, 1836).

Highland Papers, ed. J.R.N. Macphail, 4 vols. (Scottish History Society, Edinburgh, 1914-34).

Histoire de la guerre d'Escosse: pendant les campgnes 1548 et 1549 par Jean de Beaugué, ed. J. Bain (Maitland Club, Glasgow, 1830).

The Historie of Scotland, wrytten first in Latin by the most reverend and worthy Jhone Leslie, Bishop of Rosse, and translated in Scottish by Father James Dalrymple 1596, eds. E.G. Cody and W. Murison, 2 vols. (Scottish Text Society, 1888-95).

History of the Church of Scotland by John Spottiswoode, eds. M. Russell and M. Napier, 3 vols. (Spottiswoode Society, Edinburgh, 1851).

History of the Kirk of Scotland by Mr. David Calderwood, eds. T. Thomson and D. Laing, 8 vols. (Woodrow Society, Edinburgh, 1842-49).

Honlished, R., *The Chronicles of England, Scotland and Ireland*, ed. H. Ellis, 6 vols. (London, 1807-08).

Inventaire chronologique des documents relatifs à l'histoire d'Ecosse, ed. A. Teulet, 2 vols. (Abbotsford Club, Edinburgh, 1855).

John Knox: On Rebellion, ed. R.A. Mason (Cambridge, 1994).

John Knox's History of the Reformation in Scotland, ed. W.C. Dickinson, 2 vols. (Edinburgh, 1949).

Knox, J., *The First Blast of the Trumpet Against the Monstrous Regiment of Women*, in Laing (ed.), *Works of John Knox*, and Mason (ed.), *Knox: On Rebellion*.

Laing, D. (ed.), 'Historie of the Estate of Scotland', *Woodrow Miscellany*, I (Wodrow Society, Edinburgh, 1844).

Lesley, J., *The History of Scotland from the Death of King James I in the Year 1436 to the Year 1561* (Bannatyne Club, Edinburgh, 1830).

Letters and Papers, Foreign and Domestic, of the reign of Henry VIII, ed. J.S. Brewer *et al*, 21 vols. and 3 supplements (London, 1862-1932).

'Letters from Henry II King of France to His Cousin Mary Queen Dowager of Scotland', *Miscellany of the Maitland Club* (Maitland Club, Edinburgh, 1844).

The Letters of James V, ed. R.K. Hannay and D. Hay (Edinburgh, 1954).

Lettres et mémoires d'estat des roys, princes ambassadeurs et d'autres ministres sous les regnes de François Premier, Henri II et François II, par G. Ribier, ed. M. Belot, 2 vols. (Paris, 1666).

Lettres inédits de Marie Stuart, accompagnées de divers dépêches et instructions, 1558 1587, ed. Prince A. Labanoff, (Paris, 1839).

Lettres, Instructions et Mémoires de Marie Stuart, Reine d'Écosse, ed. Prince A. Labanoff, 7 vols. (London, 1844).

'List of Abbreviated Titles of the Printed Sources of Scottish History to 1560', *Scottish Historical Review*, supplement (Edinburgh, October 1963).

Lodge, E. (ed.), *Illustrations of British history, biography and manners in the reigns of Henry VIII, Edward VI, Mary, Elizabeth, and James I exhibited in a series of original papers, selected from the manuscripts of the ... families of Howard, Talbot, and Cecil* (London, 1791).

McFarlane, I.D. (ed.), *The Entry of Henri II into Paris, 16 June 1549* (Binghamton, New York, 1982).

Mackintosh, A.M., *The Mackintoshes and Clan Chattan* (Edinburgh, 1903).

McNeill, P.G.B. (ed.), 'Discours Particulier d'Escosse, 1559/60', *The Stair Society Miscellany*, II 35 (Stair Society, Edinburgh, 1984).

Maitland's Narrative of the Principal Acts of the Regency, during the minority; and other papers relating to the history of Mary, Queen of Scotland, ed. W.S. Fitch (Ipswich, 1842).

Marchand, C. (ed.), *Documents pour l'histoire du règne de Henri II* (Paris, 1902).

Melville of Halhill, Sir J., *Memoirs of his own life, 1549-1593*, ed. T. Thomson (Bannatyne Club, Edinburgh, 1827).

Mémoire justicatif du Droit qui appartient à M. le duc d'Hamilton de Porter le titre de duc de Chatelherault, ed. A Teulet (Paris, 1864).

Mémoires-Journaux de François de Lorraine, duc d'Aumale et de Guise, 1547 à 1563, eds. J.-P. Michaud et J.-J.-P. Poujoulat (Paris, 1854).

Nicolson, J. and Burn, R., *The History and Antiquities of the Counties of Westmorland and Cumberland* (London, 1777).

Nicolson, W., *Leges Marchiarum: Or, The Border-Laws* (London, 1714).

Papal Negotiations with Mary Queen of Scots during her reign in Scotland, 1561-1567, ed. J.H. Pollen (Scottish History Society, Edinburgh, 1901).

Papiers d'etat relatif, pièces et documents inédits ou peu connus relatif à l'histoire de l'Ecosse au XVIième siècle, ed. A. Teulet, 2 vols. (Bannatyne Club, Edinburgh, 1852-60).

Paris, L., *Lettres et Pièces Diverses Relative au Relative au Règne au François II* (Paris, 1849).

Pasquier, É., *Les Oeuvres d'Estienne Pasquier, countenant ses recherches de la France* (Amsterdam, 1723).

Pitcairn, R. (ed.), *Criminal Trials in Scotland from 1488 to 1624*, 3 vols. (Edinburgh, 1833).

Pitscottie, R. Lindsay of, *The Historie and Cronicles of Scotland*, 3 vols. (Scottish Text Society, Edinburgh, 1899-1911).

Potter, D.L. (ed.), 'Documents concerning the negotiation of the Anglo-French treaty of March 1550', *Camden Miscellany*, xxviii/29 (1984).

Rait, R.S. (ed.), 'Muster-Roll of the French Garrison at Dunbar, 1553', *Miscellany of the Scottish History Society* II (Scottish History Society, Edinburgh, 1904).

The Register of the Privy Council of Scotland, 1545-1625, eds. J. Hill Burton and D. Masson, 14 vols. (Edinburgh, 1877-98).

Registrum Magni Sigilli Regum Scotorum: The Register of the Great Seal of Scotland, ed. J.M. Thomson *et al*, 11 vols. (Edinburgh, 1882-1914).

Registrum Secreti Sigilli Regum Scotorum: The Register of the Privy Seal of Scotland, ed. M. Livingstone *et al*, 8 vols. (Edinburgh, 1908-82).

Relations Politiques de la France et de l'Espagne au XVIe siècle, ed. A. Teulet, 5 vols. (Paris, 1862).

Reports of the Royal Commission on Historical Manuscripts (London, 1870-).

Rotuli Scaccarrii Regum Scotorum: The Exchequer Rolls of Scotland, ed. J. Stewart *et al*, 23 vols., (Edinburgh, 1878-1908).

The Scots Peerage, ed. Sir J. Balfour Paul, 9 vols. (Edinburgh, 1904-14).

The Scottish Correspondence of Mary of Lorraine, ed. A.I. Cameron (Scottish History Society, Edinburgh, 1927).

A Source Book of Scottish History, ed. W.C. Dickinson *et al*, 3 vols. (Edinburgh, 1953-54).

The State Papers and Letters of Sir Ralph Sadler, ed. A. Clifford, 2 vols. (Edinburgh, 1809).

The Statutes of the Realm, ed. A. Luders *et al*, 11 vols. (London, 1810-28).

Statutes of the Scottish Church, ed. D. Patrick (Scottish History Society, Edinburgh, 1907).

Stevenson, J. (ed.), *Selections from unpublished manuscripts in the College of Arms and the British Museum, illustrating the reign of Mary Queen of Scotland, 1543-68* (Maitland Club, Edinburgh, 1837).

Thomson, T., *Memorial on Old Extent*, ed. J.D. Mackie (The Stair Society, Edinburgh, 1946).

'Treaty Between Argyll and O'Donnell', ed. J. Mackechnie, *Scottish Gaelic Studies*, vii (1953).

Tytler, P.F. (ed.), *England under the Reigns of Edward VI and Mary*, 2 vols. (London, 1839).

The Warrender Papers, ed. A.I. Cameron (Scottish History Society, Edinburgh, 1931).

The Works of John Knox, ed. D. Laing, 6 vols. (Edinburgh, 1846-64).

Secondary Sources

Alford, S., 'Knox, Cecil and the British Dimension of the Scottish Reformation', in Mason (ed.), *John Knox and the British Reformations.*

Alford, S., *The Early Elizabethan Polity: William Cecil and the British Succession Crisis, 1558-1569* (Cambridge, 1998).

Bardgett, F.D., *Scotland Reformed: the Reformation in the Angus and the Mearns* (Edinburgh, 1989).

Baudouin-Matiszek, M.N., 'Henri II et les expéditions françaises en Ecosse', *Bibliothèque de l'Ecole des chartes*, cxlv (1987).

Baumgartner, F.J., *Henri II king of France, 1547-1560* (Durham and London, 1988).

Beer, B.L., *Northumberland: The Political Career of John Dudley, Earl of Warwick And Duke of Northumberland* (Kent, Ohio, 1973).

Bergin, J., 'The decline and fall of the House of Guise as an ecclesiastical dynasty', *Historical Journal*, 5 (1982).

Bonner, E., 'French Naturalization of the Scots in the Fifteenth and Sixteenth Centuries', *The Historical Journal*, xl/4 (1997).

Bonner, E., 'The Recovery of St. Andrews Castle in 1547: French Naval Policy and Diplomacy in the British Isles', *English Historical Review*, cxi (June 1996).

Bonner, E., 'Scotland's 'Auld Alliance' with France, 1295-1560', *Scottish Historical Review*, lxxxiv/273 (1999).

Bouillé, R. de. *Histoire des ducs de Guise*, 4 vols. (Paris, 1849-50).

Brady, C., 'Court, Castle and Country: the framework of government in Tudor Ireland', in Brady and Gillespie (eds.), *Native and Newcomers.*

Brady, C., 'The Decline of the Irish Kingdom', in Greengrass (ed.), *Conquest and Coalescence.*

Brady, C. and Gillespie, R. (eds.), *Natives and Newcomers: Essays on the Making of Irish Colonial Society, 1534-1641* (Bungay, Suffolk, 1986).

Brosse, J. de la, *Jacques de la Brosse 1485(?)-1562: Ses Missions en Écosse* (Paris, 1929).

Brown, J.M., 'The exercise of power', in Brown (ed.), *Scottish Society*.

Brown, J.M. (ed.), *Scottish Society in the Fifteenth Century* (London, 1977).

Brown, K.M., *Bloodfeud in Scotland, 1573-1625. Violence, Justice and Politics in an Early Modern Society* (Edinburgh, 1986).

Brown, P.H., *John Knox*, 2 vols. (London, 1895).

Brown, M., *James I* (Edinburgh, 1994).

Bryce, W.M., 'Mary Stuart's Voyage to France in 1548', *English Historical Review*, xxii (1907).

Burns, J.H., 'John Knox and Revolution, 1558', *History Today*, viii (1958).

Burns, J.H., 'The Political Ideas of the Scottish Reformation', *Aberdeen University Review*, xxxvi (1956).

Burns, J.H., 'Reformation and Resistance: John Knox', *True Law of Kingship* (Oxford, 1996).

Bush, M.L., *The Government Policy of Protector Somerset* (London, 1975).

Cameron, J., *James V: The Personal Rule 1528-1542*, ed. N. Macdougall (Edinburgh, 1998).

Canny, N., 'Irish, Scottish and Welsh responses to centralisation, *c.*1530-*c.*1640: A comparative perspective', in Grant and Stringer (eds.), *Uniting the Kingdom?*.

Carroll, S., *Noble Power during the French Wars of Religion: The Guise Affinity and the Catholic Cause in Normandy* (Cambridge, 1998).

Cloulas, I., *Henri II* (Paris, 1985).

Colvin, H.M. (ed.), *History of the King's Works*, 6 vols. (London, 1963-76).

Constant, J.-M., *Les Guises* (Paris, 1984).

Cowan, I.B., *The Scottish Reformation* (London, 1982).

Davies, C.S.L., 'England and the French War, 1557-9', in Loach and Tittler (eds.), *The Mid-Tudor Polity*.

Dawson, J.E.A., 'Anglo-Scottish protestant culture and integration in sixteenth-century Britain', in Ellis and Barber (eds.), *Conquest and Union*.

Dawson, J.E.A., 'The Fifth Earl of Argyle, Gaelic Lordship and Political Power in Sixteenth-century Scotland', *Scottish Historical Review*, lxvii (1988).

Dawson, J.E.A., 'Resistance and revolution in sixteenth-century thought: the case of Christopher Goodman', in Van den Berg and Hoftijzer (eds.), *Church, Change and Revolution.*

Dawson, J.E.A., 'Revolutionary conclusions: the case of the Marian exiles', *History of Political Thought*, 11 (1990).

Dawson, J.E.A., 'The Scottish Reformation and the Theatre of Martyrdom', in D. Wood (ed.), *Martyrs and Martyrologies* (Oxford, 1993).

Dawson, J.E.A., 'Trumpeting Resistance: Christopher Goodman and John Knox', in Mason (ed.), *John Knox and the British Reformations.*

Dawson, J.E.A., 'The Two John Knoxes: England, Scotland and the 1558 Tracts', *Journal of Ecclesiastical History*, xlii (1991).

Dawson, J.E.A., 'Two kingdoms or three? Ireland in Anglo-Scottish relations in the middle of the sixteenth century', in Mason (ed.), *Scotland and England.*

Dawson, J.E.A., 'William Cecil and the British dimension of early Elizabethan foreign policy', *History*, 74 (1989).

Desplot, C., 'Louis XIII and the Union of Bearn to France', in Greengrass (ed.), *Conquest and Coalescence.*

Dickens, A.G., *The English Reformation* (New York, 1968 edn.).

Donaldson, G., *All the Queen's Men: Power and Politics in Mary Stewart's Scotland* (London, 1983).

Donaldson, G., *Reformed by Bishops: Galloway, Orkney and Caithness* (Edinburgh, 1987).

Donaldson, G., *Scotland: James V-James VII* (Edinburgh, 1994 edn).

Donaldson, G. *The Scottish Reformation* (Cambridge, 1960).

Doran, S., *England and Europe, 1485-1603* (London, 1986).

Doran, S., *Monarchy and Matrimony: The Courtships of Elizabeth I* (London and New York, 1996).

Doran, S., 'Religion and Politics at the Court of Elizabeth I: the Habsburg Marriage Negotiations of 1559-1567', *English Historical Review*, 104 (1989).

Durkan, J., 'James, Third Earl of Arran: The Hidden Years', *Scottish Historical Review*, lxv (1986).

Dwyer J., Mason, R.A., and Murdoch, A. (eds.), *New Perspectives on the politics and culture of early modern Scotland* (Edinburgh, 1982).

Edington, C., *Court and Culture in Renaissance Scotland: Sir David Lindsay of the Mount (1486-1555)* (Edinburgh,1994).

Edington, C., 'John Knox and the Castilians: A Crucible of Reforming Opinion?', in Mason (ed.), *John Knox and the British Reformations.*

Elliot, J.H., 'The Spanish Monarchy and the Kingdom of Portugal, 1580-1640', in Greengrass (ed.), *Conquest and Coalescence.*

Ellis, S.G. and Barber, S. (eds.), *Conquest and Union: Fashioning a British State, 1485-1725* (London, 1995).

Elton, G.R., 'Parliament', in Haigh (ed.), *The Reign of Elizabeth.*

Elton, G.R., *The Parliament of England, 1559-1581* (Cambridge, 1986).

Elton, G.R., *Studies in Tudor and Stuart Politics and Government*, 4 vols. (Cambridge, 1974-92).

Elton, G.R. (ed.), *The Tudor Constitution* (Cambridge, 1982).

Evenett, H.O., *The Cardinal of Lorraine and the Council of Trent: A Study in the Counter-Reformation* (Cambridge, 1930).

Finnie, E., 'The House of Hamilton: Patronage, Politics and the Church in the Reformation Period', *Innes Review*, xxxvi (1985).

Fleming, D.H., *Mary Queen of Scots* (2nd edition, London, 1898).

Forneron, H., *Les Ducs de Guises et Leur Epoque* (Paris, 1877).

Fraser, A., *Mary Queen of Scots* (London, 1971).

Goodare, J., 'Parliamentary Taxation in Scotland, 1560-1603', *Scottish Historical Review*, lxviii (1989).

Greengrass, M. (ed.), *Conquest and Coalescence: The Shaping of the State in Early Modern Europe* (London, 1991).

Grant, A. and Stringer, K.J. (eds.), *Uniting the Kingdom? The Making of British History* (London and New York, 1995).

Gray, J.R., 'The Political Theory of John Knox', *Church History*, viii (1939).

Greaves, R.L., 'John Knox and the Covenant Tradition', *Journal of Ecclesiastical History*, xxiv (1973).

Greaves, R.L., *Theology and Revolution in the Scottish Reformation: Studies in the Thought of John Knox* (Grand Rapids, Michigan, 1980).

Guerdan, R., *Marie Stuart: Reine de France et D'Écosse ou l'ambition trahie* (Paris, 1986).

Guy, J., *Tudor England* (Oxford, 1988).

Haigh, C., *Elizabeth I* (Harlow, 1988).

Haigh, C. (ed.), *The Reign of Elizabeth I* (London, 1984).

Hannay, R.K., 'Some Papal Bulls among the Hamilton Papers', *Scottish Historical Review*, xxii (1924).

Hannay, R.K., 'The Earl of Arran and Queen Mary', *Scottish Historical Review*, xviii (1921).

Harbison, E.H., *Rival Ambassadors at the Court of Queen Mary* (Princeton, 1940).

Head, D.M., 'Henry VIII's Scottish Policy: a Reassessment', *Innes Review*, lxi (1982).

Hoak, D., 'Rehabilitating the Duke of Northumberland: Politics and Political Control, 1549-1553', in Loach and Tittler (eds.), *The Mid-Tudor Polity*.

Hoak, D. (ed.), *Tudor Political Culture* (Cambridge, 1995).

Jones, N.L., 'Elizabeth's First Year: the Conception and Birth of the Elizabethan Political World', in Haigh (ed.), *The Reign of Elizabeth I.*

Jones, N.L., *Faith by Statute: Parliament and the Settlement of Relgion, 1559* (London, 1982).

Jordan, C., 'Woman's Rule in Sixteenth-Century British Political Thought', *Renaissance Quarterly*, xl (1987).

Knecht, R.J., *Francis I* (Cambridge, 1982).

Knecht, R.J., *French Renaissance Monarchy: Francis I and Henry II* (London, 1984).

Lee, M., *James Stewart, Earl of Moray* (New York, 1953).

Lee, M., 'Sir Richard Matiland of Lethington: A Christian Laird in the Age of Reformation', in Rabb and Seigel (eds.), *Action and Conviction*.

Levack, B.P., *The formation of the British state: England, Scotland and the union of 1603-1707* (Oxford, 1987).

Levine, M., *The Early Elizabethan Succession Question, 1558-1568* (Stanford, 1966).

Levine, M., *Tudor Dynastic Problems, 1460-1571* (London, 1973).

Loach, J. and Tittler, R. (eds.), *The Mid-Tudor Polity, c.1540-1560* (London, 1980).

Loades, D.M., *John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland: 1504-1553* (Oxford, 1996).

Loades, D.M., *The Reign of Mary Tudor: Politics, government and religion in England, 1553-58* (2nd edition, London 1991).

Loades, D.M. *Two Tudor Conspiracies* (Cambridge, 1965).

Lynch, M., 'Calvinism in Scotland, 1559-1638', in M. Prestwich (ed.), *International Calvinism, 1541-1715* (Oxford, 1985).

Lynch, M., *The Early Modern Town in Scotland* (London, 1987).

Lynch, M., *Edinburgh and the Reformation* (Edinburgh, 1981).

Lynch, M. (ed.), *Mary Stewart: Queen in Three Kingdoms* (Oxford, 1988).

Lynch, M., *Scotland: A New History* (2nd edition, London, 1992).

MacCaffrey, W.T., 'Elizabethan Politics: the First Decade, 1558-1568', *Past and Present*, 24 (1963).

Macdougall, N. (ed.), *Church, Politics and Society: Scotland, 1408-1929* (Edinburgh, 1983).

Macdougall, N., *James IV* (Edinburgh, 1989).

McGowan, M.B., 'Forms and themes in Henri II's entry in Rouen', *Renaissance Drama*, i (1968).

Mackenzie, W.M., 'The Debatable Land', *Scottish Historical Review*, xxx (1951).

McKerlie, E.M.H., *Mary of Guise-Lorraine Queen of Scotland* (London, 1931).

McRoberts, D. (ed.), *Essays on the Scottish Reformation, 1513-1625* (Glasgow, 1962).

Mahoney, M., 'The Scottish Hierarchy, 1513-1565', in D. McRoberts (ed.), *Essays on the Scottish Reformation.*

Malament, B.C. (ed.), *After the Reformation: essays in honour of J.H. Hexter, William Bouwsma et al* (Manchester, 1980).

Marshall, R.K. *Mary of Guise* (London, 1977).

Mason, R.A., 'Covenant and Commonweal: the Language of Politics in Reformation Scotland', in Macdougall (ed.), *Church, Politics and Society.*

Mason, R.A., 'Imagining Scotland: Scottish Political Thought and the Problem of Britain, 1560-1650', in Mason (ed.), *Scots and Britons.*

Mason, R.A. (ed.), *John Knox and the British Reformations* (Aldershot, 1998).

Mason, R.A., 'Kingship, nobility and Anglo-Scottish union: John Mair's *History of Greater Britain* (1521)', *Innes Review*, 41 (1990).

Mason, R.A., *Kingship and the Commonweal: Political Thought in Renaissance and Reformation Scotland* (Edinburgh, 1998).

Mason, R.A., 'Knox on Rebellion', in Mason (ed.), *Kingship and the Commonweal.*

Mason, R.A., 'Knox, Resistance and the Moral Imperative', *History of Political Thought*, I (1980).

Mason, R.A., 'Knox, Resistance and the Royal Supremacy', in Mason (ed.), *John Knox and the British Reformations.*

Mason, R.A., 'Scotching the Brut: Politics, History and National Myth in sixteenth-century Britain', in Mason (ed.), *Scotland and England.*

Mason, R.A. (ed.), *Scotland and England, 1286-1815* (Edinburgh, 1987).

Mason, R.A. (ed.), *Scots and Britons. Scottish Political Thought and the Union of 1603* (Cambridge, 1994).

Mason, R.A., 'The Scottish Reformation and the origins of Anglo-British imperialism', in Mason (ed.), *Scots and Britons.*

Mathieson, W.L., *Politics and Religion: A Study in Scottish History from the Reformation to the Revolution*, 2 vols. (Glasgow, 1902).

Meikle, M.M., 'The Invisible Divide: The Greater Lairds and the Nobility of Jacobean Scotland', *Scottish Historical Review*, lxxi (1992).

Merriman, M.H., 'The assured Scots: Scottish Collaborators with England during the 'Rough Wooing'', *Scottish Historical Review*, xlvii (1968).

Merriman, M.H., 'The Forts of Eyemouth: Anvils of British Union?', *Scottish Historical Review*, lxvii (1988).

Merriman, M.H., 'James Henrisoun and 'Great Britain': British Union and the Scottish Commonweal', in Mason (ed.), *Scotland and England.*

Merriman, M.H., 'Stewarts and Tudors in the mid-sixteenth century', in Grant and Stringer (eds.), *Uniting the Kingdom?.*

Merriman, M.H., 'Mary, Queen of France', in Lynch (ed.), *Mary Stewart.*

Merriman, M.H., 'War and Propaganda during the "Rough Wooing"', *Scottish Tradition*, ix/x (1979-80).

Mitchison, R., *A History of Scotland* (2nd edition, London, 1982).

Neale, J.E., *Queen Elizabeth I* (London, 1988 edn.).

Palmer, W., *The Problem of Ireland in Tudor Foreign Policy, 1485-1603* (Woodbridge, Suffolk, 1994).

Pariset, J.-D., 'France et les princes allemands', *Francia*, 10 (1980).

Pariset, J.-D., *Relations entre la France et l'Allemagne au milieu du sezième siècle* (Strasbourg, 1983).

Paul, J.B., 'Edinburgh in 1544 and Hertford's Invasion', *Scottish Historical Review*, viii (1911).

Pimodan, G. de, *La Mère des Guises: Antoinette de Bourbon, 1494-1583* (Paris, 1925).

Pollard, A.F., *England Under the Protector Somerset* (New York, 1966).

Potter, D.L., 'The Duc de Guise and the Fall of Calais', *English Historical Review*, ccclxxxviii (1983).

Potter, D.L., 'French Intrigue in Ireland during the Reign of Henri II, 1547-1559', *International History Review*, v (1983).

Potter, D.L., 'The Treaty of Boulogne and European Diplomacy, 1549-50', *Bulletin of the Institute of Historical Research*, lv (1982).

Rabb, T.K. and Seigel, J.E. (eds.), *Action and Conviction in Early Modern Europe* (Princeton, 1969).

Rae, T.I., *The Administration of the Scottish Frontier, 1513-1603* (Edinburgh, 1966).

Read, C., *Mr. Secretary Cecil and Queen Elizabeth* (London, 1955).

Reid, N., 'Margaret 'Maid of Norway' and Scottish Queenship', *Reading Medieval Studies*, iii, (1982).

Rodríguez-Salgado, M.J., *The Changing Face of Empire: Charles V, Philip II and Habsburg Authority, 1551-1559* (Cambridge, 1988).

Romier, L., 'La mort de Henri II', *Revue de seizième siècle*, I (1913).

Rooseboom, M.P., *The Scottish Staple in the Netherlands* (The Hague, 1910).

Rowen, H.H., *The King's State: Proprietary Dynasticism in Early Modern France* (New Brunswick, 1985).

Roy, I. (ed.), *The Habsburg-Valois Wars and the French Wars of Religion; Blaise de Monluc [translated from the French by Charles Cotton]* (Harlow, 1971).

Ruble, A. de., *La première jeunesse de Marie Stuart* (Paris, 1891).

Ruble, A. de., *La Traité de Cateau Cambrésis* (Paris, 1889).

Salmon, J.H.M., *Society in Crisis, France in the Sixteenth Century* (New York, 1975).

Sanderson, M.H.B., *Ayrshire and the Reformation: People and Change, 1490-1600* (Edinburgh, 1997).

Scaligni, P.L., 'The sceptre and the distaff: the question of female sovereignty, 1516-1607', *The Historian*, xli (1978).

Scarisbrick, J.J., *Henry VIII* (Berkeley, 1970 edn.).

Shepard, A., *Gender and Authority in Sixteenth-Century England* (Keele, 1994).

Skinner, Q., 'The Origins of the Calvinist Theory of Revolution' in Malament (ed.), *After the Reformation*.

Tough, D.L.W., *The Last Years of a Frontier: A History of the Borders during the Reign of Elizabeth* (Oxford, 1928).

Tytler, P.F., *History of Scotland*, 7 vols. (3rd edition, Edinburgh, 1845).

Van den Berg, J. and Hoftijzer, P.G. (eds.), *Church, Change and Revolution. Transactions of the fourth Anglo-Dutch Church History Colloquium* (Publications of the Sir Thomas Browne Institute, new series; Leiden, 1991).

Verschuur, M., 'Merchants and craftsmen in 16th-century Perth', in Lynch (ed.), *The Early Modern Town*.

Watson, F.J., *Under the Hammer: Edward I and Scotland, 1286-1306* (Edinburgh, 1998).

Wernham, R.B., *Before the Armada: The Growth of English Foreign Policy, 1485-1588* (London, 1966).

Williams, H.N., *The Brood of False Lorraine: The House of Guise* (London, 1914).

Williams, H.N., *Henri II: His Court and Times* (London, 1910).

Williamson, A.H., 'Scotland, Antichrist and the Invention of Great Britain', in Dwyer, Mason and Murdoch (eds.), *New Perspectives*.

Williamson, A.H., 'Scots, Indians and the Empire: the Scottish Politics of Civilization, 1519-1609', *Past and Present*, 150 (1996).

Wintroub, M., 'Civilizing the Savage and Making a King: The Royal Entry Festival of Henri II (Rouen, 1550)', *Sixteenth Century Journal*, xxix/2 (1998).

Wormald, J., *Court, Kirk and Community: Scotland, 1470-1625* (London, 1981).

Wormald, J., 'Godly Reformer, Godless Monarch: John Knox and Mary Queen of Scots', in Mason (ed.), *John Knox and the British Reformations*.

Wormald, J., *Lords and Men in Scotland: Bonds of Manrent, 1442-1603* (Edinburgh, 1985).

Wormald, J., *Mary Queen of Scots: A Study in Failure* (London, 1988).

Zweig, S. *The Queen of Scots*, translated by C. & E. Paul (London, 1935).

Unpublished Works

Alford, S., 'William Cecil and the British succession crisis of the 1560s', (unpublished PhD thesis, University of St. Andrews, 1996).

Baker, J., 'The House of Guise and the church, *c.*1550-1558', (unpublished D.Phil thesis, University of Oxford, 1995).

Boscher, P.G., 'Politics, Administration and Diplomacy: The Anglo-Scottish Border, 1550-1560', (unpublished PhD thesis, University of Durham, 1985).

Dunbar, L.J., 'John Winram *c.*1492-1582: A Study of his life and his role in the pre and post-Reformation Scottish Church', (unpublished PhD thesis, University of Edinburgh, 1998).

Meikle, M.M., 'Lairds and Gentlemen: A Study of the Landed Families of the Eastern Anglo-Scottish Border c.1540-1603', (2 vols., unpublished PhD thesis, University of Edinburgh, 1989).

Merriman, M.H., 'The Struggle for the Marriage of Mary Queen of Scots: English and French Intervention in Scotland, 1543-1550', (unpublished PhD Thesis, University of London, 1974).

*Not listed by Donaldson in Appendix C of *All the Queen's Men*.

Unless otherwise cited, all biographical information has been taken from the *DNB*, *Scots Peerage* and Knox, *History* (index).

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
Thomas Barclay, plus six servants*			*CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 311, p.81.
John Beaton of Creich*	100 *livres tournois* from Marie de Guise (1551).	Kinsman of Mary Beaton, one of the four 'Maries' who accompanied Mary, Queen of Scots to France in 1548; father-in-law to Walter Scott of Buccleuch and Branxholme, successor to his murdered namesake in 1552.	NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, f.151.
Sir Hugh Campbell of Loudon, heritable sheriff of Ayr, Agnes Drummond, his wife, and servants*	Gifts of non-entry of the lands of Cumnock, the five pound land of Raith and Leffnoll (1547-8); gift of escheat (1550).	After Arran's 'godly fit' supported the Angus/Lennox faction (1544); charged with treason and pardoned (1545); although a supporter of the English dynastic alliance, disapproved of Somerset's aggressive Scottish policy (1547); supporter of Guise administration; remonstrated with the Queen Regent after she issued a summons against the reformed preachers (May 1559); active member of the Congregation, but was later a supporter of the Marian party. [Did not accompany Marie de Guise personally to France; was still in Scotland in December 1550.]	*RSS*, III, 2533, 2757, 2840, pp. 406, 439, 450 and IV, 810, p.136; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 280, p.68.
Matthew Campbell of Loudon, his wife and servants*		Son and heir to Sir Hugh Campbell; although a reformer, he actively supported the Marian cause and fought at Langside, where he was taken prisoner (1568).	*CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 280, p.68.

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
Sir Robert Carnegy, 5th of Kinnaird*	Granted lands of Murdocairnie (1548); bond of manrent with Marie de Guise for an annual payment of £100 from the rents and duties of Orkney and Shetland (1550); received £500 Scots as expenses for his embassies to France and England (1551); gifts of escheat and non-entry (1551).	A lawyer by profession and loyal servant of the crown during both Arran and Guise's administrations. Made a Senator of the College of Justice (1547); diplomatic envoy to negotiate the release of Huntly (1547-8); rewarded by Huntly with the possession of the Great Seal, a discharge and an assignation of the profits and duties of the Great Seal during the latter's trip to France (1548-51); Privy Councillor and Treasury Clerk (1548); member of the Queen's Household (1550); negotiating commissioner for the treaty of Norham (1551), member of several Border Commissions and ambassador to England (1556/7); appointed Collector General of Temporal Taxation during Guise's regency. Noted as a conservative, Carnegy reluctantly joined the Congregation during their Rebellion, but later supported the Marian party.	*RSS*, IV, 1284, 1285, 1420, pp. 204, 226; SRO, SP13/59; Fraser, *History of the Carnegies, Earls of Southesk and of their Kindred* (Edinburgh, 1867), I, pp. 25-40.
Alexander Cochrane	Granted a letter of protection and safeguard for his time in France (1550).	Travelled to France as part of Lord St. John's retinue.	*RSS*, IV, 882, pp. 147-8.
Master Patrick Cockburn, parson/rector of Pitcox [Stenton]		Travelled to France as part of the Prior of St. Andrews' retinue.	*RSS*, IV, 879, p.146.

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
Robert Colville of Cleish		Natural son of Sir James Colville of Easter Wemyss; forfeited (1540) and restored (1543); after Arran's 'godly fit' supported the Angus/Lennox faction in favour of the English alliance and reformed faith (1544); one of the Fife lairds who conspired to murder Cardinal Beaton (1546); travelled to France as part of the Prior of St. Andrews' retinue and later became his Master of Household; sent by Archbishop Hamilton to warn Knox not to preach in St. Andrews (June 1559); eventually became an active promoter of the reform movement; killed at the siege of Leith (7 May 1560); his son, John, became a Presbyterian minister.	*RSS*, IV, 879, p.146.
Ninian Cranston*			*CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 281, p.68.
Alexander Cunningham, 4th earl of Glencairn	Gift of non-entry of the lands and baronies of Kilmaurs, Finlaystone, Kilmarnock, Ranfurly-Cunningham, Glencairn, Stevenson, Hassendean and Hilton (1548); gift of escheat (1549); pension of 2,400 *francs* (1551).	Committed Protestant and principal promoter of the Reformation in Scotland. Entertained Knox during his preaching tour of 1555 and signed a letter inviting Knox to end his exile in Geneva (1556/7); subscriber to the 'First Band' of the Congregation (December 1557); remonstrated with the Queen Regent after she summoned the four Protestant preachers and supported the Congregation militarily against her with a force of 2,500 at Perth (May 1559); signed instructions to the negotiating commissioners for the treaty of Berwick, which he also ratified (1559-60); leading member of the Congregation.	*RSS*, III, 2944, pp. 466-7 and IV, 375, p.62; Knox, *Works*, I, p.241 and *History*, I, p.116; *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxvi, pp. 347-8.

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
Sir George Douglas of Pittendreich* (d.1552)	Gift of escheat (1548); nominated by Mary of Guise for a French title (1549); granted a remission (1550).	Younger brother of Archibald Douglas, 6th earl of Angus. Supporter of the Angus/Lennox faction and leader of the English party in Scotland during the 'rough wooing'; gave tactical advice to the English for their invasions into Scotland, but disapproved of Somerset's aggressive Scottish policy and did not actively fight against his fellow Scots; noted as a doubled dealer throughout the 1540s, but eventually became a loyal servant to Marie de Guise.	Knox, *Works*, I, p.241 and *History*, I, p.116; *RSS*, III, 2902, p.460 and IV, 907, p.151; SRO, E34/14/6; NLS, MSS.2991, f.67^{v}; *Fourquevaux Mission*, p.18 *n*.b; *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxviii, pp. 349-51.
Henry Douglas, younger of Drumgarland		Travelled to France as part of the Prior of St. Andrews' retinue; future member of the Lords of the Congregation.	*RSS*, IV, 879, p.146.
Sir James Douglas of Drumlanrig*	Gift of escheat (1551); granted a remission (1551).	Warden of the West Marches (1553); although a member of the Congregation, his pro-English activities had abated considerably by the time of the Reformation Rebellion.	*CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 283, p.69; *RSS*, IV, 1363, 1321, pp. 216, 210.
Master John Douglas, parson/rector of Newlands		Travelled to France as part of the Prior of St. Andrews' retinue.	*RSS*, IV, 879, p.146.
Robert Drummond [of Carnock?]*	Gift of non-entry (1550).		*RSS*, IV, 719, pp. 122-3; *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxv, p.346.

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
Andrew Durie, bishop of Galloway and of the Chapel Royal at Stirling*		Brother to George Durie, Abbot of Dunfermline; Abbot of Melrose (1526); Lord of Session (1541); provided to Galloway (1541); supporter of the French cause and Marie de Guise; faithful adherent to the established Church, one of Guise's recommendations for papal visitor (1556); described by Knox as our 'ennemy of God'.	Knox, *Works*, I, pp. 242, 261-2 and *History*, I, pp. 116, 129; *HBC*, p.311.
Sir Alexander Erskine of Gogar, second surviving son of John, 5th lord Erskine		Travelled to France as part of the Prior of St. Andrews' retinue; custodian of Stirling Castle and the young James VI (1572-8); Constable of Edinburgh Castle (1579); loyal servant to Mary, Queen of Scots and supporter of the Marian cause.	*RSS*, IV, 879, p.146; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 311, p.81.
John, 5th lord Erskine*		Guardian of James V and Mary, Queen of Scots, whom he accompanied to France in 1548; keeper of Edinburgh and Stirling Castles; neutral during the Reformation Rebellion (1559-60).	*CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 311, p.81.
Master Thomas Erskine*	Gifts of escheat and non-entry (1549); grant of crown lands (1550).	In France on diplomatic business on behalf of the Scottish government. [See *RSS*, IV, 690 for a list of his retinue.]	*CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 304, 309, 311, 356, pp. 78, 80-1, 118; *RSS*, IV, 654, 471, 506, 419, 690, pp. 112, 76, 83-4, 69, 118.

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
James, 4th lord Fleming*	600 *écus* from Marie de Guise (1551).	Loyal servant to the crown as Lord Chamberlain of Scotland and Warden of the East and Middle Marches (1553); negotiating commissioner and witness to Mary, Queen of Scots' marriage (1558); died in France on the return journey home (1558). His father, William, 3rd lord Fleming, was an 'assured Scot' and supporter of the Angus/Lennox faction (1544); abandoned the reformed cause and founded a collegiate church (1545); killed fighting the English at the battle of Pinkie (1547)]. His wife, Janet Fleming, accompanied Mary, Queen of Scots to France with their daughter, who was one of the four 'Maries' (1548), and was a mistress of Henri II, with whom she had a child.	Knox, *Works*, I, p.241 and *History*, I, p.116; NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, f.138.
John Forret		Catholic priest; close relation to Thomas Forret, vicar of Dollar who was burned for heresy at Edinburgh, 28 February 1538/9; travelled to France as part of the Prior of St. Andrews' retinue.	*RSS*, IV, 879, p.146.

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
Alexander Gordon	Bond of manrent with Marie de Guise for an annual pension of £200 Scots (1547/8); obligation granted by Guise as compensation for his renunciation of the bishopric of Caithness, in which he was promised another benefice with an annual revenue of 500 merks Scots and a French pension of 400 *livres turnois* (1548); provided to the archbishopric of Glasgow (1548/9); received titular archbishopric of Athens, and Inchaffray *in commendam* as compensation for his loss of Glasgow (1551).	Brother to George, 4th earl of Huntly; postulate of Caithness (1544); provided to the Isles, with Iona *in commendam* (1553); bishop-elect of Galloway, never consecrated but acted as bishop from 1559; joins the Congregation and signs 'Third Band' at Leith (April 1560); signed ratification of treaty of Berwick (May 1560); attended Reformation Parliament and subscribed to *Book of Discipline* (1560-1); candidate for Superintendentship of Galloway (1566).	*CSP Foreign , 1547-1553*, 306, p.79; SRO, SP13/55; NLS, MSS.2991, f.68; *Fourquevaux Mission*; pp. 18-9; *Scottish Correspondence*, clxi-ii, clxxi, ccxxvii, ccxxxvii, ccxxxix, pp. 227-9, 239-40, 323-4, 348-9, 352-4; Teulet, *Papiers*, I, pp. 662-3; *HBC*, pp. 311; 313, 315; *Blacarres Papers*, II, 1 and Appendix B, ii, pp. 68-9, 309-10; *RSS*, IV, 2253, 2298, 2536, 2961, pp. 375, 383, 425-6, 517; Hannay, 'Some Papal Bulls', pp. 32-5; Donaldson, *Reformed by Bishops*, pp. 1-18.

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
George Gordon, 4th earl of Huntly, his wife and mother*	Gift of escheat and tack of the crown lands of Brae of Mar, Strathdee and Cromrar (1547). While imprisoned at Newcastle, Henri II promised to pay his ransom, invest him in the Order of St. Michael, award him an annual pension of £2,000, invest him in one of the earldoms of Orkney, Ross or Moray, and grant him provision for his kin and followers (1548); invested in the Order of St. Michael, which was confirmed during Marie de Guise's trip to France (1548 & 1550); granted the earldom of Moray (1548/9); granted a French pension of 6,000 *francs* (1549); received a charter for the hereditary bailiary of all the lands of the bishopric of Aberdeen (1549); granted 500 *écus* (1551).	Faithful adherent to the established Church, loyal supporter of the Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance and Marie de Guise's administration. Lord Chancellor (1543); disgraced for failing in his commission to impose order in the Highlands (1554); fined and imprisoned by the Queen Regent, losing his governorship of Orkney, his possession of the Great Seal and most of his powers as Chancellor to du Rubay, vice-Chancellor (1554); restored to favour (1555); helped plan the Scottish army's planned siege of Wark and disagreed with Châtelherault *et al*'s subsequent decision to abandon the expedition (1557); supported Guise throughout the Reformation Rebellion until April 1560, presumably when it became clear that France was not going to respond to England's military intervention; signed the 'Third Band' at Leith (April 1560) and the ratification of the treaty of Berwick (May 1560); wavering political loyalties during personal rule of Mary, Queen of Scots.	Knox, *History*, I, pp. 103, 116 and *Works*, I, pp. 217, 241; *RSS*, III, 2269, 2342, pp. 368, 379; *RMS*, IV, 299, 319, 366, 1904, 2006, pp. 71, 75, 84, 308, 328-9; NLS, MSS.2991, fos. 67^{v}-8^{r} and Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, f.140; *Fourquevaux Mission*, p.18 *n.*1 & b; SRO, SP13/58; BN, MSS.f.fr.18153, fos. 66-8.
John Gordon, 10th earl of Sutherland*	Gift of escheat (1547); tack to crown lands in earldom of Moray and lordship of Abernethy (1548); bond of manrent with Marie de Guise in which he was granted tenancy in the earldom of Ross (1548/9).	Cousin of Huntly and faithful adherent to the French and Catholic cause; one of Guise's agents in the north commissioned to impose order in the Highlands (1554); future member of the Queen's Party and one of the few nobles who attended Mary, Queen of Scots' marriage to Bothwell (1567); died of poison (1567).	*RSS*, III, 2344, 2903, 2785, pp. 380, 460, 443-4; SRO, SP13/63; Fraser, *Sutherland Book*, III, p.107.

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
John Graham, 4th earl of Mentieth*		Joined the Congregation in 1559 and remained a staunch supporter of the reform party. Defected to the Congregation in May 1559, ignoring a summons to return from Marie de Guise; signed the 'Third Band' at Leith (April 1560) and ratification of the treaty of Berwick (May 1560); subscribed to the *Book of Discipline* (1560/1); died (1565).	*Scots Peerage*, VI, p.160.
Archibald Hamilton of Letham	Granted a letter of protection during his time in France (1550).	Raised in the Protestant faith but converted to Catholicism after a public disputation with Knox; travelled to France in the company of Sir James Hamilton of Crawfordjohn; future member of the Congregation.	*RSS*, IV, 893, p.149.
Gavin Hamilton, commendator of Kilwinning Abbey*	9,600 *livres tournois* from Marie de Guise (1551)	Son of James Hamilton of Raploch; appointed dean of Glasgow in 1549, an office which he exchanged with Henry Sinclair for the commendatorship of Kilwinning (1550); Lord of Session (1555); cautious during the Reformation Rebellion, joining only in 1560.	NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, f.148.

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
Master James Hamilton [later 3rd earl of Arran]*	Assigned a post in Guyenne worth 50,000 *francs* per year, and 50 lances once belonging to M. de St. Vallier by Henri II (1548); promised the daughter of the Duc de Montpensier in marriage (1548).	Committed reformer and son and heir to Châtelherault. Held as pledge by Beaton in St. Andrews and as hostage by the 'Castilians' (1546-7); sent to France as a pledge for his father's support of the proposed Franco-Scottish dynastic alliance (1548); escaped from France to become nominal leader of the Congregation with his father (1559); signed negotiating commissioners instructions and ratification of the treaty of Berwick (1559-60); subscribed to the 'Third Band' at Leith (April 1560); proposed and rejected as husband to Elizabeth I (1560); signed *Book of Discipline* (1560/1); unsuccessfully sued for hand of Mary, Queen of Scots and went insane (1562); died (1609).	*TA*, IX, p.83; *CSP Scot.*, 238, pp. 116-7; *CSP Spain*, X, pp. 303-4; *Balcarres Papers*, I, clix, xi, pp. 205-7 and II, cli, clxiii, clxviii, pp. 197-8, 245-8, 256-8; Hannay, 'The Earl of Arran', pp. 258-76; Durkan, 'James, Third Earl of Arran', pp. 154-66.
Sir James Hamilton of Crawfordjohn*	Granted a letter of protection for his time in France (1550).	After Arran's 'godly fit', supported the Angus/Lennox faction in favour of an English dynastic alliance and reformed religion (1544); travelled to France in the company of Archibald Hamilton of Letham; future member of the Lords of the Congregation and King's Party.	*RSS*, IV, 893, p.149.
James Hamilton, younger of Kincavill, plus one servant*		Future member of the Lords of the Congregation.	*CSP Scot.*, I, 364, p.183.
Master David Henderson [Henrison], vicar of Rossie, chaplain of St. John of Bakie		Travelled to France as part of the Prior of St. Andrews' retinue.	*RSS*, IV, 839, 879, pp. 141, 146.

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
Alexander, 5th lord Home	Annual pension of 2,000 *francs* (1548/9); promised support from Henri II for maintaining Home Castle (May 1550); granted a charter of bailiary for Coldstream (1551).	Taken prisoner by the English at Pinkie (1547); Warden of the East March; supported Mary, Queen of Scots' marriage to Darnely, but after her marriage to Bothwell switched allegiances and supported Lord James; fought against Mary at Carberry and Langside (1568), but reverted back to the Queen's Party (1569); forfeited (1573) and imprisoned (1573-5).	*Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxv, p.346; NLS, MSS.2991, fos. 67^{v}-8^{r}; *Fourquevaux Mission*, p.18.
William Keith, 4th earl Marischal*	Granted a remission (1548); nominated for a French title by Marie de Guise (1549); 6000 *écus* (1551); 500 *écus*.[1551].	Accused of heresy (1543); favoured Tudor-Stewart marriage alliance (1543); present at George Wishart's sermon in Dundee (1544); supporter of the Lennox/Angus faction and associated with Glencairn against Arran (1544); consulted by Henry VIII for the murder of Cardinal Beaton, but refused to take part physically (1546); fought for Scotland at Pinkie, presumably disapproving with the aggressiveness of Somerset's Scottish policy (1547); appointed Commissioner for the Borders (1553); attended Knox's sermon in Edinburgh (1555); although he was sympathetic to the reformed doctrines, he remained neutral during the Reformation Rebellion, offering no practical support either to the Congregation or Marie de Guise, with whom he entered into Perth in 1559 and stayed with at Edinburgh Castle in 1560 until her death that June.	NLS, MSS. 2991, f.67^{v} and Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, fos. 140, 142; *Fourquevaux Mission*, p.18 *n.*b; *RSS*, IV, 7, p.2; Knox, *Works*, I, p.241 and *History*, I, p.116.

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
Gilbert Kennedy, 3rd earl of Cassillis*	Tack for lands of Turnberry (1547/8); nominated for a French title by Marie de Guise (1549); granted a remission (1550); invested in the Order of St. Michael (1550); 6,670 *livres* and 'six vingts dixsunt' *livres tournois* [1551].	Former pensioner of Henry VIII, 'assured Scot' and supporter of George Wishart; advised the English for an invasion of Scotland, but resisted Somerset at Pinkie (1547); appointed Lieutenant of the South (1548); Lord High Treasurer during Guise's regency (1554-58); negotiator and witness to Mary, Queen of Scots' marriage (1558); died in France en route to Scotland (1558).	Knox, *Works*, I, p.241 and *History*, I, p.116; *RSS*, III, 2579, pp. 412-3 and IV, 682, p.116; NLS, MSS.2991, f.67^{v} and Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, fos. 143, 146; *Fourquevaux Mission*, p.18 *n*.b.
Hugh Kennedy*			*CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 281, p.68.
William Lauder of Haltoun		Poet and playwrite who probably took orders for the priesthood after completing his education at the University of St. Andrews; travelled to France as part of the Prior of St. Andrews' retinue; wrote a play for Marie de Guise's arrival in Edinburgh to assume the regency (1554); commissioned to write a play celebrating the marriage of Mary, Queen of Scots for which he was paid 10 *livres* (1558); joined the Lords of the Congregation (1560); appointed by Perth presbytry to minister at Forgandenny, Forteviot and Muckarsie (1563).	*RSS*, IV, 879, p.146.
Bartholomew Livingston		Travelled to France as part of the Prior of St. Andrews' retinue.	*RSS*, IV, 879, p.146.

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
Robert, 6th lord Maxwell	Gift of non-entry (1548/9, 1550); granted a letter of protection, respect, safeguard and exemption for his time in France (1550); pension of 2,000 *francs* and made a gentleman of the French King's Bedchamber.	An 'assured Scot' who supported the Angus/Lennox faction in favour of the English dynastic alliance and reformed religion (1544); later switched allegiances and supported the French dynastic alliance, becoming a loyal agent of Marie de Guise and the French King [e.g. his mission to Scotland in February 1550/1, to join d'Oisel and Châtelherault on the Borders]; Warden of the West March for Scotland and an important figure in Anglo-Scottish Border affairs; died (1552).	Knox, *Works*, I, p.241 and *History*, I, p.116; *RSS*, IV, 880, p.147; *APC*, III, pp. 205-6; *CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 291, 295, pp. 73, 75; *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxiv, ccxxxviii, pp. 334-5, 349-51.
Thomas Menzies of Pitfoddells*			*CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 228, p.52.
Sir Angus Murray, chantor of Caithness	Granted a letter of protection and safeguard for his time in France (1550).	Travelled to France as part of Robert Stewart, bishop elect of Caithness' retinue.	*RSS*, IV, 883, p.148.
Sir William Murray of Tullibardine	Granted a letter of protection, safeguard and exemption for his time in France (1550).	After Arran's 'godly fit', supported the Angus/Lennox faction in favour the English dynastic alliance and reformed faith (1544); committed reformer and member of the Congregation; signed instructions to the negotiating commissioners for the treaty of Berwick (1559/60); comptroller (1565-56); future member of the King's Party.	*RSS*, IV, 887, p.148.
James Ogilvy of Deskford and Findlater*	40 *écus* from Marie de Guise (1551).	Third son of George Gordon, earl of Huntly, who assumed the name Ogilvy; married a sister of Mary Livingstone, one of the four 'Maries' and daughter to Lord Livingstone, gaurdian of Mary, Queen of Scots; supporter of the Marian cause.	NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, f.150.

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
David Orme		Travelled to France as part of the Prior of St. Andrews' retinue.	*RSS*, IV, 879, p.146.
David Paniter, bishop of Ross	Gift of temporality of the abbey of Cambuskenneth (1548/9); gift of ward and non-entry (1550/1); gift of escheat (1550/1); given Abbey of l'Abyse in Poictou (1551).	Ambassador to France (1544-52); provided to the bishopric of Ross (1547); in France for Mary, Queen of Scots' marriage to the Dauphin (1558); died (1558).	*RSS*, IV, 136, 1049, 1139, pp. 21, 172, 184; NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, f.150; *Balcarres Papers*, II, ccxiii, pp. 245-8; *HBC*, p.319.
John Roull, prior of Pittenweem and Blantyre (+ his convent at Pittenweem)		Travelled to France as part of the Prior of St. Andrews' retinue.	*RSS*, IV, 879, p.146.
Patrick, Master of Ruthven*	Granted a remission (1550); received 1,200 *livres tournois* from Marie de Guise on behalf of his father, William, 3rd lord Ruthven (1550), and 400 crowns for himself (1550/1).	Questionable loyalty in 1547 when it was thought he would surrender Perth to the English for a price; succeeded his father, William, 2nd lord Ruthven as heritable sheriff and provost of Perth (1552); refused to suppress the Congregation at Perth (May 1559); ignored a summons by the Queen Regent to support the Congregation militarily at Cupar (June 1559); negotiator for the Congregation with the Queen Regent; one of the commissioners who negotiated and signed the treaty of Berwick (1559/60); subscriber to the 'Third Band' at Leith (April 1560); played a leading role in the murder of Riccio (1566).	*RSS*, IV, 760, p.129; NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, f.134; *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxv, pp. 345-7.
Sir James Sandilands of Calder, lord St. John, preceptor of Torphichen, plus two or three pages..	Granted a letter of protection and safeguard for his time in France (1550).	Reformer and member of the Lords of the Congregation; presented the Congregation's petition to Marie de Guise (November 1558).	*RSS*, IV, p.882, pp. 147-8.

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
John Sempill of Fowlwod*		The Sempills were faithful adherents to the established Church and loyal supporters of Marie de Guise.	*RSS*, IV, 888, p.148; NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, f.134.
Henry Sinclair, dean of Glasgow	Granted full license and free power and faculty to pass into France'and ony uthir partis beyond sey to the sculis for doing of his uthiris lefull besynes and erandis' (1550).	Lord of Session (1537); Abbot of Kilwinning (1541); became Dean of Glasgow after exchanging Kilwinning with Gavin Hamilton (1550); did not return to Scotland from France until 1554; worked for the internal reform of abuses within the Church and was one of Guise's recommendations for papal visitor; negotiating commissioner for the treaty of Carlisle (1556) and Upsettlington (1559); succeeded Robert Reid as President of the College of Justice (1558); received gift of temporalities for the see of Ross upon the death of David Paniter (1558) and provided to the bishopric in 1561; died at Paris (1565).	*CSP Foreign, 1547-1553*, 228, p.52; *RSS*, IV, 644-6, 820, pp. 109-110; 137-8.

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
James Somerville in Humbie, 6th lord Somerville	Gift of non-entry (1549/50).	Unlike his father, High, 5th lord Somerville, who was an 'assured Scot' and pensioner of Henry VIII, James was a supporter of the Franco-Scottish alliance and Marie de Guise; helped to negotiate Châtelherault's resignation of the regency (1553-4); travelled to France as part of the Prior of St. Andrews' retinue (1550); negotiated with the Congregation on behalf of the Queen Regent (July 1559); defected to the Congregation in 1560, presumably when it was clear that France was not going to respond to England's intervention; signed 'Third Band' of the Congregation at Leith (April 1560) and the ratification of the treaty of Berwick (May 1560); voted against *Confession of Faith* in Parliament and refused to subscribe to the *Book of Discipline* (1560).	*RSS*, IV, 879, p.146.
Master John Spottiswoode, rector/parson of Calder	Granted a letter of protection and safeguard for his time in France (1550).	Travelled to France as part of Lord St. John's retinue; zealous reformer and friend of Knox; accompanied Lord James Stewart to negotiate and witness Mary, Queen of Scots' marriage to the Dauphin (1558); played an active role in drawing up the *Book of Discipline* and *Confession of Faith* (1560); nominated and created Superintendent of Lothian (1560-1).	*RSS*, IV, 882, pp. 147-8.
Lord James Stewart, commendator of Kelso and Melrose*	3,000 *écus* from Marie de Guise (1551).	Natural son of James V with Elizabeth Shaw and half-brother to Mary, Queen of Scots.	Knox, *Works*, I, p.242 and *History*, I, p.116; NLS, Adv.MSS, 29.2.5, f.136.

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
Lord James Stewart, Prior and Commendator of St. Andrews	Letters of legitimation (February 1550/1).	Natural son of James V with Margaret Erskine and half-brother to Mary, Queen of Scots; sympathetic to the reformed doctrines and rumoured to be an English agent (received 4 payments from the English Council, 1550-52); negotiated and witnessed Mary, Queen of Scots marriage to the Dauphin (1558); mediator between Marie de Guise and the Congregation at Perth (May 1559); defected to the Congregation with Argyll after Guise violated the Perth Agreement (June 1559); became *de facto* leader of the Congregation until the return of James, 3rd earl of Arran; created Earl of Moray (1562); opposed Mary, Queen of Scots' marriage to Darnely; forfeited (1565); became regent after Mary's abdication (1567); member of the King's Party; opposed Mary at Langside (1568); assassinated by the Hamiltons (1570).	Knox, *Works*, I, p.242 and *History*, I, p.116; *RSS*, IV, 879, 1064, pp. 146, 174; *RMS*, IV, 565, p.125; *APC*, III, pp. 103, 347 and IV pp. 103, 190.
Lord John Stewart, commendator of Coldingham*	Letters of legitimation (February 1550/1); nominated to the abbey of Flavigny (1551).	Natural son of James V with Elizabeth Carmichael and half-brother to Mary, Queen of Scots, whom he accompanied to France in 1548; commendator of Coldingham (1541); reported to be neutral by Maitland of Lethington in 1559; abetted Mary's celebration of Mass at Holyrood by protecting her priest (1561) and eventually married Bothwell's sister; died at Inverness (1563).	Knox, *Works*, I, p.242 and *History*, I, p.116; *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxxiii, p.343; *RSS*, IV, 1064, p.174; *RMS*, IV, 565, p.125.

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
Lord Robert Stewart, commendator of Holyrood*		Natural son of James V with Euphemia Elphinstone and half-brother to Mary, Queen of Scots, whom he accompanied to France in 1548; in *commendam* of Holyrood (1539); member of the Lords of the Congregation; married Jean Kennedy, eldest daughter to Gilbert, 3rd earl of Cassillis (1561); created 1st Earl of Orkney and Lord of Zetland (1581); died (1593).	Knox, *Works*, I, p.242 and *History*, I, p.116; *RSS*, IV
Robert Stewart, bishop [elect] of Caithness	Granted a letter of protection and safeguard for his time in France (1550); presentation of tenandry (1551).	Aristocratic bishop and brother to Matthew, 4th earl of Lennox; signed contract at Carlisle by which Lennox and Glencairn promise to aid Henry VIII in Scotland (1543); hostage in England during his brother's subsequent military expedition there, the failure of which resulted in Alexander Gordon replacing Stewart as postulate of Caithness by request of the Scottish government (1543-4); asked Marie de Guise if he could accompany her to France (1550); granted land and title to Earl of Sutherland (1553-60); organised reformed church in diocese of Caithness (*c.* 1560-1).	SRO, GD90/3/11; *Scottish Correspondence*, ccxxviii, p.338; *RSS*, IV, 883, 1372, pp. 148, 218; Donaldson, *Reformed by Bishops*, pp. 53-67.
Dean John Winram, vicar of Dull & subprior of St. Andrews		Rumoured to be the author of Archbishop Hamilton's *Catechism* (1549); attended Provincial Councils of 1549, 1552 and 1559; initially sought to reform the Church from within, but joined the Lords of the Congregation when they emerged as the winning side; close associate of Lord James Stewart, Prior of St. Andrews; played a large part in drafting the *Confession of Faith*; Superintendant of Fife and Stranthearn (1561-75).	*RSS*, IV, 879, p.146; Dunbar, 'John Winram *c.*1492-1582'.

NAME	SCOTTISH & FRENCH PATRONAGE (1548-1551)	GENERAL COMMENTS	REFERENCES
Master Robert Winram of Ratho		Travelled to France as part of the Prior of St. Andrews' retinue.	*RSS*, IV, 879, p.146.